



GOD AND DEVIL WORLD

BOOK 10

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

God and Devil World

(神魔系统)

by

Zi Chan Bao Zeng

(资产暴增)

Synopsis

In less than an instant the world as we knew it was at its end.

That's right. The Apocalypse. In a single blink Zombies appeared and mutated monsters began to rampage all throughout the world. Now it was the human species turn to fight for survival and planetary dominance!

On the same day that the world descends into chaos we meet Yue Zhong. Initially only hoping to get to his friends and escape to a refugee camp our protagonist sets out, inadvertently building a team along the way. After a series of fortuitous events and a few serious hunches our hero decides it's time to do more than just survive!

Yue Zhong begins to form the foundations of an enormous survival plan... before he suddenly discovers that he has only gotten over the first hurdle.... Unbeknownst to Yue Zhong and company, the world outside of China is mostly a wasteland! Country sized swathes of nuclear radiation and an extreme shortage of supplies in the world after the nuclear explosions was quickly becoming the "norm". Mutants, Evolved animals and what's worse, intelligent out of control dinosaurs had quickly appeared and claimed their own sections of the planet. There were several innately powerful Evolved races which appeared that were more than 10 times stronger than humans, nearly all of them possessing bodies impenetrable by normal bullets. The fabled orcs' were another of these Evolved races, the leader of which had in fact enslaved many of the remaining human beings.

Unceremoniously exposed to such a cold and heartless new world, Yue Zhong is faced with a choice: Find a deep dark hole and hope it goes back to "normal"? Or overcome all obstacles and struggle towards Evolution!!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Editing by Translation Nation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: The Gate of Hell Reappears!

The Eyeless Beasts were Type 4 Mutant Beasts after all. They had a terrifying regeneration speed, and those who were sliced in two by those Reapers continued to struggle.

Yue Zhong darted about, appearing before one particular Eyeless Beast. His right fist was covered in Dark Dou Qi and he slammed down viciously on the head of the Eyeless Beast.

The Eyeless Beast let out a howl of anguish, as strange liquid flowed out of its mouth. Its lower body continued to thrash about.

Yue Zhong continued to rain blows harshly, his right fist covered with the Dark Dou Qi. It was like having two sledgehammers pummeling the head of the Eyeless Beast.

Yue Zhong was a true Type 5 Divine Warrior after all. With the enhancement of his Dark Dou Qi, his strength that exploded out far surpassed any humans of the same realm. He was even stronger than a Mid-Grade Dino-General. Most Type 4 Mutant Beasts could not afford to underestimate his strength.

The Type 4 Eyeless Beast struggled for a long while, before it finally crumpled, obviously near death.

With a tap of Yue Zhong's hand, he sent a Type 4 Puppet Rune into the beast, overriding its will.

After subjugating this beast, Yue Zhong then gave a vial of Type 5 Mutant Blood and a Type 4 Beast nucleus to it.

Upon swallowing those, the Type 4 Eyeless Beast quickly recovered, regenerating a lower body.

The regeneration of a Type 4 Mutant Beast was terrifying. It was even stronger than Yue Zhong with his Regeneration skill. With enough energy, a beast could swiftly regain limbs and lost body parts.

Having controlled it, Yue Zhong dashed towards the various Type 4 Eyeless Beasts. Under his assault, they were heavily injured, before made into his puppets.

Since Yue Zhong had conquered the 8 Xue Luo Forts, he had obtained a huge number of Type 4 Nuclei and could create many Type 4 Puppet Runes as he wished.

Soon, of the dozens of Type 4 Eyeless Beasts on land, 23 had been subjugated by Yue Zhong, turned into his puppets.

He then continued to use the same methods to lure more Eyeless Beasts up on land after that.

Very soon, many dozens were attracted up, while Yue Zhong continued to attack, bringing another 18 Eyeless Beasts under him.

After numerous repetitions, Yue Zhong finally gained 75 Eyeless Beasts.

It was difficult for him to lure any more beyond that.

He looked at the 75 Eyeless Beasts laying quietly on the ground, emitting a terrifying aura and his eyes flashed with appreciation, "I think this should be enough."

If these 75 Eyeless Beasts were to attack a Type 5 aquatic Mutant Beast, it would be possible for them to ravage it.

With them as his underwater guard, Yue Zhong felt safer about entering Bi Tao Lake.

"Let's go!" He came to the lake and gave an order. The 75 Type 4 Eyeless Beasts quickly dived in like coiling dragons.

Yue Zhong put on the Sea Mask as well and entered the water.

When they submerged themselves, no beasts dared to approach Yue Zhong with his 75 Eyeless Beasts as guards.

Along the way, the Sea Mask allowed him to have the ability to see clearly underwater, while the Night Vision ability allowed him to peer into the dark. With these 2, he was able to make out what

the situation was like beneath Bi Tao Lake.

At the deepest part of the lake, there was a region that was covered with an energy shield. No aquatic Mutant Beasts were lurking within, at the same time, there were no Mutant Beasts within the region of 10m of the shield as well.

Yue Zhong had not dived in for long, but 2 Eyeless Beasts suddenly stirred about 300m away, as though they had caught the scent of humans, and darted towards him.

The moment those 2 Eyeless Beasts moved, Yue Zhong commanded his troop of Eyeless Beasts to attack them as well.

In an instant, his team of Eyeless Beasts tore into the 2 poor monsters, their sharp teeth sinking into their flesh. Within seconds, the 2 of them were torn to shreds.

With the protection of the 75 Eyeless Beasts, Yue Zhong quickly arrived at the location of the energy shield. He passed through it without any problems. It seemed that the energy shield could not prevent humans from entering or leaving.

One of the Eyeless Beasts touched the shield and was instantly electrocuted and shuddered, before crumpling to one side.

Yue Zhong swiftly ordered, "Disperse, guard the area!"

With that order, the remaining Eyeless Beasts spread out right outside of the energy shield.

They covered a large area, standing guard for Yue Zhong.

As for Yue Zhong, he came up to an alloy door and noticed that there was a palm-shaped box right outside the door. It was evidently a fingerprint scanner of some sorts.

Since Yue Zhong did not have Wei Ming Qing's prints, he pulled out the tablet with Bai Yi and spoke, "Open the door."

"Yes!"

Data flashed across Bai Yi's eyes, and soon, there was a robotic

voice from within the door, "No issues with identification. S-Class clearance. Please enter!"

The door opened swiftly, revealing a lit tunnel.

Yue Zhong walked right in, following it for about 10km, before arriving at a lavish treasury.

The treasury was about 1sq km and 20m in height. There were many chests filled with Mutant Beast nuclei.

Other than those nuclei, there were also 3,000 sets of Type 4 Battle Suits, each fitted with Type 4 Nuclei, as well as a 100 of the rarer Type 5 Battle Suits, fitted with Type 5 Nuclei.

In the past, the strongest human expert would at most reach Type 5 in this Third World. Hence, the design of the Battle Suits reached Type 5 at most. After all, even if a Type 6 Battle Suit was produced successfully if no human could unleash its full potential, then it was for naught.

Other than these nuclei, there were also sorts of strange and extraterrestrial-looking gems. Each of them could easily be sold for an exorbitant price outside.

Yue Zhong did not look at the precious stones and gems longer than necessary. Instead, he made a beeline for the crystal podium in the center of the treasury.

Right on the podium, there was a fist-sized nucleus that was slightly blue in color. It was likely the Type 6 Mutant Beast nucleus. The entire Cloud Region only had this one Type 6 Nucleus.

Yue Zhong took the Type 6 Nucleus from the podium, keeping it inside his Storage Ring.

"Is this Blood Honey?" After keeping the Type 6 Nucleus, he swept a glance across the room, and discovered vats filled blood. The color of the blood was thicker than any other Blood Honey he had seen, and they were emitting a strong bloody scent.

Yue Zhong stared at the Blood Honey, thinking about the millions of people sacrificed by Wei Ming Qing to obtain this. He felt uncomfortable but still kept them in his Storage Ring with a wave of his hands.

"Ah! There's another secret passage!"

Yue Zhong kept all the treasures and combed the area once more carefully, discovering a secret tunnel.

He followed the passage, and after some time, he walked right out into a valley.

"That!! That's the Gate of Hell! It's actually the Gate of Hell!!"

The moment Yue Zhong walked out of the tunnel, he saw the distinctive Gate of Hell about 100m away from him. It had countless engravings of skeletons, monsters, Mutant Beasts, emitting an ancient, archaic aura.

He came in front of it, his right hand touching the closed Gate. Suddenly, there was a notification, "You've already accomplished the mission to open the Gate of Hell. Do you want to open this Gate that leads to the Second World? Once you do, the gate will not be closed, until you complete the gate-closing mission."

Yue Zhong's heart turned cold and made a decision immediately, "No! Don't open it yet!"

It was not the time to open the Gate of Hells yet.

Yue Zhong felt some relief in his heart, "Finally! The people of Cloud Region finally have a road of retreat."

The Cloud Region was surrounded by mountains on all sides, with the Xue Luo Forts being the only way to enter and exit. While such an amazing terrain provided a natural defense and made it hard to attack, it was also a dead-end for the humans. Should the Xue Luo Forts get breached, the people of Cloud Region would have no way of retreat.

With the Gate of Hell, there was finally a chance of retreat and survival.

He swiftly walked out of the valley and noticed that it was linked to the Capital. It was obviously a path of retreat for the Wei Clan. Unfortunately, before it could be utilized, the Wei Clan had been eradicated.

Chapter 902: Battle at the Xue Luo Forts!

About 5 kilometers away from the Xue Luo Guards, there were many tents set up, the entire patch of the forest looking like a huge army camp.

The Dino-Warriors were thick-skinned and were not particular. There were no problems for them to sleep on the ground. However, if they could sleep in even more comfortable options, they would not choose the floor as well.

Other than these Dino-Warriors, there were various other vassal races, and they needed their own space as well.

In the huge camp, there was a clear distinction among the various races and warriors, including about 6 or 7 different humanoid-species.

At the center of the army camp, there was a huge tent, with over 100 commanders of the various races gathered, waiting quietly.

Seated in the main seat, there was the Type 6 Tyranno-King Agu Ya from the Tyrannosaurus Kingdom. This Tyranno-King was 3m-tall, his body covered in black scales. His entire frame was bulky and muscular, and he had a thick, long tail wrapped around his waist. His looks were about 90% similar to humans, and was considerably good-looking, if not for the fact that he had a vicious and savage expression.

Agu Ya was looking coldly at the various leaders gathered. Each time his gaze fell upon someone, the person would tremble.

Agu Ya suddenly barked out, "Yun Shi!"

A Winged man with white wings stood up and shuddered, "Your subordinate is here!!"

Agu Ya ordered coldly, "Your Clan was late for a minute! Go bring me the heads of a thousand of your people."

Yun Shi's face turned incredibly pale. He wanted to argue, but under that intense gaze, he lowered his head, and responded bitterly, "Yes! Your Majesty!"

This Tyranno-King was incredibly cruel and vicious. If Yun Shi dared to resist, the entire Winged Race would have been executed.

Although Yun Shi was a Type 5 expert himself, against Agu Ya, he would be slaughtered in a heartbeat.

Seeing his tyranny, the rest of the leaders also trembled, feeling even more on edge.

Agu Ya barked out coldly, "Since everyone is present, then set off to attack the Xue Luo Forts immediately!"

With his order, the rest of the leaders immediately went into action, deploying their troops according to plan.

"They're here!"

Due to the many satellites, the moment the Dino-warriors acted, Zheng Yan He discovered them and quickly came to the wall to observe.

Sometimes, it was hard to make an accurate judgment just from the satellites. In comparison, Zheng Yan He trusted his senses and gut more. Because of this, he was able to defend and lead the 1st Fort for so many years.

Not long after, a number of human-like Pig-Warriors with boar heads and human physique burst out from the forests, wielding large wooden bats. They grunted in fury as they charged towards the Fort.

Zheng Yan He saw the incoming surge of Pig-Warriors and frowned, "What are these?! Damn it, this time, it's going to be hard to survive this."

In the past battles between Cloud Region and the Tyranno Kingdom, the strength of the Tyranno-Warriors had been

shocking. Their vassals were also powerful races. However, it was the first time that Zheng Yan He had seen this Pig-Warriors, and he came to the conclusion that there must be at least 2 Dino-Kingdoms colluding together.

Even if Cloud Region was stable, fighting against 2 Dino-Kingdoms was hard. Right now, Cloud Region was still recovering from a state of panic, it was even more vulnerable.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

The Pig-Warriors charged right into the landmine area, detonating the explosives planted earlier. Many of them were blasted apart, and their casualties rose.

When Zheng Yan He saw this, he was not happy. These Pig-Warriors were obviously cannon-fodder.

"Fire!"

The moment those Pig-Warriors got to a range of about 300m away from the 1st Fort, the commanders gave their orders, and countless beams of laser and electromagnetic shots fired out, penetrating the heads of many Pig-Warriors.

Inside the 1st Fort, the central computers began to whir and with the help of the satellites in the sky, the data was quickly transmitted to all the soldiers with multi-purpose helmets.

The soldiers had undergone strict training and were able to follow the targeting functions of the helmet, easily taking out enemies at about a distance of 300m.

Without the calculations of the central computer, then the accuracy of these soldiers would decrease greatly.

The horde of Pig-Warriors seemed to have encountered some wall, unable to proceed beyond 300m. They fell to the ground, with varying levels of injuries and the death toll was still climbing.

After a thousand of the Pig-Warriors had died, their morale

finally crumbled and they turned around to flee. The one weakness of intelligent species was that, when the casualty count was too high, they would lose morale and spirit.

Right at this time, a number of Bloodthirsty Dragon Warriors came charging out, beating some war drums to incite morale and valor. Each of them was at least 3m tall and were muscular.

A strange drumbeat echoed out across the battlefield.

The Pig-Warriors heard these drumbeats and their eyes turned bloodshot, turning around once more and launched an assault on the 1st Fort.

This was the innate ability of the Bloodthirsty Dragon Warriors, Bloodlust. They could make use of any music instruments to incite a battle-crazed state in any warrior. In that state, the soldiers would not fear death and only sought to eradicate their enemies.

The beams continued to rain upon the Pig-Warriors from the 1st Fort, tearing them apart mercilessly.

The Pig-Warriors had lost all rationality, advancing forward as much as they can as corpses formed closer and closer to the walls of the 1st Fort.

From the Dino-Warriors camp, the Type 5 leader of the Pig-Warrior clan watched his own elite soldiers being slaughtered with a pale countenance. Although his body was trembling with grief and rage, he continued to send his troops forward. If he dared to resist Agu Ya, the entire Pig-Warrior Race would be wiped out.

The intense battle continued all the way till noon, and over a dozen thousand Pig-Warrior corpses laid strewn across the ground near the Xue Luo Forts. There were piles and piles of them, giving off a desolate vibe. The 1st Fort had not suffered a single casualty yet.

Chapter 903: Mountain of Corpses and Sea of Blood!

There was no break after the countless Pig-Warriors were killed. Under the effects of the war drums, a new army of Lamb-Warriors came rushing out with bloodshot eyes.

Zheng Yan He stood on the city wall and looked down at the horde of incoming Lamb-Warriors, speaking softly, "Change to the automatic defenses.

With his order, the soldiers that had been fighting with all their might stopped and began to rest. Having fought nonstop, their Stamina and Spirit were depleted. If they continued like this, they would collapse.

The countless beams from the electromagnetic and laser weapons fired out. With the adjustments from the central computer, the intense firepower formed a net that slaughtered the incoming Lamb-Warriors.

Under the assault of beams, many of the warriors were turned to sieves, crumpling to the ground with their bodies full of holes.

With the advanced weaponry, the advantages of the humans were displayed to the fullest. In a field battle, human troops would have to consider logistics and support, allowing for enemies to launch assassinations or sneak attacks. However, in a fort defense situation, with their superior technology, the other races would have to sacrifice many of their lives to even get close.

Amidst the Lamb Warriors, many of them were grabbing huge boulders of many tonnes. These warriors had Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, and as they came to about 300m from the city wall, they flung it at the fort.

Under the control of the central computer, the electromagnetic beams from the automated defenses fired at the incoming

projectiles, shattering them. However, many others managed to slam into the wall, causing some of the defense weapons to be damaged or destroyed.

If the 1st Fort were to activate the energy shield, they would be able to deflect these projectiles. However, the energy consumption of that was too huge. If they maintained it for long, the nuclei reserves of the 1st Fort would deplete fast.

The Lamb-Warriors did not care about their own lives as they continued to charge forth and throw boulders while being gunned down.

In the skies, a large number of Mutant Blood-Sucking Bees appeared and they flew over towards the Xue Luo Forts.

Facing the swarm of Mutant Blood-Sucking Bees, the soldiers of the Fort did not panic. Instead, they entered the various defensive bunkers quietly and orderly.

Suddenly, multiple flame weapons were engaged from the Fort, gunning towards the Blood-Sucking Bees in the skies.

Enveloped by the huge flames, the Blood-Sucking Bees began to crackle as though they were cooked, before dropping to the ground.

After the flames managed to incinerate more than half of the swarm, the Bees finally turned out. They rose higher in the skies and flew over the 1st Fort, making their way behind.

Zheng Yan He saw this and frowned slightly, but did not pass any order.

The threat level of these Mutant Blood-sucking Bees was not significant enough. Even if all the Forts were to activate their trump cards, it would at most be enough to eradicate most, but not all, of them. Furthermore, the cost to do so would be too hefty.

As the bee swarm flew over the 1st Fort, 2,000 winged soldiers suddenly flew over from the distance.

Some of these warriors flew to about 300m away from the 1st Fort, firing their arrows at the soldiers on it.

The arrows rained down on the 1st Fort, leaving multiple scratches, at the same time, destroying some of the automated weapons.

In order to take down this 1st Fort, they had to take things step by step. The first was to destroy the terrifying automated defenses.

Otherwise, no matter how many warriors of the other races charge up, they will just be killed.

In the 1st Fort, a number of flaps opened up, as some strange crystal weapons appeared. These crystal-like weapons were known as the Laser Prism Cannons, a trump card of the 1st Fort.

The moment these weapons fully appeared after 10 seconds, numerous laser beams fired into the skies at the next instant, aimed at the 2,000 Winged warriors.

The laser beams fired out, coloring the bleak skies, while the 2,000 Winged warriors suffered multiple wounds, plummeting towards the ground.

In a single move, the Laser Prism Cannons had taken out 2,000 of the Winged warriors in the skies. That showed how terrifying it was.

Inside the Storm Battleship, many people were viewing the battle on the various displays.

"Strong! That was too fearsome. Cloud Region truly possesses some strength to be called the final stand of humanity."

When the Winged elite forces that were Yue Zhong's allies saw how the Laser Prism Cannons turned the enemy Winged race into ashes in a mere second, many of them turned pale. They would not be able to handle such a devastating attack.

If it were a frontal assault, even if all the experts on the Storm

Battleship were to charge, they would not be able to handle the magnitude of attacks.

After the 2,000 Winged warriors had been killed, another 500 of them flew over from the distance, attacking the automated defenses with a frenzy.

The Laser Prism Cannons appeared once more, firing multiple beams into the skies. Faced with the blanket of firepower, the 500 Winged warriors were shot full of holes and plummeted once more.

Right at this moment, a number of Type 3 Mutant Diplodocuses appeared about 3 km away. Each of them was over 10m tall, and they had powerful tails, equipped with large containers that had many boulders of varying weight.

The Dino-warriors beside barked out loud and the Type 3 Mutant Diplodocuses swung their tails, causing the boulders to shoot for the city wall like catapults.

The Mutant Diplodocuses were strength-based gigantic Mutant Beasts. Even a Type 2 Mutant Diplodocus could lift stones and boulders that were tonnes with ease. A Type 3 Diplodocus could fling such rocks easily over a 3km distance.

The huge boulders hurtled across the skies, slamming into the fort wall. Many of them shattered, while some others which were not destroyed by the automated defense, managed to strike the weapons and crush them, leaving behind scrap metal on the walls.

After 2 volleys of the stone-hurling were done by the numerous Type 3 Diplodocuses, behind the 1st Fort, the ground opened up to reveal missiles. They fired off into the sky.

Under the guidance of the central computer, the missiles managed to land directly in the midst of the Type 3 Diplodocuses, exploding and consuming the Type 3 Mutant Beasts.

Within seconds, the location where the Type 3 Diplodocuses were

found had been bombed till the ground was uneven, while the dismembered parts of the Diplodocuses could be seen everywhere.

Over a hundred Pig-Warriors rushed out to the battlefield, transporting the corpses of the Type 3 Diplodocuses away. They could be treated as additional food rations.

This time, the various races were attacking the Xue Luo Forts, and their logistics and rear support were feeling tense as well.

Soon after, another herd of Type 3 Diplodocuses was brought to another area, where they began to launch another volley of catapulting at the Fort walls.

The intense battle continued all the way till evening, with over tens of thousands of soldiers falling in front of the 1st Fort. Over ten thousand Winged elites had also been killed. Whereas on the humans' side, 8 unfortunate soldiers had been struck dead due to the catapulting boulders.

Zheng Yan He looked at the death toll of the enemy, but could not find it in himself to be happy.

Although they had suffered little to no casualty, over 10% of the automated defenses had been destroyed under the relentless assault of the other races.

If they continued on like this, in another 10 days, all of the automated defenses would be destroyed. At that time, the battle would become even more cruel and intense. Furthermore, the battle today had already consumed a large number of resources.

Just those guided Energy Missiles had used up 10% of what they had. If they continued on like this, they would soon become a tiger with no claws, vulnerable to the enemy.

As night fell, the Lamb-Warriors finally stopped attacking. All of a sudden, from the enemy's barracks, many short and dark figures of about 1.2 or 1.3m dashed out towards the Fort.

The Fort began to shine lines downwards, illuminating the entire

area of about 400m from the Fort.

Zheng Yan He opened his eyes wide to observe, only to discover that those figures were small but strong Mice-people, with humanoid bodies.

The numbers of these Mice-people could reach a staggering total. Although they were small, their numbers could make the skin of a person crawl.

As they charged over, many of them grabbed the bodies of the Pig-Warriors and Lamb-Warriors, before running back. Some of them directly pounced and started consuming the corpses. The rest continued to surge forth like a wave towards the Fort.

"Cannons!"

Seeing the flood-like numbers of Mice-people, Zheng Yan He's face changed drastically, as he hollered loudly.

Within the Fort, a number of energy cannons pointed out. There were multiple flashes as they fired out ammunition, bombarding the area where the Mice-People were. The shockwave spread out upon impact, directly obliterating many Mice-warriors each time.

At the same time, a number of soldiers got to their stations within the fort, raising their weapons and attacking the Mice-People.

Faced with the bombardment, many Mice-warriors were killed.

However, even with the illumination of the lights from the Fort, due to the current conditions at night, the accuracy of the human soldiers fell sharply.

Under the influence of the war drums, the Mice-Warriors continued to charge forth with bloodlust, climbing up the Fort with their agility and strength.

At this time, countless automated weapons swiveled out from the Fort, and fired beams at the Mice-Warriors, blowing them to

pieces.

Many more Bear-Warriors and Diplodocus-Warriors raised boulders and began to fling them towards the lights and weapons.

As the boulders and rocks smashed into the Fort wall, many automated weapons were destroyed, at the same time, the Mice-Warriors were caught as well and smashed into bloody pulps.

The Dino-People did not care about the life-and-death of their vassal forces. If the Xue Luo 20 Forts could be brought down to ruins at the expense of all the lives of their vassal forces, they would not hesitate to do so. To them, these Mice-Warriors were just cannon fodder.

At this time, the Laser Prism Cannons rose up again, firing a rain of beams into the dark, turning many of the strong warriors into sieves, their bodies crumpling to the ground.

However, the efficiency and accuracy were definitely lower than when it was in the daytime. At the same time, the energy consumption for each enemy's death was much more than during the day.

The moment those Laser Prism Cannons appeared, the Diplodocus-Warriors leaped out and flung the huge boulders up above the Fort walls.

As the rain of boulders fell upon the area where the Laser Prism Cannons were, some managed to shatter the cannons. However, the cost was that many of these strong Diplodocus-Warriors were also sacrificed.

One the Laser Prism Cannons were dealt with, the seemingly unending number of Mice-Warriors continued to scale up the Fort walls like ants.

Suddenly, flamethrowers extended out from other parts of the Fort, billowing blazing flames out on the bodies of these Mice-Warriors, turning them into fireballs as they screamed and fell to

the ground.

It was just that the number of Mice-Warriors was too many. Some of them managed to reach the flamethrowers and tore them apart, destroying them one by one.

Chapter 904: Seeking Reinforcements!

At this point, a number of humanoid robots came to the city wall, wielding electromagnetic cannons as they fired down at the Mice-Warriors. The flashing beams blasted many of them dead.

Within the 1st Fort, there were the Mech Fighters, and in the defense of the Forts, they could replace human soldiers and fight dangerous battles.

Once these Mech Fighters joined the fray, they began to take out many Mice-Warriors scaling the wall.

However, the boulders that were being flung from below managed to strike these Mech Fighters, turning them into scrap metal.

The intense battle continued for a long while, lasting the entire night. The Dino-people did not stop in their assault at all.

Early the next morning, as the sun rose, Zheng Yan He's eyes were bloodshot from the lack of sleep. He surveyed the surroundings, and saw the numerous Mice-Warrior corpses. The casualty toll was too high, forming small mountains of dead Mice-Warriors, and the strong blood scent could be detected even from the top of the Forts.

In front of the fort, there were large ditches and holes. These were the impact from the energy cannons from the night prior. The holes were filled with corpses and dismembered limbs as well. The entire battlefield looked right out of hell, and it could be described as mountains of corpses and a sea of blood.

The casualties on the Dino-people side had been heavy, with over 150,000 Mice-Warriors dead. The surviving few had begun to retreat, when another group of creatures took over their place. This time, it was the Lizard-People, whose bodies were covered in a layer of green scales. They ran forth with all their might, pouncing

towards the Fort.

Zheng Yan He saw this and his face sunk. He quickly summoned a signal officer and said, "Convey my order, go notify Miss Han Qiong, and inform that the Dino-people are not relenting at all. We need as many reinforcements we can get."

The signal officer replied, "Understood!"

Zheng Yan He looked into the distance, before calling out, "Wait, tell her this. Based on the current intensity of attacks, we can hold out for another 10 days at most. Tell Miss Han Qiong to notify Yue Zhong to be prepared. This time, our Cloud Region might be in trouble."

In just one day, there were already 300,000 dead foreign species, their corpses piled up into hills and their blood flowed all about the ground. It was truly a hellish sight, while the humans had only lost about 20 of their soldiers.

While such a battle record seemed almost perfect, in truth, it was just one day's worth of battle, and many of the automated weapons and defenses had already been destroyed, while many nuclei had already been used up and shattered.

The casualty rate of the 1st Fort might not be high, but the combat ability had already decreased drastically.

With the flow of time, the automatic weapons were being destroyed constantly. It would only spell greater troubles for the 1st Fort. To hang on for another 10 days was already an amazing feat.

The signal officer knew the severity of the situation, and left quickly after responding, "Understood!"

In the meeting hall of the 20th Fort, the commanders of Yue Zhong's army sat in a discussion.

After hearing the report of Zheng Yan He's request, Ma Lei frowned, "Again? Didn't we just assist him before? That Zheng Yan

He is truly greedy."

Not long ago, according to Yue Zhong's instructions, Han Qiong had sent a troop of the original Xue Luo soldiers to Zheng Yan He, together with some nuclei.

Zheng Yan He remained the ruler of the 1st Fort, and did not submit to Yue Zhong. Instead, he chose to maintain status quo with his 2 brothers, while requesting for resources from Yue Zhong shamelessly. This caused Ma Lei to be extremely unhappy.

After all, in a battle of technology, equipment was extremely important. Each time they sent something to Zheng Yan He, it meant that their own resources were depleted.

Han Qiong's pretty countenance was bunched up, as she asked Luo Qing Qing, "Sis Qing Qing, what do you think?"

Although Luo Qing Qing was the head of Storm Valley, and had to represent Storm Valley's interest, she was already integrated with the troops of Yue Zhong, and were reliant on them. If Yue Zhong's army was defeated, their Storm Valley would not have an easy time either.

Her grasp on the big picture, was incredibly astute, and she gave her opinion, "I feel that we have to support. If the lips are gone, the teeth will be cold. Every additional day that the 1st Fort can hold out, we will gain an additional day for preparations."

Han Qiong nodded and her gaze fell upon Shao Yun.

He spoke solemnly, "Since the matter at hand is important, I feel we should leave the decision to Leader, that's the most appropriate."

There were many talents under Yue Zhong. Shao Yun from the Shao Village was already an expert, however, he was just a fighter. His only good point was that he chose to follow Yue Zhong from an early point, and thus could become a general.

Ma Lei also nodded and agreed, "Right, it's too important, we

need Leader to give his decision."

Although Ma Lei recognized and acknowledged Han Qiong and Sun Lan Lan, as a man, he was still slightly sour about his position being beneath 2 women. He preferred to listen to Yue Zhong.

Without any change in expression, Han Qiong pulled out the communicator and soon, Yue Zhong's image was projected out.

Han Qiong looked at him and spoke, "Leader, Zheng Yan He has requested our aid once more. He said if he doesn't receive aid, he can hold out for another 10 days at most. Do we proceed or not?"

Yue Zhong declared, "Help him! We need to provide our support. Send another batch of resources, and hand a clone of Bai Yi over. If he isn't willing, don't force him. I will assign another batch of resources to you guys soon."

Zheng Yan He had ruled the 1st Fort for so long, and knew every single nook and cranny of the place. He had fought against the Tyranno-Kingdom for so long as well. Even if Yue Zhong were to be placed in his shoes, he might not do a great enough job. All he could do was to provide the logistics and gather the people behind to leave Cloud Region.

Yue Zhong knew clearly how terrifying the Dino-race was. If it were just a Tyranno-Kingdom, he still had the confidence to beat them back. However, if there were an alliance between 2 or more kingdoms, Cloud Region was a lost cause.

Han Qiong asked curiously, "Resources? Leader, where are you getting resources?"

Due to Yue Zhong's busy schedule of settling the capital and establishing the cabinet, Han Qiong and the rest had not been updated about his conquering of the Capital.

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "I've already taken the Capital. I'm now the lord here. I can naturally send resources. Han Qiong, patch me to Diao Jin, Lù Yǔ, Cháo Xuān Zhèng, Gài Lóng, Yì Yì,

Qīn Xù, Hǎi Yì, Yóng Bǎi, Yán Lóng."

"What? Has the capital already been conquered by him? How is that possible?" Hearing this news, Luo Qing Qing's face turned, her heart filled with shock.

Han Qiong, Shao Yun and Ma Lei were the same, their eyes flashing with disbelief. They were sure that the defenses of the Capital was no weaker than the Forts. No matter how strong Yue Zhong was, they could not imagine how he had single-handedly gain the Capital.

Shao Yun sighed in his heart, his admiration for Yue Zhong growing again, "He truly is exceptional!"

Han Qiong suppressed the waves of shock and quickly notified the 9 generals of the other Forts.

Soon, the projection device flashed, and a number of beams shone to reveal the projections of the generals.

The Generals from the 4th to the 12th Forts were all lukewarm, not intending to join nor oppose Yue Zhong. However, they maintained a cordial relationship with him. Otherwise, should Yue Zhong cut off their logistics and supplies, they would die.

Diāo Jìn, one of the generals, who had a muscular build and imposing aura, peered at Han Qiong and asked solemnly, "Miss Han Qiong, you've summoned us, what's going on?"

A number of gazes fell upon her, intending to seek an explanation.

Yue Zhong eyed the 9 generals and spoke, "It was me."

Lù Yǔ recognized Yue Zhong's voice and exclaimed, "Leader Yue Zhong, it was you!"

The rest of the generals swiveled to look at Yue Zhong's projection as well.

"Yes!" Yue Zhong eyed them coldly and spoke, "I've already

conquered the Capital, you now have 2 options. 1: Submit to me and serve me, I can promise you a life of luxury. 2: Death, should you refuse to serve me, I will wipe you as well as those who are connected you out from the face of this planet."

The hearts of the 9 generals trembled, filled with shock. They had refused to surrender to Yue Zhong because of the existence of the Capital and Wei Ming Qing in the past. There were too many of their loved ones in the Capital as well. Now, Yue Zhong was claiming that he already took down the Capital. This was an unbelievable matter to them.

Lù Yǔ asked with suspicion, "Leader Yue Zhong, are you for real? Where's your proof?"

The rest of the generals looked to Yue Zhong in doubt.

"His Majesty Yue Zhong is speaking the truth, we can vouch for it!"

With a flash, the Clan Heads of the 4 Great Clans, Zhou Clan Head, and 3 other Clan Heads from the upper clans who have been confirmed a seat in the cabinet appeared through projections as well. Dou Meng looked straight at Lù Yǔ and spoke.

Chapter 905: Surrender!

Dou Meng barked out at the generals, "We can prove it, His Majesty Yue Zhong had already slaughtered Wei Ming Qing, and is the true ruler of our Capital. Diāo Jìn, you're still not kneeling to swear your loyalty?"

The projection of Diāo Jìn immediately got down on his knees as he professed his subservience, "Yes! Diāo Jìn greets Your Majesty Yue Zhong!! Diāo Jìn is willing to serve Your Majesty till my death!!"

Few people knew that the General Diāo Jìn of the Xue Luo Forts was actually someone from the Dou Clan. In fact, he was a direct clansman. However, he had buried his name and hidden his identity from a young age and was supported to become the General he was today with the clan's help.

The 4 Clans had such huge power within Cloud Region that they had many pawns planted everywhere. It was precisely because of this that Wei Ming Qing did not dare to touch them.

Lù Yǔ sighed gently, and got down on a knee, swearing fealty to Yue Zhong, "Lù Yǔ greets Your Majesty Yue Zhong! Lù Yǔ is willing to serve with all my life!"

With the collapse of the palace, Cloud Region was no longer under the control of the Wei Clan. There was no point in maintaining a stubborn loyalty to Wei Ming Qing. At the same time, Yue Zhong had control over 8 of the Forts. If the rest did not agree, there was only death.

After the 2 generals got down on their knees, the other 7 generals followed suit.

Once he had subjugated the remaining 9 Forts, Yue Zhong gave the order for all Forts to send 2,000 soldiers each and the necessary equipment over to the 1st Fort as reinforcements.

At the 1st Fort, when Zheng Yan He received 18,000 soldiers, he heaved a sigh of relief. As long as they were not abandoned by the rest behind, he could hold out for much longer.

Inside the Imperial Capital, within a study, Yue Zhong was looking through a document with his brows furrowed.

Within Cloud Region, there were many different cities. After Wei Ming Qing had died, Yue Zhong immediately sent men to pay a visit to the different city lords.

Under the influence of the upper clans as well as the 4 Great Clans, half of the city lords chose to submit to Yue Zhong, sending hostages to the Capital.

The other half chose to separate from Yue Zhong's rule, declaring independence. Those city lords immediately created a new rebellion faction, forming the upper echelons of the new rebel force.

Some of the rebels also took the chance and chaos to attack other places and raise their own banners, intending to set up their own government and rule.

Due to the various ambitious characters, it became a time of turmoil.

In a short period of time, there were many areas that broke out in conflict and tension within Cloud Region.

If there were no external enemies, such minor problems would not be an issue to Yue Zhong. Bai Yi was enough to control most of the advanced weaponry, and he just had to deploy a few generals over to wipe out such mobs.

However, what Yue Zhong lacked most now was time. By the time he cleared all these problems, the Dino-race would have already killed their way in, causing a sea of blood.

Yue Zhong looked at these documents and picked out 2 names with a strong killing intent, "Liu Yun Feng, Zhang Jin He!"

These 2 were the strongest among the rebel forces. They had taken advantage of the period of chaos to take out a few cities, expanding their faction quickly.

Yue Zhong frowned and barked, "Phantom!"

From the dark, the beautiful yet cold assassin appeared, looking at Yue Zhong quietly while awaiting her orders.

Yue Zhong stared back at this young woman, falling silent for a while. In the end, he handed it to her, saying, "Go deal with all these people."

Phantom took a look at the list, only to discover a few small-time warlords. They were just lording over a few hundred or thousands of people. With Phantom's Type 5 strength, it was going to be an easy job for her.

Phantom kept the list and spoke, "Your Majesty, it's not difficult to take these people down. But once they're dead, those places would have no one to maintain order. I fear more chaos will ensue."

Although Phantom was a peak assassin, she was not some airhead. Killing those leaders was not a problem, it was what comes after.

Yue Zhong had thought of this and replied, "Go take 500 Shadow Guards with you. Each time you take out a leader, leave 10 of them to bring the people back here."

Phantom was more assured this time and replied, "Understood!"

The Shadow Guards were soldiers that Yue Zhong had controlled with the Puppet Runes. They were loyal to him, and could easily quell any small factions.

After Phantom left, Yue Zhong summoned Liu Tai, Liu Du, and many other generals. Each of them was assigned a mechanized infantry battalion as well as 20 handheld computers with Bai Yi's copies to go and suppress the rebels.

A short while later, many vehicles left the Capital in a cloud of smoke, making their way towards the various places of rebellion.

Long Leaf City was a city about 200 li away from the Capital. The city lord was called Liu Shang, one of Wei Ming Qing's trusted aide in the past. After Wei Ming Qing was dead, Liu Shang declared his independence and brought his 2,000 city guards to control the city.

Inside the manor, there were many beautiful women dancing passionately, while Liu Shang and a few of his subordinates were seated around with their arms around ladies. They drank as they enjoyed the dance in front of them.

As they were indulging themselves, one of them spoke in a drunken stupor, "King, are you sure there's no problem with declaring our independence? Yue Zhong must be capable to be able to take down the Capital. If we try to take him on with our strength, I fear that it's useless."

The Capital was not only the government of the Cloud Region, it was also the place where culture, economy and many industrial and manufacturing industries were at. Weapons, ammunitions and high-tech equipment were produced there.

Since Yue Zhong controlled the Capital, as long as he had the resources, he could continually push out weapons. While these warlords were all pig-brained, they at least knew that those high-tech weapons were not something they could handle. Yue Zhong just had to deploy a unit with such weapons, and they would all die.

Liu Shang reached out to grab the breasts of the woman in his arms, while he laughed, "I do not know how Yue Zhong came to control the Capital. However, the 4 Great Clans are not just for display. If Yue Zhong really wants to control the entire Capital, he will have to spend more than 2 years. Within this time, we will sit back and observe, joining the stronger party. Even if Yue Zhong really gain control, don't we just have to surrender at the right

time and join him? Since we already have Long Leaf City, we already hold some bargaining chips."

The various generals all praised while roaring with laughter, "The King is wise!!"

Liu Shang continued to laugh in an unbridled manner "Hahaha! Drink! Everyone drink!!"

At this time, 5 flies flew into the hall, their eyes fixed on Liu Shang, while data flashed in their eyes.

On top of a tall skyscraper 6km away from the city manor, 20 Mech-Fighters wielding sniper cannons were aiming at the cannon.

These 3m-tall humanoid robots were cheaper to manufacture, unlike the Reapers, and only required ordinary Mutant Nuclei or Type 2 Nuclei to operate. Hence, they were widely used throughout Cloud Region. Within the Capital alone, there were over 200,000 of them.

During the siege on the palace, these Mech-Fighters were not deployed, because they would just be controlled by Bai Yi.

Inside a command vehicle outside of Long Leaf City, Cheng Du had his hands behind his back, eyeing a display as he ordered coldly, "Attack!"

At that instant, the 20 Mech-Fighters fired their weapons, and the powerful electromagnetic cannons shot through the distance, directly penetrating the heads of Liu Shang and his few generals within the manor accurately.

The heads of these low-lives disappeared suddenly, and fresh blood splattered from where their heads used to be. The dancers screamed as the corpses slumped to the ground.

Through the monitor, Liu Du's eyes flashed with a complicated expression as he witnessed how powerful the combination of Bai Yi, the Mech-Fighters, and the surveillance flies was. It was a truly

strange feeling. He held Yue Zhong in higher regard, at the same time, there was more fear.

He fell silent for a moment, before ordering once more coldly, "Storm the city!!"

500 warriors in Type 3 Battle Suits rushed out, attacking the city.

Chapter 906: Flowers Blooming Everywhere!

The leader of Long Leaf City was killed in the assassination carried out by those Mech-Fighters. The entire city was now without a leader, and they lacked heavy firepower.

Liu Du's 500 soldiers in Type 3 Battle Suits charged into the city, very quickly slaughtering those who tried to take advantage of the chaos to create trouble.

At the same time, with Bai Yi's help, 200 Mech-Fighters became terrifying snipers. As long as any of the city guards were discovered, electromagnetic beams would fire out, blasting the heads of these poor soldiers.

Under such assault, the troops of Long Leaf City were soon defeated by Liu Du and quickly surrendered.

Liu Du saw the rebels and thought coldly, "This was easy. These fools are so pathetically weak, yet they want to establish their own independence. What wishful thinking."

"If I were to rebel right now, my fate would be like them, slaughtered easily and becoming someone else's merit." He gloated in his heart while eyeing the handheld tablet with Bai Yi in it.

This time, the attack on Long Leaf City had been largely simple and successful due to Bai Yi. Without her, Liu Du was confident in taking down the city as well, but the cost and time would be very different.

Thinking about her power, the last bit of ambitions in Liu Du's heart disappeared entirely.

Black Wood City was another city about 700 km south of the Capital. The city lord had been slaughtered by his own subordinates at the time of Wei Ming Qing's death. The entire city had fragmented into a warzone, with countless factions warring.

Inside a villa, 6 men were naked and laughing as they pounced towards a few teenage girls in satin.

These girls were all wide-eyed with fear as they tried to run for as long as they could, but their stamina could not compare to these men. Soon, one was captured and tackled to the ground.

The rest of the 5 men roared with laughter, as they jumped forward and tore her clothes off.

"No!!" The teenage girl struggled as she screamed, kicking out wildly. Her leg connected with the lower body of the man.

The face of the man turned ugly before he slapped the girl viciously, causing her face to swell, "F*ck! Damn bitch! You dare to injure your granddaddy!! When this granddaddy f*ck you to death later, I will throw you to the streets and let those dirty, stinky beggars have their turn with you!!"

Hearing this threat, the rest of the teenage girls had fear on their faces. They had seen for themselves how some other girls had fought against these perverts and were thrown out on the street, before being abused by those people on the streets. They had died without being able to fight back, their lower bodies ravaged beyond help.

"So it's you bunch of beasts? Truly deserving of death!"

At this time, a chilly voice resounded from a corner of the living hall.

The leader of the men, who was called Ta Ba Wu, threw the girl back on the ground, looking around as he barked, "Who is it? Stop playing games and scram the hell out!!"

The rest of the men also looked around warily.

All of a sudden, Phantom appeared right in the middle of the hall in front of their eyes, "Against you scum, I don't need to do any tricks."

"This..."

Ta Ba Wu caught sight of the alluring Phantom and his eyes brightened. He had just spoken a single word when his body began to fall apart in many slices, as fresh blood splattered everywhere.

Before he had spoken, he was already sliced by Phantom with her crazy speed.

However, due to her blade being too sharp and too quick, he was able to fit in one word before he fell apart.

One of the men roared out in fear and shock, "Everybody up!! Kill her!!"

The remaining men had frenzied looks as they charged up at Phantom.

A powerful killing intent billowed out from Phantom as she disappeared from her location.

The next instant, all 5 men had bloody holes in their chest area, their hearts already sliced up.

Phantom reappeared at her location, as though she had never moved at all.

"I'm Phantom, a general under his Majesty Yue Zhong from the Capital. I've been tasked to rescue you, people." Phantom clapped her hands, and 10 Shadow Guards appeared in the hall, wearing their Type 3 Battle Suits while covered in blood. She pointed to them and said, "Go with them, they will bring you to someplace safe."

After that, she disappeared in the blink of an eye. Yue Zhong had handed her a long list of targets. She had to be on her way swiftly, and deal with every single one of them.

The girls were stunned for a long while, before approaching the 10 Shadow Guards.

Only then did the Shadow Guards turn around quietly and

walked out, gathering the rest of the survivors.

As the survivors were all gathered by the Shadow Guards, they then set off for the Capital.

Yue Zhong sent out many small units, easily suppressing the countless factions and uprisings. Each unit was able to crush the enemy's power with the help of Bai Yi, leaving not a single member of the rebels alive.

With every passing day, the various cities received updates and news about more factions being eradicated by Yue Zhong, with the head of the factions killed, and their power wiped out.

When such reports came in, many city lords who had submitted but were still harboring malicious intents became obedient and followed Yue Zhong with renewed confidence. They broke off all communications and connections with any rebel forces. Some even captured the rebel commanders hiding within their cities, presented as a token of their loyalty.

In a few short days, the winds of change blew, and many rebelling factions had been wiped out by Yue Zhong's army.

Many others felt the imminent danger and fear and chose to submit. However, there were others that went over to submit to Liu Yun Feng and Zhang Jin He.

These 2 largest rebels absorbed the multiple smaller factions and expanded profusely. At the same time, they felt the pressure of Yue Zhong's forces, thus increasing their own military might. In just a few days, their armies reached the figure of 500,000, while supporting 2 million survivors.

Fire Tooth City was a border side city, about 1,000 km away from the Xue Luo Forts. In the past, it had been one of the more prosperous cities.

Right now, it was a huge army camp, where many soldiers were wearing different uniforms, wielding long wooden spears, their

faces devoid of any energy.

While Liu Yun Feng and Zhang Jin He managed to conquer a few cities, many of them were of different sizes, and they only managed to salvage barely enough equipment and weapons to arm 30,000. When the other forces joined them, they gained an additional 10,000-men's worth of weapons. The rest of the army could only on melee weapons like wooden spears and other blades.

One soldier was holding his bowl of porridge and took a sip. He could not help but curse, "Porridge again!! Damn disgusting shit!! How many days has it been?! If we just eat this, how do we have the energy to fight?"

Another middle-aged soldier looked at him and frowned, "Little Lin, enough. Be careful, the walls have ears."

The young soldier, Lin Xuan, continued to swear, "I insist on saying it. All of us have to eat this every day, while those at the top get to eat white rice, fish, and meat. And they dare say Yue Zhong is the tyrant that is depriving us of everything. I think that it's those that have forced us to conscript are the true bastards!"

Liu Yun Feng and Zhang Jin He had conquered dozens of cities, gaining a large number of rations. However, as they expanded to over 500,000 troops as well as 2 million survivors, the expenditure was monstrous. Hence, other than the elites who could eat their fill, the rest of the cannon fodder could only eat porridge.

The 2 rebel leaders proclaimed their mission to rebel, however, they fell to corruption and the distribution of rice was done through other corrupted officials and channels, thus, the conditions of the rank-and-file soldiers were incredibly poor.

One military officer was just passing by. He heard Lin Xuan's words and his face turned ugly. Walking over, he kicked out viciously at the young soldier, before cursing, "Shitty bastard, what did you say?! We are the people's army! We're fighting for the sake of liberating Cloud Region! You can't handle this little

hardship?! Can you still count yourself as a people's soldier?! Men, drag him out! Give him 30 lashes!"

2 soldiers quickly walked over and dragged Lin Xuan out.

Lin Xuan stared at the officer with hatred in his eyes but lowered his head eventually.

"Not good!! Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

All of a sudden, one signal officer shouted out in panic.

The officer turned to look out, only to discover a scene that caused his heart to run cold.

Chapter 907: The Terrifying Might of the Mechanized Battalion!

Right outside of Fire Tooth City, there were many Mech-Fighters of about 3m each clustered together, as well as 20 Reapers in the middle of them.

Some distance away, one could see many mechanized vehicles and cannons pointed at the city. There were even heavy assault helicopters in the skies.

Such a troop immediately brought about a stifling and oppressive pressure on the people within the city. Facing such a terrifying force, no one could maintain their calm.

The moment they saw this huge mechanized unit making its way towards them, the rebels turned pale and lost all fighting spirit. Especially since they knew they were just cannon fodder. Those soldiers had no armor and were only wielding wooden spears. Pitting their fleshy bodies against these steel behemoths was practically suicide.

Inside the city, atop a very secretive skyscraper, 2 middle-aged men looked out at the scene outside of the city, their expressions ugly.

One of them had a valiant look, and he turned to his comrade, whose height was about 2m, and his frame bulky and muscular, and asked, "Jin He, what do you think?"

The first man was one of the 2 leaders, Liu Yun Feng, while the muscular one was Zhang Jin He.

The 2 leaders were initially foes, often backstabbing each other. For the sake of controlling the different cities they had conquered, they had come to blows often times. However, when faced with Yue Zhong's crushing of the various rebel factions, they felt a sense of crisis and had no choice but to join together.

Zhang Jin He eyed the mechanized infantry, his scalp turning numb, "Our troops are no match for this unit."

Liu Yun Feng gritted his teeth, "The Capital truly has unfathomable resources. How the hell did Yue Zhong take down Wei Ming Qing and even take over all these so smoothly?! Damn it!!"

When Yue Zhong came to power, he quickly sealed all information from getting out, thus, the riff-raff rebels did not know about the battle. They only managed to gleam some superficial information from what Yue Zhong actually disseminate.

Zhang Jin He asked slowly, "What do we do now?"

Liu Yun Feng had a crazed look, "Let them in, we will fight it out with them. We have 500,000 soldiers, if they are all united and do not fear death, we definitely can take them down."

Zhang Jin He frowned and felt that this Liu Yun Feng was crazy. He had trained up some of the soldiers and knew fully well what they were capable of.

Even if they were pitted against a 3,000-strong unit with decent weapons, they would likely lose. Zhang Jin He started to despise Liu Yun Feng for his lack of foresight and clarity.

However, while Liu Yun Feng was hopeless in the military, he was charismatic and motivating in his words. He could pull people together, and in that sense, he was mightier than Zhang Jin He.

Zhang Jin He did not engage in any further discussion with Liu Yun Feng, instead, he turned to look at the mechanized unit outside and frowned, "What are they waiting for?"

At this moment, a number of robot flies had flown to different parts of the city, their eyes fixed on the various city guards.

"That is...!! Not good!! Hide!!"

Zhang Jin He was a Type 5 expert, and with his powerful physique, he managed to catch sight of the robotic fly loitering about the region a 100 meter away from him. His expression changed and he yelled.

"Attack!!"

At that moment, following Yue Zhong's cold order, the metal robots outside immediately pulled their triggers. The electromagnetic beams shot through the air, directly piercing the heads of the various city guards, blasting their heads apart.

The area where the 2 leaders were at was the main focus, with dozens of beams firing upon them. Liu Yun Feng and dozens of his bodyguards were instantly pulverized.

Zhang Jin He's response was frightening. The moment he discovered the electronic fly, he already knew that things were bad. With a twist of his body, he swiftly disappeared from his location while the incoming electromagnetic beams blasted the location where he had stood.

In just a single round, all the elites of the Fire Tooth City were killed or heavily injured. Yue Zhong's troops continued to march onward into the city.

Lin Xuan grabbed a ray gun and roared, firing at the nearby rebel soldier, "To hell with it!! All of us, let's fight back!! Kill these damn rebels and use their heads to seek pardon!! Those who want riches, follow me!!"

"Fight back!!"

"Fight!!"

"Kill these damn rebel dogs!!"

"..."

Many soldiers grabbed their wooden spears and charged right into the rebel troops, attacking them.

"What are you guys doing?!"

"Bunch of fools, we're liberating you!! You dare to act against us?! Repaying our kindness with evil!"

"..."

When the rebel soldiers received the sudden attack from their own ranks, they were accosted on both sides.

Yue Zhong saw the chaos within and did not pay too much attention, "Inner conflict?"

In this battle, Yue Zhong had deployed 5,000 Mech-Fighters to assault Fire Tooth City. It would be no issue to take them down. What he worried was not if he could defeat them, but rather those that flee.

The 5,000 Mech-Fighters continued straight into the city like a hot knife through butter.

The moment those 5,000 Mech-Fighters entered the fray, the rebel forces could not withstand the uprising nor the concentrated attack, thus, they fell apart, fleeing and stampeding over themselves.

"It's over!"

Zhang Jin He watched the chaos spreading among the troops and immediately turned to flee.

Right now, the defeat of the rebels was imminent. Even if Zhang Jin He was a Type 5 Divine Warrior, there was no way he could take on so many Mech-Fighters on his own.

The gates of the city opened up, as many rebel soldiers tried to flee.

"No!!"

One general had just carried his subordinate out when he starred in despair at the hundreds of Mech-Fighters waiting outside the gate.

At the next moment, hundreds of beams of electromagnetic beams rained down upon the despairing rebels, obliterating them.

"What a vicious guy!! He's not showing any mercy at all!!"

Zhang Jin He was following the rebel forces out, and when he saw the hundreds of soldiers being annihilated in a single breath, his heart nearly stopped, and he was filled with fear. Obviously, Yue Zhong had no plans of throwing all his forces into attacking, instead, he had sent some to surround the entire place. He wanted to catch them all.

A number of rebels tried fleeing from other locations as well, only to be shot dead by the various Mech-Fighters situated at every single exit.

"Throw down your weapons, we'll spare those who surrender!"

"Throw down your weapons, we'll spare those who surrender!"

"..."

At this moment, there were sounds of persuasion played from the Mech-Fighters, leaving those rebel soldiers who intended to fight to the death, to throw their weapons and surrender.

Zhang Jin He's eyes flashed coldly, as he sucked in a deep breath, and pushed his speed to the maximum, leaping over the city wall.

He had just leaped over when he was met with dozens of electromagnetic beams.

Zhang Jin He activated his ability, Speed Manipulation, and his speed of descent shot up explosively, bringing him to the ground.

The beams shot at empty air.

Bai Yi's eyes started to churn with data as she reported, "Enemy's strength is being reevaluated. Based on the analysis, 30% chance that enemy is peak Type 4 expert, 70% chance that he's a Type 5 expert. Adjusting firing rate and aim."

60 vehicles that were equipped with high-tech weapons adjusted

their cannons, and at the next moment, 2,400 beams of lasers that became an entire pillar shot at Zhang Jin He.

A sense of crisis filled his heart, as he channeled his ability once more, pushing his speed to the Mach-2 realm, trying his best to flee. Such a speed was enough to escape the lock-on from a majority of weapons.

However, the speed of sound could not fight the speed of light. The moment the pillar of lasers swept past him, his entire body was punched with multiple holes, as blood flowed from every single one of them. His eyes were filled with shock and disbelief. He was a Type 5 expert, a rare breed of humans, and yet, he had fallen like that under the assault of such weapons. He was truly unwilling.

Zhang Jin He's death did not concern Yue Zhong much, after all, it was incredibly normal for Bai Yi and the amount of firepower he had to take down a Type 5 expert.

Chapter 908: 15th Day of Bloodshed!

When the 2 leaders of the rebel faction died, the rest of the soldiers also quickly surrendered. Those troublemakers who seized the opportunity to cause problems were gunned down and executed without mercy.

From the perspective of following orders, these Mech-Fighters were unrivaled, carrying out orders to a tee.

They had no fear and only sought to complete their orders, making them the best soldiers and cannon fodder.

A long time ago, these Mech-Fighters had appeared on the battlefield of Cloud Region. However, they had not met a powerful A.I. like Bai Yi to help control them.

At the same time, there was an obvious flaw in them, that was the fact that their fighting style and strength were rigid. No matter how much they fought, they would not grow nor become stronger. Other than that, there were other weak points as well.

A single electromagnetic pulse bomb could cause thousands of such Mech-Fighters to be crippled, thus, the human soldiers could not be totally exempt from battle.

Yue Zhong took big strides into the middle of the city, behind him were 20 warriors in Type 4 Battle Suits.

Along the way, the soldiers within the city were on either side of him, staring at Yue Zhong, their hearts full of uncertainty.

Yue Zhong came up to Lin Xuan and asked indifferently, "I heard you were the first to fight back? What's your name?"

Lin Xuan looked at Yue Zhong uneasily and replied, "Replying to Sir, my name is Lin Xuan."

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with appreciation, "Very good! You did well. I will confer you to be a youth commander. Go select 500 men

to be your subordinates, and go take down the other rebel cities."

"500?"

Lin Xuan's face changed, his body trembling, his face ash-like.

The Fire Tooth City was the city where most of the rebels had gathered, with over 70% of the elites gathered. However, there were other rebel factions in other locations, and while they might be riff-raff, their numbers were in the tens of thousands. If Lin Xuan had to lead 500 men against such a number, they would surely die.

Yue Zhong replied, "Other than the 500 men, I will deploy 5,000 Mech-Fighters and 5 Reapers under your command. Do you have the confidence to do it? If not, I will not force you."

Lin Xuan trembled with excitement, as he got down on one knee and professed his loyalty, "I'm confident, Lord, I have the confidence to take down those cities!! Please allow me to serve you!!"

5,000 Mech-Fighters were a powerful force to these ordinary soldiers. With it, Lin Xuan had the confidence to crush the remaining rebel forces.

The other soldiers that had joined Lin Xuan in the uprising looked at him with an envious gaze. He had leaped to a different status in one day, from the lowest citizen to a general.

Yue Zhong then shot him a cold look, "Lin Xuan, let me make things clear first. Against those rebels, those who do not submit, you can kill them. However, if you or your men dare to pillage, rape or mistreat anyone in the cities, don't blame me for being merciless. Understand?"

A force of 5,000 Mech-Fighters with Bai Yi's control was basically unstoppable against these rebels.

Yue Zhong had chosen Lin Xuan to be the leader of this unit, one was to allow these people to fill up the gaps of these mechanized

battalions. The other way was to fill up his ranks for people who are loyal to him.

If Lin Xuan was able to suppress and defeat those rebel forces, Yue Zhong would then have a reason to recruit him, allowing him to become a pawn in the military.

At this time, the military of the Capital was made up of a mix of people from different factions. If Yue Zhong wanted full control, he needed all the help he could get.

Lin Xuan's face was filled with respect as he responded, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong patted his shoulders and promised, "Once you're back, I will promote you and not mistreat you nor your men."

Lin Xuan heard Yue Zhong's promise, and his heart felt warm, "Your subordinate will definitely wipe out the rebels for Your Majesty."

Yue Zhong slightly nodded as he turned his gaze towards the Xue Luo 20 Forts, his eyebrows furrowing, "Please, hang in there!"

Right now, in front of the 1st Fort, the ground had multiple holes and ditches all over it, with the blood of various species and races. The stench of the corpses was extremely overpowering, as many Blood-Sucking Bees buzzed around the corpses, absorbing the blood of the fallen.

On the Fort itself, the city wall had traces of destroyed automatic weapons, while maintenance workers were silently dragging the bodies of their enemies as well as their fallen corpses off to be burned.

Zheng Yan He was standing on the city wall, staring at the corpses of his subordinates and felt his heart ache. His gaze traveled towards the other parts of the city walls.

Soldiers were hugging their weapons as they crouched or kneeled on the ground, sleeping. They had not had any rest for 2 whole days, their exhaustion reaching a peak.

It was already the 15th day of the assault by the Dino-Race, under their relentless assault and the throwing of their vassal forces at the city wall, the vast majority of the automatic defenses had already been destroyed.

The Mech-Fighters were also injured and damaged somewhat.

Zheng Yan He continued to rotate the soldiers, deploying his troops as efficiently as he could, fending off the constant attacks and waves from the Dino-Races.

In this 15 days, there had been over a million foreign races that died in front of the 1st Fort. Due to the overwhelming number of corpses which had formed piles and piles, Zheng Yan He had no choice but to utilize the energy bombs to obliterate them.

Furthermore, the presence of the corpses would be a food source for the Dino-Races.

Each time they attacked, there would be many hungered races and tamed Mutant Beasts that pounced on the corpses and fed while they attacked.

All of a sudden, there was a loud roar from the distance, while the Blood-Sucking Bees scattered and flew into the skies, leaving behind a number of dried corpses.

"They're coming!!"

Zheng Yan He looked at the cloud of bees and frowned. He knew that everytime the bees flew, the Dino-Warriors would attack again, From the army camps of the Dino-Warriors, there was a surge of Snake-Warriors covered in black scales. The Snake-Warriors were also being fuelled by the war drums, making a mad rush for the 1st Fort.

In the skies, 500 Sparrow-Warriors of about 1.23m each, wielding bows, soared up to the skies and fired multiple arrows at the human warriors on top of the Fort.

Zheng Yan He saw the surge of enemies and had 2,000 men

prepare for battle.

At the same time, a number of energy cannons fired out, obliterating huge numbers of the Snake-Warriors with each round.

The rounds from the energy cannons came down like rain, annihilating many Snake-Warriors.

However, many of the Snake-Warriors managed to pass through the fire net, getting near the city wall.

The Snake-Warriors that got past managed to get to the city wall, and began to scale up the wall.

After so many days of intense battles, the automatic weapons had already been destroyed. Many of the human warriors had to risk their lives to stick their heads out to shoot at the Snake-Warriors.

Since the humans had the advantage of the high ground, many Snake-Warriors were pierced through by the laser beams.

However, in retaliation, the Snake-Warriors were able to fire out some black, poisonous arrows from their jaws.

"Ah!!"

When those black poison arrows touched the faces of the human warriors, the strong corrosive ability managed to burn right through the meat and bone, causing the entire heads of the unfortunate warriors to melt.

At the same time, hidden within the midst of the Snake Warriors, there was a Type 5 warrior that scurried up the walls. When it appeared in front of the defense points, it shot out poisonous spit.

The powerful firepower stopped immediately, as the warriors screamed out while being melted into a puddle.

It was at the moment where the automatic weapons had been destroyed that the top experts could display their full strength.

The Type 5 Snake-Warrior continued to slither around, firing multiple poisonous veils of mist. The human warriors within the

defense points were reduced to piles of bones, with no one being able to withstand the attacks.

Faced with the attack of the expert Snake-Warriors, the human casualties were rising, at the same time, the collapse of each defense point meant that the Snake-Warriors behind were free to advance.

Zheng Yan He saw the peak experts of the Snake-Warriors proceeding unbridled and decided to pull out his trump card, "Iron-blood Warriors! Move out!!"

40 elite warriors wearing Type 4 Battle Suits emitting intense killing intent walked out, their Battle Spears and Mutant Nuclei glowing brightly. Their power was pushed to the Type 5 realm, as they charged to face the Snake-Warriors.

The Battle Suits lit up and the Iron-blood Warriors began to run up the wall as though they were on flat land.

Chapter 909: Iron-Blood Warriors!

The Type 4 Snake Warriors saw the sudden appearance of the 40 Iron-Blood Warriors and opened their mouths, firing poisonous liquids at the Iron-Blood Warriors.

Two of the Iron-Blood Warriors slashed out, activating their psychic abilities, causing the trajectory of the poison liquids to shift.

The rest of the Iron-Blood Warriors appeared in front of the Type 4 Snake-Warriors like lightning bolts, their spears thrusting out with tyrannical strength, directly killing a number of them.

These Iron-Blood Warriors were the elite of the elite, each one of them soldiers that had crawled out from mountains of corpses. They all had strength at the peak of Type 4, and adding on the enhancement of their Type 4 Battle Suits, they were able to unleash a Type 5 strength.

This was the trump card that the 1st Fort had kept hidden, meant to deal with any enemy experts. Without these Iron-Blood Warriors, then under the circumstances where the automatic weapons were all destroyed, the Type 5 foreign races would be invincible.

The Type 5 Snake-Warrior expert caught sight of the Iron-Blood Warriors, its pupils narrowing. With a flash of its body, it quickly slithered towards one of them, slashing out viciously.

At that instant, the Snake-Warrior's claws tore through the Type 4 Battle Suit, piercing the chest plate of the Iron-Blood Warrior.

The eyes of the Iron-Blood Warrior flashed with despair, as he roared with rage. His both hands grabbed the hand of the Type 5 Snake Warrior firmly, locking him in place.

The Type 5 Snake-Warrior sneered, and his left claw slapped towards the head of the Iron-Blood Warrior. He just had to crush

the head of this insignificant human in front of him and he would gain his freedom.

Right at this time, without any noise, 2 Iron-Blood Warriors suddenly appeared behind the Type 5 Snake Warrior, their Battle Spears thrusting at him.

Due to the sudden turn of events, the Type 5 Snake Warrior had no way of dodging. He stared wide-eyed as the 2 Battle Spears penetrated his body, and the powerful energy blasted forth, tearing his body into pieces.

This Type 5 Snake-Warrior that had killed over a hundred soldiers had died at the hands of the Iron-Blood Warriors.

With his dead, the Iron-Blood Warrior that had used his own body to lock the Snake-Warrior turned darker, his entire body slumping down without energy.

Another Iron-Blood Warrior rushed up to support him, asking worriedly, "Ah Sheng, how is it?"

The poisoned Iron-Blood Warrior muttered with difficulty, "I think it's too late for me. Take my equipment, save it for one of our brothers."

"Watch out!!"

At that moment, the alarmed shout of another of their comrades rang out.

A powerful bolt of energy that seemed to pierce right through the heavens shot towards them. It pierced the 2 Iron-Blood Warriors, before exploding on the wall of the 1st Fort.

Countless debris fell while the 2 Iron-Blood Warriors had been blasted apart. There was a huge hole in the Fort wall itself as well as if a missile had exploded right in the middle of it.

Zheng Yan He saw the state of destruction, having lost his 2 Iron-Blood Warriors in the blink of an eye, and he roared out, "Type 6

Divine Warrior!! Activate the energy shield!!"

The moment his words came out, another flurry of arrows shot out with terrifying speed, instantly shredding 6 Iron-Blood Warriors.

Those Iron-Blood Warriors used all their strength and might, but in the face of pure strength, they were still weak.

Soon, a huge energy shield appeared in the sky, covering the entire area of 20m beyond the Xue Luo Forts.

The powerful arrows that had casually destroyed a few Type 5 Divine Warriors slammed into the shield, causing powerful waves that rippled out, yet unable to pierce through.

The hundreds and thousands of Snake-Warriors were also left outside the barrier, and they began a frenzied assault on the energy shield, wearing down the energy reserves.

The remaining 32 Iron-Blood Warriors continued to fight back, supported by the other soldiers, as they dealt with those Snake-Warriors that were caught within the shield.

The moment those 32 Iron-Blood Warriors joined in the fray, and the Snake-Warriors near the Fort wall were quickly exterminated.

After wiping out those Snake-Warriors, the 32 Iron-Blood Warriors retreated back into the Fort swiftly, while the energy shield disappeared. The countless Snake-Warriors caught beyond the shield surged forward once more, and both sides began another intense round.

At the same time, the energy cannons adjusted their aims, and with bright flashes, volleys of energy missiles were fired at the direction where the powerful arrows of the Type 6 Divine Warrior came from.

As the rounds landed, the entire region was engulfed in bright flashes of explosions.

After a few rounds, the energy cannons had no choice but to adjust their aim once more to deal with those Snake-Warriors. There were too many of threatening to break in, and the energy cannons instantly obliterated many of them.

Agu Ya was currently on a high ground, eyeing the Xue Luo Fort from a distance of 10km, and he gave a cold order, "The Xue Luo Guards are all activated! Seems like the 1st Fort is at its limit. Agu Yi, go take some experts and give them the final push!"

One Mid-Grade Dino-General replied solemnly, "Yes! My liege!!"

After that, Agu Yi disappeared from his location.

Soon, a force of about 15 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, 30 Type 5 experts of various races, 200 Low-Grade Dino-Generals, and 600 Type 4 experts of their vassal forces charged towards the 1st Xue Luo Fort, ignoring the Snake-Warriors in front of them.

Under the countless bombardment of the energy missiles, one Type 5 expert, as well as dozens of Low-Grade Dino-Generals and Type 4 experts from the vassal forces were wiped out.

The rest of the experts charged through the crowd and made it to the wall successfully.

A large number of automatic weapons were destroyed, and the 1st Fort was no longer able to resist the enemy charges or prevent them from invading the 300m region near their walls.

The experts of the vassal forces quickly exhibited their terrifying power, leaping up the wall and scaling it swiftly.

Zheng Yan He's response was quite timely, as the moment the experts of the vassal forces showed their abilities, a huge energy shield appeared once more, cutting off the support from behind.

500 Iron-Blood Warriors with Type 3 Battle Suits charged out under the lead of the original 32 Iron-Blood Warriors, rushing at the vassal forces.

The leader of the force, Agu Yi, had a ferocious glint in his eyes. With a tap of his foot, his entire body seemed to shoot towards one of the Type 4 Iron-Blood Warriors. He brought his fist towards the head of the warrior, instantly blasting it apart.

2 other Type 4 Iron-Blood Warriors suddenly appeared beside Au Yi and were met with 2 insanely fast fists. Their heads were thus blasted apart as well.

Agu Yi's strength at the peak of the Type 5 realm was incredibly terrifying. Even some Type 6 Divine Warriors who were not proficient in close combat had died at his hands before.

Even if the Iron-Blood Warriors were enhanced by their Battle Suits, they were not a match for someone like Agu Yi.

After he killed 3 Type 4 Iron-Blood Warriors with ease, his eyes turned bloodshot, his aura terrifying.

The next moment, he appeared within the 500 Iron-Blood Warriors, and without stopping, he punched out, causing each one of them to explode in a pillar of blood. No one was a match for him.

"A Type 5 Dino-Warrior is truly terrifying!!"

In a command center, Zheng Yan He saw how his 500 Iron-Blood Warriors were being slaughtered by those foreign races. His eyes flashed with pain, as though he had turned older by a few years. He gritted his teeth and ordered, "A67, B54 sectors to self-detonate. Laser vehicles, encompassing fire now!"

Hong! Hong!

With his order, the region where the Iron-Blood Warriors were engaged in battle blew up in an earthshaking explosion, and the blast consumed everything around it, including the various Type 5 experts.

The numerous enhanced vehicles hidden within the Fort rolled out, firing without stop at the city wall, killing those foreign races

that had survived the earlier detonations.

"I'm sorry!! Forgive me!!!"

Zheng Yan He eyed the city wall, his eyes filled with pain and reluctance. In order to wipe out those Dino-Warriors, he had no choice but to sacrifice his 500 Iron-Blood Warriors. When he gave the order, his heart felt as though it was crushed, after all, those troops had been trained and nurtured by him.

However, he had no choice but to this, there were too little experts among the human forces. If there were no sacrifices, just an expert troop of the enemy was able to wipe out every single human within the Fort.

Xu Jian, Zheng Yan He's vice-commander, stepped up and offered his consolations, "General, don't blame yourself. Since the day they chose to become Iron-Blood Warriors, they have expected such a fate! To die on the battlefield defending their fellow humans, it is the highest honor that they can receive. They are all heroes, and will forever be remembered in our hearts."

"They are all heroes!!" Zheng Yan He's eyes turned misty and a look of guilt and self-reproach flashed past, before it turned to resolution, "Xu Jian, command the rest to retreat to the 2nd Fort."

Xu Jian could not help but exclaim, "General! Our Energy Shield is not yet destroyed, are we going to just give up on the 1st Fort?"

Although they had held out for 15 days, under Zhang Yan He's insightful tactics, the energy shield had not yet been breached, with over 40% power reserved.

Chapter 910: The Fall of the 1st Fort!

Zheng Yan He's tone turned solemn, "We have fought for so long, our soldiers are already tired. Even if we have enough equipment to support another 2 days, under such circumstances, we will only suffer. We need to let them retreat and have a good rest."

From the time the Dino-Army launched their attack, the death toll had been steadily rising.

In the first 10 days, the 1st Fort had only lost not more than a hundred men. However, once the automated defenses were destroyed, the soldiers had no chance to rest, and their casualty rate was climbing.

Just yesterday, they had already lost 1,300 soldiers. Furthermore, the battle today had not gone on for long, but 500 elite Iron-Blood Warriors were already killed in action. Such a loss was too hard for Zheng Yan He to bear.

It was especially so for those soldiers sent from the other Forts as reinforcements, many of them could not compare to the elites of the 1st Fort. The few days of intense combat was already reaching their threshold, if they were to continue like that, it was likely that they would collapse.

Xu Jian saluted before leaving quietly, "Understood!"

Soon, behind the 1st Fort, many soldiers with exhaustion written all over their faces could be seen retreating towards the 2nd Fort.

Many of the soldiers from the 1st Fort eyed this structure they had called home for numerous months and years with hot tears flowing down their faces. They had fought and defended it with all their might and were clear that this time, it was truly goodbye. There was no way of returning to this place that they were proud of.

In order to eliminate most of the Type 5 experts, the 1st Fort was

buried with energy bombs. Although they had successfully wiped out this batch of Type 5 experts, the resulting explosions had also caused a huge hole in the Fort.

Seeing such a huge hole in the Fort wall, many soldiers of the foreign races and species surged forward.

The human's physique was vastly inferior to these races. The moment the enemy got close to them, the human soldiers would definitely die.

Just as the hundreds of enemy soldiers charged through the hole, a number of laser beams shot out from nowhere.

The hundreds of soldiers were instantly turned to sliced meat.

Even so, many more continued to pour in through the hole, before being shredded apart by the automatic laser vehicles already waiting behind the wall.

Zheng Yan He had already expected that the explosion would damage the wall, and thus, he had made the necessary preparations as well.

Following the mass evacuation of the soldiers, the defense of the 1st Fort became much more simple. Right at this time, the 2,000 Mech-Fighters that Zheng Yan He had kept from the battle finally joined in the fray.

The moment they stepped in, although it was insufficient to turn the tides, it was enough to buy time for the human soldiers to retreat.

From afar, Agu Ya caught sight of the Mech-Fighters taking over the positions of the humans and his eyes turned sharp, "Seems like Zheng Yan He is retreating."

One Mid-Grade Dino-General asked, "My liege, shall we increase the attack?"

Agu Ya spoke slowly, "No matter. It would just benefit Zheng Yan

he. These crafty humans definitely planted bombs within the 1st Fort. The more we send, when the defenses fall, the more we will lose."

If they were not concerned about the energy bombs beneath the 1st Fort, the Type 6 Divine Warriors of the Tyranno-Kingdom would have long charged in.

Out here on the battlefield, a Type 6 Divine Warrior was incredibly power, with almost no opponent. As long as they made it up the Fort, they would be able to slaughter every single soldier without a sweat.

Initially, the 1st Fort had been assaulted by such a Tyranno-King before, however, after he had breached the Fort, he was taken out by the energy bombs buried."

In this Third World, every single Type 6 Divine Warrior was a peak existence. Other than the Dino-Race being the land-rulers, as well as the Sea Clan within the waters, the number of Type 6 experts in most other races never exceeded 10.

The loss of a Type 6 Tyranno-King was a huge blow to the kingdom. At that time, there had only been 5 Type 6 Tyranno-Kings. After losing one, they had no choice but to stop the assault on the Xue Luo Forts. After all, there were 20 of them, without the Type 6 experts to act, it was hard to take down each one.

The intense siege continued for over half a day before the 2,000 Mech-Fighters were finally ripped apart by the huge number of enemy forces.

The frames of these Mech-Fighters were not exceptional. A Type 2 Divine Warrior would be able to smash them apart.

After destroying the 2,000 Mech-Fighters, the foreign races poured through the 1st Fort, destroying every single piece of equipment they laid their hands on.

At the same time, many of the vassal forces sent out snifers to

dig out the buried energy bombs.

On top of that, 2,000 Lizard-Warriors charged right out, chasing after the retreating human soldiers.

The other vassal forces that were treated as cannon fodder also rushed after the human soldiers.

"These fellows are truly getting crafty!"

From a far distance away, Zheng Yan He saw all that was happening in the 1st Fort through a surveillance camera, and sighed, before pressing a remote control.

Hong!

Following a loud earthshaking explosion, the entire 1st Fort was engulfed in a bright, white light. The terrifying explosion instantly consumed every single living thing in the vicinity, wiping out all 20,000 soldiers of the Dino-Army.

The dust blew and rose up in a cloud. The ground trembled, and it could be felt even from miles away.

At the moment of the explosion, a powerful shockwave shot out in all directions, wiping out all the Mouse-Warriors that were nearby. They started crumpling to the ground while bleeding from their orifices.

All the foreign races were in shock when they witnessed what had happened in the 1st Fort. Even a Type 7 Divine Warrior would have fallen at the center of that explosion.

When the dust settled, there was a huge crater in the ground, and the entire 1st Fort was obliterated from existence.

Agu Ya eyed that huge crater and ordered coldly, "Continue the attack!"

Instantly, countless soldiers charged out from the forests, dashing through where the 1st Fort used to be, as they made their way towards the 2nd Fort.

This time, the numbers behind the assault on Cloud Region was simply unimaginable. With other dozens of Dino-Kings gathering, it was hard to tell how powerful they were all capable of unleashing.

The deaths of the cannon fodder and vassal forces did not mean much to these Dino-Kings.

Instead, their deaths were a good thing to the Tyranno-Kingdom. This would wear down on any resistance the vassal forces might be inclined to put up.

Although they were vassals, in the eyes of the Dino-Warriors, they were just cannon fodder. Even if an entire species were to be wiped out, the Dino-Warriors would just find others.

Soon, a similar scene of battle started to appear at the 2nd Fort. Many of the enemy forces used their own lives and flesh and blood to destroy the automated weapons.

The 2nd Fort was also a tough nut to crack, covered with countless defenses and automatic weapons. Many soldiers of the foreign races perished right in front of the iron fortress.

Due to the terrain, the structure of the 2nd Fort was smaller than the 1st Fort. At the same time, most of the resources through the years had been pumped into the 1st Fort. Therefore, the strength of the defense of the 2nd Fort was weaker.

However, it was also due to the terrain that the enemy forces could not spread out, and could only surge forward, only to be obliterated by the defenses.

Under the frenzied assault of the foreign races, after another 7 days, as well as the sacrifice of over 500,000 foot soldiers, Zheng Yan He and Wu Bao had no choice but to give up on the 2nd Fort and retreat further into the 3rd Fort.

The defenses of the 3rd Fort were worse than the 2nd.

This time, the enemy only had to pay the price of 300,000

soldiers and a period of 5 days before taking it down.

The Dino-army and its vassal forces had managed to take down 3 forts successively, gaining huge momentum.

While the people within the Xue Luo Forts began to panic, and their morale dropped even further.

It must be known that after the 20 Forts were constructed, other than the 1st Fort that had been constantly fending off attacks, the rest of the Forts had never been besieged before.

Within a month's time, the 3 strongest Forts had been crushed by the march of the Dino-army, giving a taste of the true might of their strength and terror.

The scary thing was that all the forces that had been attacking right now were the vassal forces. The actual Dino-Army had not yet made a move.

Thinking about this, the soldiers within the Xue Luo Forts could not help but tremble.

Under such immense pressure, the other generals had no choice and submitted their resignation to Han Qiong.

Chapter 911: Yue Zhong arrives!

If it were in normal peace times, if the 6 generals were to tender their resignation, Han Qiong would definitely be overjoyed. It would allow Yue Zhong to put his trusted aides into the armies.

However, at this critical moment, the resignation of the 6 of them caused Han Qiong to be vexed. However, after clarifying with Yue Zhong, she relented.

If they were forced to stay, who knew what they might do during a crisis. It would be better to let those without the will to fight, leave.

Due to their departure, it caused a wave among their subordinates, and many commanders who were not willing to risk their lives immediately followed their example.

If it were Wei Ming Qing, these people would not have dared to be this audacious. However, since they had just recently pledged themselves to Yue Zhong, their loyalty was not set in stone yet. Yue Zhong was helpless, but he had to let them leave.

Due to the sudden departure of so many military commanders, many people within the forts were shaken.

It was at this moment that Han Qiong swiftly inserted the people she brought over from the Storm Battleship, into the armies.

These commanders from the Storm Battleship were all slaves in the past, in order to change their lives, they had fought with all their might, unafraid of death. They even had an intimidating aura.

With the appointment of these commanders, the soldiers slowly began to settle down.

When the troops were reorganized, Han Qiong followed Yue Zhong's orders and deployed them units by units to the frontline.

In this Xue Luo 20 Forts, only the 1st to 3rd Forts had experience battling against the other races. The rest of the forts would frequently send their soldiers out for experience as well, but compared to the 1st to 3rd Forts, they were truly lacking. Thus, they could not compare to the elites of the 1st three Forts. Even so, they were placed under training every day, familiarizing themselves with the various equipment and weapons.

When Zheng Yan He received the reinforcement troops from Han Qiong, he heaved a sigh of relief. He then sent his direct subordinates back to Han Qiong, firstly as a means of rest for them, second, it was to express his intentions for Han Qiong to hold them as hostages if she so wished.

He had been unwilling to take part in the conflict between men, thus he did not except Yue Zhong's offer to join him. He had always been about the big picture, and he knew that it was a time where they all had to cooperate. Without Yue Zhong's support, he and his soldiers would have died long ago. That was why he delivered his own troops over to Han Qiong, expressing his subservience.

In response, Yue Zhong threw even more into support, ordering Han Qiong to push even more logistics and reinforcements to the frontlines.

At the same time, the various production facilities were working overtime, repairing and building new automatic defense equipment, in preparation for the big battle.

The defense of the 1st Fort had been astonishing. According to the estimates of the upper echelons of Cloud Region, they had thought that it would take a million soldiers to break through it.

A million soldiers was a huge number to the Tyranno-Kingdom with the naturally small occurring population. After paying a huge price, they would then have no more energy or power to push through the 2nd Fort. Hence, although the rest of the Forts had

their own self-defense systems, they were incomparable to the importance of the 1st to 3rd.

Zheng Yan He had now had ample forces, however, against the frenzied foreign races, the defenses of the other Forts were not as powerful as the 1st 3, hence, the subsequent Forts were being taken down in succession.

Each fort could only hold out for 3 days, there were some which could barely last a day before being breached.

After 25 days, the Xue Luo Forts, termed as infallible, had been largely destroyed, leaving behind the last and final, 20th Fort.

On the 25th day of battle, the foreign armies had lost 2 million soldiers, covering over 10 li, where numerous corpses could be seen along the way. The fresh blood had already dyed the entire plains a dark red.

As for the humans, Zheng Yan He had given his all to command the battle, yet, he had already lost 20,000 human soldiers. The destroyed Mech-Fighters had reached 30,000.

In front of the 20th Fort, a large number of Boar-Warriors were now surging towards the city wall. The Boar-Warriors and Pig-Warriors had a strong breeding ability, thus, they were the favorite cannon fodders of the Dino-Races.

In the skies, some hundreds of Cardinal-Warriors soared, attracting the firepower from the Fort.

The human soldiers on the city wall wielded their weapons and fired them alongside the automatic defenses at the enemy troops.

In the past battles, Zheng Yan He had tried to protect the human soldiers as much as he could. Thus, he would seldom deploy the soldiers to fight. However, the situation was different now. The 20th Fort was the final stand, they had no way of retreat. In order to defend the place, he had no choice but to activate the human troops.

The benefit of having human soldiers at the onset of battle was that they could help prevent the damage to their automated defenses. The disadvantage was that the casualty rate would then climb faster.

The humans and the vassal forces of the Dino-army clashed against each other. It was incredibly violent, with numerous soldiers losing their lives.

In a secret basement of the 20th Fort, the various commanders were in a meeting.

Ma Lei spoke, "What do we do? Seems like it's hard to defend the 20th Fort. I think we should prepare to retreat now and conserve some troops for Leader."

The 20th Fort had a tight defense as well as automated defenses. Even with 160,000 elites on standby, as well as the most advanced technologies, no one had the confidence to say that they could hold out.

This was because they had seen for themselves the terror of the Dino-army's vassal forces. Under the relentless counterattack by the soldiers in the past 19 Forts, there were already over 3 million of the enemy forces wiped out. And yet, they were still coming, as though there was no end to them. The ferocity of the siege caused a chill even in the sturdiest of hearts.

What was most demoralizing was that, other than some rare moments where the Dino-warriors would make a move, for the most part of this assault, the Dino-army had not yet made a move. They were watching the battle coldly, and that sort of pressure was extremely despairing.

Han Qiong's face turned cold, "This is already the last stand for the humans, how can we retreat? If we retreat, that would mean allowing those demons into Cloud Region. It would become a hunting ground for them here."

The 20th Fort was the final form of defense for the human population in Cloud Region. Once this was breached, all of Cloud Region would be exposed to the enemy.

In the hundreds of years, the human population had dumped a lot of resources into the 20 Forts and the construction of the palace. It was due to this investment that the 19 Forts could eradicate over 3 million enemies.

Inside Cloud Region, the defenses of the cities were considerably weaker. 2,000 ordinary Dino-Warriors could easily wipe out a city that had 200,000 humans.

If they allowed the Dino-warriors to enter Cloud Region, it would be a calamity.

Ma Lei continued stubbornly, "I feel that we should conserve our strength. Cloud Region is so vast if we retreat, the Dino-army definitely has to scatter. We can then make use of the advantage in terrain to wipe them out in skirmishes. If we stand guard here, once the fort is breached, there will not be any forces to stand against them,"

"Furthermore, our strength is almost spent here. Leader does not have our support at all, he must be having it tough." Ma Lei quickly added that sentence, before turning to Shao Yun, who had been silent, asking, "Shao Yun, what do you think?"

Ma Lei, Shao Yun, Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan were the most important 4 subordinates under Yue Zhong.

Shao Yun frowned and spoke out, "I feel we should consult Leader. If he wants us to defend, we will defend. If he wants us to retreat, we will retreat!"

Ma Lei furrowed his brows and sighed inwardly. He had hoped to retreat then report to Yue Zhong. At that time, he had hoped that by conserving some troops for Yue Zhong, he would not blame him.

Han Qiong nodded, "Fine. I'll report to Leader Yue Zhong."

"There's no need. I'm here."

At this moment, the door opened, and Yue Zhong walked in.

"Leader!!"

Following surprised and excited cheers, all the commanders stood up in the room, looking at Yue Zhong with gazes of joy.

Yue Zhong declared firmly, "We shall stand our ground for 20 days! We need to guard here, and not retreat in these 20 days!"

All of them immediately replied in unison, "Yes sir!"

Ma Lei immediately asked after, "Leader, why 20 days before retreating?"

Yue Zhong responded, "Because it will take 20 days for all the humans in Cloud Region to escape from here. In these 20 days, we must guard here with all our lives, and not allow the fort to fall!"

When the 20 Forts had been besieged, Yue Zhong had not stopped working, immediately setting plans for the humans from Cloud Region to migrate over to the 2nd World.

Due to the vast size of Cloud Region, while Yue Zhong's orders were being carried out, it would still take some time to evacuate all the humans throughout the region. 20 days was the absolute limit.

Chapter 912: The objective of the Type 7 Dino-Emperor!

Above the 20th Fort, Zheng Yan He was in a command center, watching the intense battle below, his eyes bloodshot.

The Dino-warriors had pushed the vassal forces to attack constantly without rest, while Zheng Yan He had been commanding the battle without resting himself. Although he was a Type 5 Divine Warrior, after so many days, even he was exhausted. However, he stood firm on the frontline to command.

After these few days, everyone had to admit that Zheng Yan He was truly an ingenious commander at defense. With his impeccable timing and strategic commands, they had been able to hold out for so long.

The fall of the 19 Forts was not because Zheng Yan He was not capable, but the enemies were too overbearing.

This time, it was a battle against the overlords of the land, with an unending number of soldiers. If it was not for the Mech-Fighters being utilized, the 200,000 human soldiers would have long been wiped out.

"Leader!!"

"Leader Yue Zhong is here!"

"Leader Yue Zhong!!

"..."

All of a sudden, cheers erupted from the human crowd.

"Yue Zhong?"

When Zheng Yan He heard this name, his eyebrows arched, and he turned towards the source of the commotion. He discovered a young man walking over, guarded by 20 Type 4 experts.

Zheng Yan He turned to the 2 Type 5 experts besides him, Wu Bao and Wei Wu, saying, "Old Wu, Old Wei, let's go over."

Wu Bao and Wu Wei might not surpass Zheng Yan He in terms of combat ability, but they were still peak experts. They wore Type 5 Battle Suits so that they can charge into joining the fray anytime they were required.

Wu Bao and Wei Wu both looked towards Yue Zhong with complicated gleams, before nodding and following Zheng Yan He.

Zheng Yan He eyed Yue Zhong, bowing respectfully, "Emperor Yue Zhong, I did not perform my duties properly and am guilty of this heavy offense, I plead for your mercy."

He knew that Yue Zhong held their lives and deaths in his palm now. If Yue Zhong were to revoke their military authority, they had no way of contesting it either. When he thought of how he had refused Yue Zhong previously, his heart sank. Should Yue Zhong be a narrow-minded person, then he would likely just kill them. It did not matter if he died, however, he did not want the 20th Fort to be conquered due to his death. That would result in the bloodshed of the entire Cloud Region.

Wu Bao and Wei Wu also stepped forward to bow, "Wu Bao (Wei Wu) begs for Your Majesty's mercy!"

Yue Zhong hurried to support them up, his face serious, "What offenses are you guys guilty of? If it wasn't for the effort of you Generals, the 20 Forts would have long since fallen. I'm still hoping for the 3 of you to continue and aid me in defending the Cloud Region, you're the last hope for our humankind!"

Zheng Yan He's heart relaxed, as he swore a promise to Yue Zhong, "Thank you, Your Majesty!! Your subordinate will definitely defend this fort until my death! As long as the fort stands, I will stay! If the fort falls, I shall die together with it!"

Yue Zhong continued, "Let Zheng Yan He handle this. I've

brought 20,000 Mech-Fighters with me, 250,000 engineering robots, a hundred energy cannons, a hundred heavy assault helicopters, 80 Reapers, 300 Laser Gun-mounted vehicles, a 1,000 heavy tanks, as well as 2,000 City Guards. With such a force, are you able to hold out for 20 days?"

This time, Yue Zhong had sent out a large number of equipment and weapons to the 20th Fort, preparing for this crucial battle.

In this battle, Yue Zhong was clear that with the present strength of the humans in Cloud Region, they will definitely fail. However, he hopes to borrow the 20 Forts to wear down the vassal forces, buying more time for the humans of Cloud Region.

Zheng Yan He was moved, as he responded, "Your subordinate will guard this place for the next 20 days!"

The might of the armored unit that Yue Zhong brought was astonishing. If it were unleashed in Cloud Region, no single faction would be able to defend themselves. The fact that Yue Zhong was dedicating so many resources to the Forts defenses caused Zheng Yan He to be moved.

Yue Zhong then saluted Zheng Yan Ha and spoke, "Then I'll hand over the command to you! I will be on the frontlines as a soldier! It's up to you now!"

He knew that his experience in commanding troops was not sufficient. At the same time, he was not well versed in the Fort defenses. As the matter concerned the lives and deaths of over 180,000 human soldiers, he chose to pass the authority to someone with experience.

A look of shock and emotions welled up in Zheng Yan He's eyes, "Your Majesty!! I will not let you down!"

Wu Bao and Wei Wu also had emotional looks. After all, in the past, the emperors had seldom appeared on the battlefield.

And yet, Yue Zhong was already the Emperor that Cloud Region

recognized, he was still willing to fight on the frontlines. This bolstered their emotions and morale.

Yue Zhong chuckled, before taking up his Electromagnetic Cannon and walked out.

"Leader Yue Zhong!!"

"It's Sir Yue Zhong!!"

"Leader Yue Zhong is about to join us in battle!"

"His Majesty! His Majesty is actually fighting alongside us!!"

"..."

Many people knew of Yue Zhong's identity and status, and instantly, the entire Fort erupted in cheers. The morale shot through the roof. With Yue Zhong personally leading the frontlines, it meant that Cloud Region had no plans to abandon or give up on them.

Wu Bao eyed him and commented softly, "Seems like it's not bad that he became the new ruler of Cloud Region."

Wei Wu roared out with laughter, pulling out his own Electromagnetic Cannon and darted forwards into the battlefield, firing at the enemy soldiers, "Old Wu! We can't call him that anymore!! He's the Emperor now!! Fighting for this Emperor is truly an honor! An honor for all of Cloud Region!! Haha!! Seeing him, even I can't help but want to slaughter more foreign dogs!! I'm heading off!!"

In the palace of the Tyranno-Kingdom, a huge shadow in the darkness suddenly opened its eyes. A bright gleam appeared, as though capable of slicing through the earth itself.

"It's here!! He's finally appeared!! That is the God and Devil Imprint!! He's a Type 5 Divine Warrior!! Great!! Great!! He must already have a God-Devil Nucleus!! I must kill him!! He's mine!!! Once I absorb his strength, I can break through and become a Type

8 Divine Warrior!!"

With that, a powerful strength burst out from the area, as the huge shadow got up, the shockwave spreading outwards.

Within the Capital, many experts quickly kneeled and trembled when they felt the shockwave.

In one corner, Type 6 Tyranno-Queen Agu Xi was affected by the shockwave as well. Her face turned pale, as she trembled slightly, as though she could not move, "Strong!! Is that the might of the Type 7 Dino-Emperor?! He's truly terrifying!! Just the pressure was enough to suppress 30% of my strength!! Fearsome!!"

A powerful sound reverberated across the entire kingdom, "Convey my orders!! Everyone is to charge for the Fort!"

At the next moment, there was a loud explosion, as a huge hole appeared in the palace, while a dark light shot out from within, traveling towards the distance.

Agu Xi glanced at the speed of the black shadow in the skies, her eyes flashing with envy, "The Type 7 Dino-Emperor already possesses the ability to control the energy of heaven and earth. Even if he's not a winged-type, he can already travel through the air. The legends were true, it seems. Once we evolve to the Type 7 realm, we'll not be bound to the land."

As a Type 6 Tyranno-King, Agu Xi was already near invincible, no one was a match for her. However, she had one regret, which was that she could not fly. Each time she came across an airborne enemy, she could only watch them fly away.

With the orders of the Type 7 Dino-Emperor, the majority of the Dino-army forces began to launch an assault towards the direction of the Xue Luo Fort.

From the skies, the countless dino-warriors were like ants, a line that stretched for over a hundred li, as they made for the Fort.

Most of the Dino-Races were warriors. It was just an issue of how

strong they were. Most of the weaker male Dino-Warriors were at least at the Type 3 stage, while the female ones might not necessarily be stronger, but made up for it with their viciousness and ferocity.

It was because of their savage nature that everyone was a warrior, and thus, they could all fight, and completely suppress humankind, preventing the technologically advanced humans from stepping out of Cloud Region.

At the same time, they did not mind cannibalism in times of hunger. They were willing to consume the corpses of their comrades. With their various vassal forces, there was the support of rations, as well as the nourishment of the Blood Honey. This was how their backend support was much solid compared to the humans.

On the 20th Fort, Yue Zhong was firing constantly with his Electromagnetic Cannon, easily blasting off the heads of over 20 Boar-Warriors in the span of a breath. All of a sudden, his brows furrowed, as he felt an impending sense of crisis.

"What's going on? Why do I feel like something bad's about to happen?"

He looked towards the distance, and could not tell the source of his rising sense of unease.

Chapter 913: Coercion!

After 2 days, the entire area in front of the 20th Fort was littered with the corpses of the foreign races. Many of these soldiers had not even matured and were already thrown into battle, dying miserably in front of the fort.

For the sake of this war, the dozens of Dino-Kingdoms had activated their vassal forces, throwing them all into the fight. Just the numbers that had reached the battlefield alone already reached more than 5 million.

Right now, along the way towards the 20th Fort, there were piles and heaps of corpses and dismembered limbs.

300 Type 4 Mutant Beasts, a vast number of Pterosaurs, Velociraptors, as well other Mutant Beasts were devouring these corpses.

These vassal forces were the best mobile rations, after their deaths, not only would consumption go down, their blood could be collected to become Blood Honey, while their corpses could become food for the other Mutant Beasts behind them.

When the members of the vassal forces saw such a cruel scene, their faces were pale, yet they did not dare to say anything. Their strength was too weak compared to the Tyranno-Kingdom. Furthermore, these vassal forces did not have the technology nor the Forts as defenses. If they betrayed the Tyranno-Kingdom, there was only death for them. A single Type 6 Tyranno-King was enough to wipe out an entire race.

Far away from the Fort, Agu Ya stared at the Black Lizard-warrior corpses from the laser beams, no change in expression.

Beside him, the rest of the Black Lizard-Warriors were pale, their eyes filled with pain. They were an elite troop, and yet, barely after a day, they had already lost 20,000 of their people. The humans, on

the other hand, suffered little casualties. However, Agu Ya did not give the command to retreat, and the Black Lizard-Warriors did not dare say anything.

Agu Ya eyed the 20th Fort, his eyes flashing with heat, "We have lost another 400,000 soldiers in these 2 days. We still have 1.6 million troops. This assault can continue for 8 days. By then, the reinforcements will arrive. This last stand of the humans will definitely fall this time!"

The Xue Luo 20 Forts had withstood the attacks of the Tyranno-Kingdom for years, if it wasn't for them, with the strength of the kingdom, all the humans in Cloud Region would have been slaughtered.

All of a sudden, a black shadow shot through the skies like a shooting star, landing in the Dino-Army camp. A powerful aura gushed out, enveloping the entire area.

Under the pressure of that terrifying aura, everyone present within the camp trembled.

"It's His Majesty, Emperor Ba Long!"

Agu Ya was shocked, and immediately brought all his Mid-Grade Dino-Generals as well as the Type 5 experts to the center of the camp.

"We greet Your Majesty, Emperor Ba Long!"

Agu Ya got down on one knee, declaring with reverence.

"We greet Your Majesty, Emperor Ba Long"

The rest of the subjects also got down on their knees, enveloped by that overwhelming pressure. They did not dare to even look up as they welcomed him with fear and respect.

Emperor Ba Long ordered coldly, "Get up. Agu Ya. I want you to disregard everything and take down that 20th Fort within 7 days."

Agu Ya was shocked as he exclaimed, "Your Majesty, why the

hurry? With our strength, we will just need a month at most. We will be able to take down the Xue Luo Fort. We will not suffer so many casualties as well! If we have to throw all we have within the 7 days, we will lose many of our elites."

The Dino-warriors were making use of the vassals as cannon fodder as well as a means to chip away at the defenses of the humans. Like this, they would not lose their own elites. If they had to take down the last fort within the next 7 days, he would have to deploy the elites of the Dino-Warriors. They would be able to take down the Fort but at a high cost.

"Are you questioning my order?"

Following that icy tone, a powerful killing intent erupted and enveloped Agu Ya, while Emperor Ba Long's gaze fell upon Agu Ya like swords.

Agu Ya immediately replied with his back in cold sweat when he sensed that killing intent, "No! Your subject does not dare!"

A Type 7 Dino-Emperor was very different from a Type 6 Dino-King. Among the Dino-warriors, the Type 7 Dino-Emperor was a god-like existence. If Emperor Ba Long gave the order to kill Agu Ya on the spot, no one would stand up for him.

Emperor Ba Long declared coldly, "Good! You shall lead the charge and atone for your sins! If you can bring the person with the gold imprint in front of me, I will help you become a Type 7 Divine Warrior. After hundreds of years, you will become like us!"

The cold sweat behind Agu Ya finally stopped, as he gritted his teeth to reply, "Yes! Your Majesty!"

Agu Ya was extremely clear, that if he failed to deliver within 7 days, all that awaited him was death.

After leaving the central camp, Agu Ya turned to the leaders of the vassal forces, speaking coldly, "You heard it. Within 7 days, if we don't take down the Xue Luo Fort, and you guys are still alive,

then your race will all be annihilated."

One of the Tiger-Warriors replied solemnly, "Understood! We will definitely give it our all!"

The rest of the leaders also revealed expressions of desperation. For the sake of their own races, they had to risk it all.

Under the coercion of Emperor Ba Long, the style of battle changed radically, becoming more intense. Foreign warriors were now surging forwards without a care for their own lives. They were no longer as dispersed as before, instead, charging at the Fort in dense numbers.

The energy cannons within the Xue Luo Fort fired out without stopping. A number of energy bombs landed on the foreign races, blasting large zones of them into oblivion.

Those that managed to make it past the explosions were then met with laser beams, turning them into sieves.

Even so, the soldiers did not relent, continuing to surge forwards in droves like unending ants.

In the skies, the aerial soldiers had increased by 10 times, with over thousands of airborne soldiers now assaulting the fort.

The human soldiers stationed with the Mech-Fighters were pierced by the incoming arrows, as they fell in pools of their own blood.

The Mech-Fighters started to break apart in explosions, or their lines and cables were destroyed, stopping all movement.

Inside Xue Luo Fort, a number of anti-air laser cannons were fired out, blasting apart the Winged Races under the command of Bai Yi.

At that moment when all these were going on, all the Type 4 and Type 5 experts that had been biding their time suddenly attacked.

One particular Type 5 Blue Lizard Leader's body darted forwards.

With a wave of his hand, countless wind blades burst out from a distance of 5 km, slicing at the Fort.

Due to those wind blades, a number of self-defense mechanisms were wrecked.

One 6m-tall Type 5 Bear-Warrior roared out in fury, raising a huge boulder of hundreds of tonnes. He swung it madly, sending it soaring towards the fort like a shooting star.

Faced with that attack, a number of guided energy missiles shot out to slam into the boulder, blasting it apart.

One Type 5 Eagle-Warrior who had sharp eyes soared into the skies. He raised his bow and fixed his aim upon the various fire points atop the city wall, and began firing nonstop.

Within one bunker, there were 2 human soldiers stationed inside, controlling an Electromagnetic Cannon to fire at the foreign races below.

Suddenly, an arrow burst down into the bunker, directly piercing the cannon. At the next moment, 2 other arrows shot right into the skulls of those 2 human soldiers, blood splattering everywhere.

All the Type 5 experts had been mobilized since they had been conserving their strength, they would able to burst forth with ferocious intensity. However, they were now forced to slaughter these humans within a time period, thus, they did not hold back and went all out.

Other than those Type 5 experts, a number of Type 3 Diplodocuses were also flinging stones with vigor towards the Fort, destroying the automatic defenses.

"What's going on?" On top of the Fort, Yue Zhong looked out at the mad rush of the foreign races and he frowned.

Although the frenzied charge of the foreign races had sped up their deaths, the defenses of the last Xue Luo Fort was also being chipped away. At the same time, due to the Type 5 experts making

a move, the casualties of the human soldiers were rising.

The intense and bloody battle went on for an entire hour. Under the relentless assault of the Type 5 experts from the foreign races, over 300 human soldiers had died.

When Yue Zhong heard the report of the casualty rates, a dark look came over his face, "No, we can't go on like this."

Chapter 914: The Terror of a High-Grade Dino-General!

Yue Zhong gave an order to Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, get rid of those Type 5 Enhancers!"

If they did not take care of the Type 5 experts, the entire troop in the Fort would be slowly killed, and the 180,000-strong army would not last a few days.

Bai Yi's eyes turned to data and numbers, as she made some calculations, "Yes! Choosing the most threatening targets automatically."

All of a sudden, multiple laser beams shot out from the Fort, forming a dense rain that swept into the distance.

The Type 5 Bear-Warrior that could toss the boulder of hundreds of tonnes quickly dashed away, retreating with explosive speed. However, in the end, he did not manage to outrun the laser beams.

At the point of contact, the Type 5 Bear-Warrior bellowed in rage, as a powerful Radiance of Light appeared, blocking in front of him.

The lasers that could pierce through armored vehicles like they were nothing slammed into Radiance of Light, causing ripples.

However, after blocking a few hundred beams, the Radiance of Light collapsed. The multiple beams tore into the skin of the Type 5 Bear-Warrior, penetrating his body, leaving it full of bloody holes.

After dealing with the Type 5 Bear-Warrior, the cluster of Prism Laser Cannons behind the fort wall adjusted their aims under Bai Yi's control. They then began to lock onto the Type 5 Green Lizard-Warrior that could control Wind Blades.

A large group of laser beams fired out, directly tearing through

the Type 5 Lizard-Warrior, as he slumped to the ground lifelessly.

The Prism Laser Cannons then continued to take out the various Type 5 experts. However, the airborne enemy troops also attacked the Prism Laser Cannons, taking them out one by one.

These Prism Laser Cannons were specifically used to deal with the Type 5 and Type 6 Warriors, it was the reason those Type 5 experts did not dare be unbridled.

The Type 5 experts of the vassal forces were being killed by the Prism Laser Cannons consistently, while the airborne races were met with the electromagnetic cannons.

In the midst of all that, the Prism Laser Cannons were being damaged by the airborne vassal forces, their efficiency being cut down constantly.

If the Prism Laser Cannons were able to unleash their firepower without interruption, they would be able to kill a Type 5 expert in a single hit. If they were just firing blindly it would not be as effective.

The cruel battle continued for a long while, without any pause. The enemy forces continued to surge forward to the Fort, before being reduced to corpses.

Countless enemy foreign soldiers were killed in the relentless firepower. Their corpses began to pile up, forming mounds, allowing the soldiers behind to ascend them to continue the attack on the fort.

In order to deal with those mounds that were quickly turning into some grotesque pathway to the top of the fort, the fort would fire out napalms from time to time. The blaze would consume the dead soldiers, reducing them to ash.

About 500m away from the fort, there could be multiple piles of charred bones, while black smoke rose everywhere, emitting a putrid stench.

The area in front of the fort was like a slaughterhouse, with the frenzied and ferocious foreign races being killed.

The battle waged on for an entire day, even in the dark of the night, the foreign races continued to charge forwards without rest, assaulting the fort without any care for their own lives.

Flares were shot into the sky, illuminating the night sky, and countless lasers instantly blast out at the enemy forces, eradicating another wave.

This was the pattern that lasted for an entire 3 days and 3 nights, and the total number of dead foreign soldiers outside the fort numbered over a million.

However, the assault of the foreign races was truly intense, forcing the energy cannons within the Fort to fire almost without stop. Under that sort of output, the cannons began to fail.

Those Prism Laser Cannons that could instantly wipe out a Type 5 Divine Warrior were also failing, with $\frac{2}{3}$ of them totally destroyed. Within the Fort, the casualty rate of the human soldiers had reached 5,000. They had also lost 80,000 of their Mech Fighters.

Early the next morning, a number of soldiers were walking out of their covers with faces of exhaustion, while new soldiers took over them.

In a battle of life-and-death, it was easy to wear a person out. Even the most elite of soldiers would not be able to battle constantly without rest. In fact, most of them were lacking any semblance to their usual selves. Not only were they physically fatigued, they were mentally drained.

"They're here! The Dino-Warriors are attacking!!"

Suddenly, there were shouts of alarm.

Atop the city wall, Yue Zhong eyed the Tyranno-Warriors charging towards the Fort at the speed of sound, his brows

furrowing, "The Dino-Warriors! Are they finally sending out their elites?"

This time, among the 20,000 Lizard-Warriors, there were 4,000 Tyranno-Warriors mixed in.

The 4,000 Tyranno-Warriors were charging forward with all their might, their speed reaching the sound barrier. It was like a thousand Fighter Jets shooting for the Fort.

Facing these Tyranno-Warriors with terrifying speed, the soldiers within the Xue Luo Fort began to attack crazily.

Although there would be some Tyranno-Warriors that got killed by the barrage of laser and electromagnetic beams, over thousands of them managed to get past and got close to the wall.

Yue Zhong dashed forward, aiming at the Tyranno-Warriors with his Electromagnetic Cannons. His shots caused many of the Type 4 Tyranno-Warriors to be instantly killed by a blast to their heads.

2,000 Xue Luo Guards with their Type 3 Battle Suits came up to the wall as well, firing their weapons down at the Tyranno-Warriors. Many of the intact self-defense weapons adjusted their aim towards the Tyranno-Warriors.

Buffeted by the beams, many Tyranno-Warriors were shot full of holes.

However, the combat ability of these Tyranno-Warriors was superior to most other Type 4 experts. With a flash of their bodies, they quickly scaled up the fort as agile as the Lizard-Warriors. They came up to the automated defenses and crushed them with their bare hands.

These Tyranno-Warriors were stronger than most other foreign races. As they leaped up the fort, most of the automated defense systems stood no chance.

suddenly leaped out from the midst of the Tyranno-Warriors, breaching into the Xue Luo Fort.

These Tyranno-Generals were incredibly vicious, the moment one of them landed among the Xue Luo Guards, he charged right into their mist, his right fist slamming into their heads.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

With loud sounds of bone cracking, the heads of those Xue Luo Guards burst apart like watermelons.

The Mid-Grade Tyranno-Generals cut through the troops in all directions, everywhere their blade fell, the heads of countless Xue Luo Guards would roll.

"Go to hell! Beast!!"

Following roars of rage, 10 Type 4 Iron-Blood Warriors charged towards one Mid-Grade Tyranno-General with bloodshot eyes.

The eyes of the Mid-Grade Tyranno-General flashed with a fierce glint. His body disappeared, and he reappeared outside of the encirclement. At the next moment, the heads of the 10 Type 4 Iron-Blood Warriors split apart in showers of blood, while he did not even suffer the slightest bit of injury.

Facing these terrifying Tyranno-Generals, more Prism Laser Cannons rose out from the Fort, firing at the Tyranno-Generals with no mercy.

As the laser beams blasted out, a number of Xue Luo Guard elites that were engaged with the Tyranno-General were all killed together.

It was only under such shots that did not distinguish friend or foe that could swiftly take out a Type 5 Tyranno-General.

Within the barrage of laser beams, a 3m-tall figure suddenly glowed with a dark energy shield. He turned into a flash of light that burst through the beams, which caused ripples in his shield

but not truly damaging him.

This particular figure was the Type 6 Tyranno-King Agu Ya, who had been forced to the edge. The black box in his hands was a prehistoric tech from the humans of the past, that allowed the user to be covered in a powerful energy shield, powered by a Type 6 Nucleus. It was with this treasure that the energy shield could withstand the laser beams.

In a breath's time, Agu Ya had appeared among the Prism Laser Cannons. He pulled out a 4m-large bone ax, and began to unleash hell to the equipment.

Crash! Shatter!

With the loud sounds of destruction, many of the Prism Laser Cannons were destroyed by Agu Ya.

He did not seem to stop in his movements at all, continuing his rampage on the weapons around him. Just him alone was equivalent to the might of an entire army. One by one, the Prism Laser Cannons were reduced to rubble quickly.

The might of their attacks thus became weaker, less threatening to Agu Ya over time.

On the fort, countless automated weapons appeared, aiming for Agu Ya under the control of Bai Yi.

Chapter 915: Battling Agu Ya!

Agu Ya continued to wreak havoc amongst the Prism Laser Cannons. As he rampaged, from time to time, there would be laser and electromagnetic beams that blasted at him, only to be blocked by that layer of black energy shield.

On this Xue Luo Fort, Agu Ya was a one-man army, seemingly invincible. Numerous Mech-Fighters came up to block him under Bai Yi's controls, only to be smashed into pieces.

Inside the command center, Zheng Yan He's heart turned cold, "He is a Type 6 High-Grade Dino-General."

Hearing this, everyone inside the center turned pale.

A Type 5 Dino-General was already an invincible existence in close combat, therefore, the appearance of a Type 6 Dino-General was equivalent to a calamity.

The 1st Fort had been breached by a Type 6 Dino-General before. At that time, the entire 1st Fort had been detonated, causing everyone within to die, only then were they able to eliminate that Type 6 Dino-General.

The final Xue Luo Fort was the only defense standing between the enemies and Cloud Region. Once it was destroyed, Cloud Region would be exposed.

Zheng Yan He turned to the 20 Iron-Blood Warriors behind him who were wearing Type 5 Battle Suits, and bowed deeply, "Now, I can only count on you guys, General Lin Lie. I'll leave it to you guys."

The general of the Iron-Blood Warriors, Lin Lie, replied solemnly, "Great General, the military's task has always been to protect the country. This is what we should do."

The other 19 Iron-Blood Warriors also had resolute gazes.

"Great General, Your Majesty Yue Zhong, we're off!"

Lin Lie looked towards Yue Zhong and Zheng Yan He, bowing deeply, before pulling out the Scarlet Dragon Pill that could cause a human to employ their fullest potential, and swallowed it.

The rest of them also did the same.

Yue Zhong sighed.

The Scarlet Dragon Pill could channel the latent potential of humans, pushing their prowess to a Type 5 realm from the Type 4 realm. Their physique would also be enhanced several times. However, it was not long-lasting, furthermore, once used, the user will become a monster. After the effects have passed, the user would pass away as a freak.

The 20 Iron-Blood Warriors knew this outcome and yet chose to proceed with their sacrifice.

It was because of people like them, who were not afraid of sacrificing themselves for the sake of their fellow people, that the humans were able to survive these hundreds of years.

Compared to them, Wei Ming Qing was trash. In order to break through, he had chosen to sacrifice millions of his fellow people. He was nothing compared to these courageous warriors.

After consuming those pills, Lin Lie' eyes flashed with hope as he bowed deeply, "General, Your Majesty, after our deaths. I hope that we can be cremated, and buried with our comrades. We would appreciate passing like our fellow humans."

After swallowing the pills, when Lin Lie and the rest died, their bodies would still be in the grotesque state. This was the price for gaining a strength through a shortcut. They were not afraid of death but feared the lack of recognition from their comrades.

Yue Zhong nodded solemnly, "Of course!! As long as I'm alive, I will definitely set out to finish your wishes."

Lin Lie looked at Yue Zhong with gratitude and quickly led his 19 comrades to the city wall, "Thank you, Your Majesty!"

By the time they reached the wall, the 20 of them had already turned into 3m-tall freaks, their veins bulging and fangs coming out of their mouths. Their bodies were covered in scales, and their nails had turned to claws.

Yue Zhong looked at them, his eyes flashing with a complicated gaze. He turned and disappeared from his location.

"Kill him!!"

Lin Lie roared out in rage, pointing at Agu Ya in the distance. The Type 5 Battle Suit glowed, and all the power converged in his body, allowing him to take a half-step into the Type 6 realm.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!!"

The other 19 Iron-Blood Warriors roared out in response, their eyes flashing with bloodlust. They turned into beams of light that shot towards the Type 6 Agu Ya.

Crack!

Just as Agu Ya destroyed the last Prism Laser Cannon, the black box in his hands also cracked and disintegrated. The precious Type 6 Nucleus was still intact.

Due to problems with the production, the black box could not fully absorb the power of the Type 6 Nucleus.

Every defensive treasure had their limitations. The black box in Agu Ya's hands was no different, after absorbing so many hits, it finally crumbled.

"It reached its limits already? Forget it, I've already dealt with the Prism Laser Cannons. Now, let me take my time with this Fort."

Agu Ya eyed the black box, before keeping the Type 6 Nucleus. He eyed the 20 human soldiers charging at him, revealing a savage smile, "Bunch of fools, here to seek death!"

With a tap of his foot, Agu Ya disappeared from his location. He then appeared right in front of one Iron-Blood Warrior. His fist came swinging out with the pressure of Mount Tai towards the soldier.

At that instant, the Iron-Blood Warrior who was wearing a Type 5 Battle Suit had a huge hole in his chest. His heart was crushed, in the end, this half-step Type 6 Iron-Blood Warrior was not a match for Agu Ya.

"Chains!!"

One other Iron-Blood Warrior roared with rage, his eyes so red that blood seemed ready to spurt out. A powerful psychic chain wrapped around Agu Ya, binding him.

"Sink!"

Another Iron-Blood Warrior bellowed in rage, at that instant, both he and Agu Ya felt the gravity increase by a hundred times, forcing both of them down.

After chaining Agu Ya, 8 Iron-Blood Warriors charged forth with their Battle Spears. They thrust out madly, and that strike was enough to injure a Type 6 expert heavily.

This was a strike that they put their all into. An initial Type 6 expert would be killed instantly.

"Idiots!! You humans are too weak!!"

Agu Ya laughed maniacally before his arms flung out with force. The intangible psychic chains immediately broke apart, causing a backlash to the Iron-Blood Warrior, whose face turned pale and his eyes flashed with astonishment.

After shaking off the psychic chains, Agu Ya tapped his foot and charged right for the 8 Iron-Blood Warriors like a cannonball, his fists slamming into them.

In an instant, the bodies of the Iron-Blood Warriors burst apart

violently.

Agu Ya was, after all, a peak Type 6 expert, even some Type 7 Divine Warriors who were not strong with close quarter combat might be torn apart by him. As for these human Iron-Blood Warriors, no matter how much enhancements they got, it was far from enough.

At the moment when the 8 Iron-Blood Warriors were annihilated, a few beams of white light had locked onto the region where Agu Ya was at.

"Not good, it's a guided Energy Missile!!"

Agu Ya's face fell, and could not care about the remaining Iron-Blood Warriors. With a tap of his foot, he leaped high into the skies, trying his best to charge into the inner part of the Fort. At the same time, his body was covered with a bright Radiance of Life. Like this, unless the entire Fort was detonated, he would not be badly affected.

Hong!

Just as Agu Ya leaped up, the section of the city wall exploded, and the powerful blast consumed the area, while the resulting shockwave spread out.

Agu Ya's reaction had been extremely quick, escaping the center of the blast radius. However, he was still besieged by the shockwaves, his Radiance of Life dimming greatly.

Right at that moment, 6 Reapers flew out, their weapons hatch flapping open as they pulled out long alloy blades and shot right for him.

"Fool! Did you think I was unprepared?"

Agu Ya laughed coldly, adjusting the bone ax in his hands. A powerful flame shot out from the end of the ax, propelling him towards one of the Reapers.

As he appeared in front of the Reaper, he suddenly felt an intense sense of crisis. He raised his both arms in front, and the Radiance of Life poured out once more, blocking in front of him.

Hong!!

The Reaper exploded out with a terrifying blast, and the resulting shockwave enveloped Agu Ya entirely.

Bai Yi had already calculated that a Reaper was not a match for the Type 6 Agu Ya, the only way to hurt or possibly kill it would be to detonate itself.

When the light faded and the dust cleared, Agu Ya emerged from the aftermath.

Currently, his Radiance of Life had disappeared, while his body was riddled with injuries. His both arms were flopping at the side, apparently having suffered serious damage. There was a trickle of blood at the corner of his mouth.

He stood in mid-air, bellowing furiously, "You guys dare to injure me?! I will kill you all!! I will kill you all!!"

At this moment, an electromagnetic beam shot out suddenly.

He was unable to defend himself at that moment, and the beam slammed into his right shoulder, blowing out a huge bloody hole.

Agu Ya's body trembled, the ax in his hands burst out in flames once more, sending him towards the ground.

In the air, Agu Ya's movement depended entirely on the bone ax in his arms. His speed could not be fast. However, on the ground, he would be able to burst out with an incredible speed.

Just as the ax fired out the beam of fire, multiple electromagnetic beams fired out from below.

Chapter 916: Killing Agu Ya!

Facing the countless assault from below, Agu Ya's left hand reached out and coalesced the Radiance of Life in front of him. As the beams struck the shield, they caused ripples but were ultimately unable to penetrate.

A type 6 Divine Warrior would be able to control the Radiance of Life freely in all sorts of combat situations. The electromagnetic beams were also not at a level where they could injure him.

The automatic weapons that were suppressing the foreign soldiers outside the wall were now focusing fire on Agu Ya under Bai Yi's control, blasting him with all they got.

After forcefully withstanding goodness knows how many attacks, Agu Ya finally landed on the ground with a pale face, spitting out a large mouthful of blood. The Radiance of Life around his left hand had already collapsed.

When the Radiance of Life on Agu Ya's left hand flickered out, Yue Zhong appeared behind him noiselessly with the help of the Third Order Stealth. He sent a powerful punch at Agu Ya's body, enhanced by the Dark Dou Qi.

Agu Ya's body was incredibly tough, even more so than alloy metal. Under that blow, he was sent flying out like thunder. However, his reaction had been incredibly quick, as his tail swung up with lightning speed and smashed into Yue Zhong barely a millisecond after taking Yue Zhong's hit.

Crack!

A huge hole appeared in the Type 5 Battle Suit on Yue Zhong, the immense force causing a few of his bones to fracture. He was also sent flying dozens of meters while spitting out a mouthful of blood.

From afar, a number of laser-mounted vehicles quickly adjusted their aim and fired at Agu Ya.

Agu Ya also spat out blood, his Radiance of Life shining in front of him, forcefully blocking the beams.

The life force of a Type 6 expert was truly abundant, within a short span of time, it is hard for the electromagnetic beams to penetrate it.

If it had been any Type 5 expert, they might be able to summon the Radiance of Life to block, but it would be effective only for a short while. Once the Radiance of Life was broken through, they would then be pierced by the beams.

Yue Zhong slammed hard into a wall, spitting another mouthful of blood. His organs were jolted, as the intense pain nearly sent him unconscious. If it was not for his Third Order Body of Steel, that earlier strike from Agu Ya could have broken him in two.

He bit down hard on his tongue, and the pain kept him awake. He saw the Radiance of Life enveloping Agu Ya's right hand. Channeling his own Devil Flame, a powerful scarlet arrow coalesced, and it shot through the air instantaneously, slamming into the Radiance of Life.

As the Devil Flames burst out, the Radiance of Life was broken through and started to burn away.

At the moment it collapsed, the Devil Flame punched through and enveloped Agu Ya.

"Ah!!!"

Agu Ya immediately screamed out in agony, thrashing about violently, yet he did not die immediately.

The electromagnetic beams and laser beams continued to slam into his body, resulting in many holes. With a bright flash, his body was soon turned to ash under the intense blaze of the Devil Flames.

With Agu Ya's death, a huge amount of Life Force came out of his body, before being absorbed into Yue Zhong through the God and

Devil Imprint. It swirled around the gold God-Devil Nucleus, nourishing it and causing it to grow even larger.

Some light-gold energy flowed out of the nucleus, spreading through his 4 limbs, enhancing his body.

"Congratulations, your Body of Steel has reached the Fourth Order."

"Congratulations, you have gained +40 in all attributes."

"Congratulations, you have gained 6 skill points to be allocated."

The sweet notifications rang out, and Yue Zhong knew that he had evolved once more. He quickly assigned 5 skill points into the Dark Dou Qi, pushing it to the Fifth Order.

Some light-gold energy flow converged on the bronze rune representing the Dark Dou Qi skill in his mind, and as the gold energy wrapped around the rune, some silverish and profound engravings appeared on the runes.

Yue Zhong quickly channeled the Dark Dou Qi to his injuries, and his bones started producing cracking sounds, as they began healing rapidly.

Within 5 minutes, Yue Zhong's wounds had recovered with the help of the Dark Dou Qi and Regeneration skills.

He then stood up swiftly and started stretching, discovering that he was in tip-top condition, "My recovery abilities are on par with a Type 4 Mutant Beast. In terms of combat strength, while I'm still slightly off from the Type 6 realm, I'm at least at the peak of Type 5."

"Oh! This is Type 6 Nucleus, nice!"

Yue Zhong suppressed his joy and swiftly kept the Type 6 Nucleus into his ring, before charging back towards the wall.

Although Agu Ya had been killed by Yue Zhong and Bai Yi joining hands, he had managed to destroy the cluster of Prism Laser

Cannons.

At the same time, in order to kill this Agu Ya, Bai Yi had to redirect most of the firepower, allowing the other elites of the foreign races to approach the fort.

Zheng Yan He deployed 10,000 soldiers into the battle, and both sides got embroiled in a cruel slaughter.

The human soldiers had the advantage of technologically advanced weapons, while they were not a match for the Tyranno-Warriors which were natural close quarter combat specialists.

A dozen Tyranno-Warriors charged into the human army and began to slaughter human soldiers. Their bodies darted across the battlefield, everywhere they went, fresh blood would splatter amidst dismembered limbs, and the human soldiers were basically helpless.

However, the remaining Iron-Blood Warriors that had consumed the Scarlet Dragon Pills and not joined the battle at the fort quickly dashed forward to meet the Tyranno-Warriors and elites from the foreign races.

When they were facing Agu Ya, they had been helpless. However, with their half-step Type 6 Realm, they were truly able to fend off the elites of the foreign races.

At this time, a number of heavy assault helicopters rose into the skies, releasing energy bombs and cluster bombs over the foreign armies.

White light, flames, and dust rose into the skies, enveloping the entire area. Tens of thousands of soldiers died under the bombardment from the assault helicopters.

All of a sudden, numerous Type 3 and Type 4 Pterosaurs flew into the air, heading for the assault helicopters.

Some of those that flew too far ahead was pounced on by the Type 4 Pterosaurs. The rotating blades were all knocked askew,

and they shuddered in mid-air before plunging towards the ground, exploding in a ball of flames.

In response, the heavy assault helicopters began to fire at those Type 4 Pterosaurs, the guided energy missiles exploding upon contact. It resulted in huge, bloody holes, and the Pterosaurs squawked as they fell to their deaths.

Due to the absence of the Prism Laser Cannons, the heavy assault helicopters had no choice but to retreat while attacking, back into the range of the anti-air defenses. However, the Type 3 and Type 4 Pterosaurs did not seem to mind their own lives, chasing after them and perishing together with the destruction of the helicopters.

In the skies, an entire flock of Pterosaurs flew towards them, with Tyranno-Warriors, Diplodocus-Warriors, Velociraptor-Warriors and other Dino-Warriors riding on them.

Within the Xue Luo Fort, the strongest air defense was the Laser Prism Cannons, their effective range over 18 km. If they were still present, the airborne enemy troops would not have an easy time.

Since those equipment were already destroyed, the Dino-Warriors began to activate their elite forces.

Facing the insane assault of the helicopters, Yue Zhong's army did not care so much about reserving their strength and threw all they had into the battle.

The Pterosaur riders came above the fort and jumped down, intending to land straight within the Fort.

Many of them perished on their way down, due to the multiple laser beams. However, a fair bit managed to land.

The moment they landed, they were like an unstoppable force, massacring the human soldiers.

At the frontlines of the battle, those Iron-Blood Warriors were coming to the end of the effects of the Scarlet Dragon Pills,

coughing out blood as they crumpled to the ground. The next moment, they were torn apart by the foreign races.

In order to fend off the Dino-Warriors, Zheng Yan He sent out another 30 Reapers into the battle. When they entered the battle, they began to reap the lives of the foreign soldiers., decapitating and firing holes at them.

Even so, the human soldiers were still being ripped apart by the foreign races every second. At the same time, the automatic defenses on the fort were being destroyed as well, and the battle reached a dangerous point.

Yue Zhong casually sent out a fist, killing a Type 4 Dino-General, as he frowned when he saw the situation of the fort, "Shit, the fort is going to be breached if this goes on!"

Chapter 917: Bad Situation!

Deep within the Dino-Army camp, the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long looked towards the distance while covered in a layer of dark energy. He coldly ordered, "Kong Liang Jin, Kong Xun Zhu, go bring your men to attack as well! We must destroy that fort!"

"Yes!!"

The 2 Type 6 High-Grade Dino-Generals stood up and saluted respectfully, before making their way out.

Soon, 2 units dashed out of the camp swiftly. One unit comprised of tall and massive Diplodocus-Warriors of about 7 or 8m in height. The other had smaller Velociraptor-Warriors of about 1.67m. In these 2 units, the weakest was a Low-Grade Dino-General, and they were considered the elite of the elite among the Diplodocus Kingdom and the Velociraptor Kingdom.

Among them, there were 60 of the rare Type 5 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, while the Low-Grade Dino-Generals numbered 3,000. In the field, they could easily wipe out a 300,000-strong unit of any other race.

These 2 terrifying units were made up mostly of Type 4 experts, their speed already surpassing the sound barrier. They got through the vassal forces and made a beeline for the Fort.

Each Low-Grade Dino-General was capable of slaughtering over hundreds of human soldiers in close combat. Therefore, they had no fear as they rush through the battlefield.

The energy cannons on the fort continued to fire out continuously, but due to the lapse between firing rate, after paying the price of a few casualties, they managed to breach the defensive line of the cannons.

"Warning! Warning!! Based on calculations, the enemy has deployed 122 Type 5 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals, 2 Type 6 Dino-

Generals, and 8,345 Type 4 Dino-Generals. Once they get close, the chances of the fort being destroyed will be 95%."

All of a sudden, Bai Yi's voice sounded out from the communicator in Yue Zhong's right hand.

When Agu Ya was attacking the fort, Bai Yi had already picked up the information on the Type 5 and Type 6 Dino-Generals from various sensors.

Due to Yue Zhong's concern about another assault by a Type 6 expert, most of the biological sensors had been activated, and information flowed to Bai Yi constantly, allowing her to perform live-updates and calculations.

When they heard the report, everyone inside the command center turned pale.

They had just witnessed the terror of a Type 6 expert for themselves barely moments ago. Agu Ya was able to destroy those Iron-Blood Warriors who had don on Type 5 Battle Suits and consumed the Scarlet Dragon Pills. He even managed to destroy those Prism Laser Cannons that could devastate Type 5 experts. Now, 2 were on their way, with Xue Luo Fort's current defenses, it was impossible to withstand such an attack.

If the defenses of the Xue Luo Fort was still in prime condition, they would be able to beat back the Type 6 experts. However, they did not have that now. The deaths of the millions of vassal soldiers were not in vain. They used their own lives in exchange for the destruction of the defense systems, wearing down on the strength of the fort. At the moment when the defenses were the weakest, the Type 6 experts chose to act.

Zheng Yan He's face fell slightly. However, he maintained his calm, passing a flurry of orders, "Adjust the Energy Missiles, coordinates..."

A small mountain behind the 20th Fort split open, revealing a

number of missile launchers. Many guided Energy Missiles shot into the skies, soaring the front of the Fort.

About 6km behind the Fort, there were some rocket firing pads as well, as the vehicles and weapons parked there began to unleash a torrential rain of rockets into the skies.

From the various corners of the Fort, panels opened, as guided missiles shot out towards the front area of the Fort.

In order to wipe out those 2 incoming Type 6 experts, all the weapons were activated.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

In front of the 20 Forts, bright lights flashed without any blind spots, blasting many of the foreign races as well as numerous Dino-Generals.

Many seemingly invincible Type 5 Dino-Generals were also turned to ashes before that mighty carnage before even exhibiting their strength.

While many of the Dino-Generals were reduced to dust, one of the smaller figures had activated her Radiance of Life at the first chance she got, penetrating the death zone, leaping up the fort.

This small shadow was the leader of the Velociraptor-Warriors, the Type 6 Kong Xun Zhu. The moment she leaped up the fort, she charged right for the inner parts.

A number of blood arrows appeared in the air, in the face of this terrifying enemy, the human soldiers could not even react before their heads were cleaved away swiftly.

The Mech-Fighters could not react as well, and they were ripped apart into pieces.

In a breath, over a hundred human soldiers and 300 Mech-Fighters had been eradicated.

The terrifying thing was that Kong Xun Zhu had no intention of

staying there for a moment longer than necessary. She continued to charge right through, tearing apart anything in her way.

Seeing this nightmare in front of them, everyone inside the command center felt a chill in their hearts. If she managed to breach the fort, almost nothing could stop her.

Zheng Yan He had a calm expression, continuing to command the various troops to impede Kong Xun Zhu.

Numerous City Guard soldiers in Type 3 Battle Suits charged forwards with battle intent, blocking her way.

"Trash!!"

Kong Xun Zhu casually tore an automatic electromagnetic cannon apart, laughing coldly at the City Guards in front of her. She then suddenly disappeared from her location.

The bodies of the City Guards suddenly split apart in showers of blood, turning into multiple pieces of flesh.

When everyone in the command center saw this, their hearts almost stopped. The 200 fully-equipped City Guards did not even last 10 seconds. Inside the fort, no one could stop her advance.

At the same time, another devastating scene occurred, as an 8m-tall figure wrapped in Radiance of Life leaped up the fort with ease.

The huge, towering figure was the Type 6 Dino-General Kong Liang Jin, and he was wielding a huge bone about 12m in length. With a single sweep, he smashed through a Reaper. His powerful strength exploded out, causing the energy shield to shatter before the Reaper became a heap of scrap metal.

Seeing this, the soldiers were terrified. Each Reaper was a precious trump card manufactured by the human race. Their energy shields could theoretically withstand the hits of Type 6 experts. However, Kong Liang Jin had just used a single hit to smash the Reaper. His strength was truly at an unfathomable level.

After destroying the Reaper, Kong Liang Jin flashed and reappeared like a demon among the humans, swinging his huge bone bat in a whirlwind, causing carnage.

The moment he came up on the Fort, many of the humans were slaughtered by him, as blood flowed and limbs flew about. It was practically unstoppable.

At this moment, within the command center, Yue Zhong's projection appeared on a display, as he ordered, "General Zheng, I'll leave the 20th Fort to you temporarily. I've something I need to do, and I'll have to leave for a while."

Zheng Yan He nodded with a resolute gaze, "Rest assured, Your Majesty, I will defend this place with my life."

Yue Zhong then cut off the communication. With a thought, he summoned Greenie, which appeared out of thin air. He pat its back lightly, and they shot into the sky with a flash, heading for the Dino-army camp.

At the same time, the Storm Battleship that had been hidden also soared into the skies, turning into a flash of light that shot towards the distance.

As Yue Zhong and Greenie soared in the air, a number of Type 3 and Type 4 Pterosaurs flew over.

They all had black, hardy scales, their beaks filled with razor-sharp teeth. They even had long, sharp claws.

The dozens of them shot towards Yue Zhong with a cold, killing intent. Yue Zhong's eyes narrowed and began to fire his Electromagnetic Cannon without stop. With his Third Order Firearms Manipulation, the beams pierced through the heads of the Pterosaurs, causing their corpses to plunge to the ground.

"It's him!! It's him!! He's finally out!!! He's finally come out from the Fort!! Hahahaha!!"

Within the camp, a look of ecstasy flashed in the eyes of the Type

7 Emperor Ba Long, whose body was enveloped in the dark energy. He turned into a beam of light as he shot towards Yue Zhong.

Chapter 918: Type 7 Emperor Ba Long!

In the sky, Yue Zhong suddenly felt a hair-raising sense of danger. He turned to the source, only to discover a terrifying figure wrapped in black energy shooting towards him.

Yue Zhong eyed the figure and felt a sense of fear and helplessness. His Danger Perception was alarming him about the vast difference between himself and the owner of that black energy. In front of him, he's just a slightly bigger ant.

"Type 7 expert!!!"

His thoughts came up to this point, and he could not help but suck in a breath of cold air.

If it were a Type 6 peak expert, even if Yue Zhong was not a match, his Danger Perception could alert him to the threat of the enemy, but never helplessness.

Currently, under the oppressive aura of the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long, Yue Zhong's body was shuddering. He was extremely clear that in a frontal clash, he would be smacked to death in a single hit.

It must be known that Yue Zhong had to give it his all, together with the defenses of the Fort, to kill the Type 6 Agu Ya with a sneak attack. Against this existence that was superior to Agu Ya, Yue Zhong knew he had no chance of victory.

Yue Zhong patted Greenie's back and barked, "Greenie, go!! Maximum speed!!!"

Even Greenie had felt the threat from the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long. It channeled its innate ability in a frenzy, as countless tornadoes were whipped up around its body. Its speed then increased by 50%, reaching Mach-3 Speed.

"Damn it!!"

Emperor Ba Long saw Greenie fleeing quickly, and let out an infuriated roar. As a Type 7 expert, it could manipulate the energy of the environment to propel it through the air. However, it was not an air-based expert, thus, its speed could only reach Mach-1. It was unable to catch up to the speedy Greenie.

"Break for me!!"

The eyes of Emperor Ba Long flashed, as he threw out his right fist that was wrapped in that overbearing black energy, while his body was covered with an abundant Radiance of Life.

A black-and-white beam shot towards Greenie like a laser beam, twisting violently, and tore Greenie's body apart. A huge bloody hole appeared as bones, blood, and organs fell out from the wound.

Suffering this grievous wound, Greenie's body shuddered, and the energies around its body disappeared. Its eyes dimmed as it began to plummet towards the ground.

"Greenie!!!"

The moment they landed on the ground, Yue Zhong rushed over towards Greenie, whose body was wracked with injuries, his heart aching for it.

Greenie was one of the earliest Tamed Beast of Yue Zhong, having followed him through countless battles. It had saved his life on countless occasions. He had grown to treat it as his most important companion, and now that this little fellow had been gravely injured by the Emperor Ba Long, Yue Zhong was filled with anguish and hatred.

"Damn Dino-person!! There'll be a day for your reckoning!! I'll crush your entire race!!"

Yue Zhong suppressed the pain in his heart, as he swept a glance at Greenie, before activating his Dark Dou Qi and Third Order Stealth. He then dashed towards the forest.

Currently, Greenie was still not dead. However, if Yue Zhong

were to stay, then the two of them would definitely die. The Type 7 Divine Warrior was simply too strong. Yue Zhong had no way of dealing with it even by employing all his trump cards.

Yue Zhong had not left for more than 10 seconds when the black figure shot past overhead. It did not even spare Greenie a glance.

Emperor Ba Long had slaughtered numerous Mutant Beasts, many of them Type 5. Only those at the Type 6 and Type 7 realm would cause him to hesitate. A Type 4 Mutant Beast was practically an ant to him.

Yue Zhong dashed through the forest, empowered by the Dark Dou Qi. His speed had reached the 2.5 Mach limit. The air and wind around him were like blades that cut into his skin. If it was not for his powerful Endurance, he could not possibly travel like this for long.

At that speed, his Stamina was also being reduced at a drastic rate. He could at most hang out for another 5 minutes.

As he ran, his heart was pounding fast. He knew that the dangerous entity was closing in on him. On the ground, even if his speed was 2.5 Mach, he could not outrun the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long.

The stern and overbearing voice from the Dino-Emperor resounded, "Human, surrender now and hand me the God and Devil Imprint obediently and I will spare your life, making you a leader of the country!"

Yue Zhong kept quiet, taking a deep breath, and charged forwards without the intention of minding his words. As long as he spoke, he would reveal his location, and his speed would decrease. At this critical juncture, even slowing down slightly would mean death.

After one second, Yue Zhong looked up into the sky with joy, noticing the fortress-like Storm Battleship soaring over here.

Activating his Bone-Encompassing Armor, the bone carapace enveloped him. With a thought, 2 sharp bone spikes sent him into the sky, towards the Storm Battleship.

Emperor Ba Long lifted his head and recognized the Storm Battleship. His pupils narrowed, as he shot towards it, "This is the Storm Battleship!! One of the final war weapons of humankind. This antiquity is still around?! It doesn't seem to have enough energy. Let me destroy this weapon myself!"

The Storm Battleship was a legacy weapon from the war between the humans and Dino-race. At its peak, even Type 7 experts would perish under its assault.

However, it required a huge amount of energy. Each time it battled, it would require Type 6 and even Type 7 Mutant Beast nuclei. It could not sustain combat for long and in the end, many of them had been destroyed by the Type 7 experts then.

Emperor Ba Long looked on as Yue Zhong got on the Battleship, his eyes flashing with a cold light. He then channeled the black energy through his right fist and sent a punch towards the Battleship.

A black fist tore through the skies, blasting towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong had no way of dodging it, and could only channel the Dark Dou Qi to envelop himself. He flipped his hands and a huge shield and another energy shield appeared, blocking in front of him.

When the black beam slammed into the energy shield, it shattered instantly. It then hit the huge shield, also destroying it. Finally, having lost some of its momentum, the beam then slammed into Yue Zhong, sending him shooting towards the Battleship, leaving him with more broken bones.

"Thankfully I've already evolved. Otherwise, I would have died from that strike." Yue Zhong felt a sharp pain in his chest, as he

coughed out once. A large amount of blood came out, mixed in with some pieces of his organs, and he thought to himself.

If it were him before fighting Agu Ya, that single strike could have killed him. Since he evolved and his Dark Dou Qi had been strengthened, it had saved his life, preventing him from becoming a meat paste.

"Attack!! Protect the Leader!!"

Many of Yue Zhong's soldiers on board the ship quickly joined the fray. They pulled out laser guns and electromagnetic cannons and fired wildly at Emperor Ba Long.

When the attacks hit the body of Emperor Ba Long, they were dispersed without much effect.

At the same time, over a thousand Winged elites flew out, pulling out their bows and arrows and firing at Emperor Ba Long.

"Scram!!"

Emperor Ba Long eyed the Winged elites coldly and sucked in a deep breath before barking out loud.

A tyrannical soundwave blasted outward, and the thousand Winged Elites who were lower than the Type 3 Divine Realm realm bled from their orifices and died. The rest who were more fortunate felt their eardrums shatter and a powerful headache.

The thousand Winged Elites started to fall out of the air from a single roar emitted by the Emperor Ba Long.

Within the Storm Battleship, although it had a strong soundproof material, the hundreds of human soldiers were still affected the tremors caused by the roar. They also bled from their orifices and died.

"Bai Yi, hurry activate the defense systems!"

Yue Zhong charged through the Battleship and came in front of a computer panel where a compartment appeared. He swiftly placed

the 2 precious Type 6 Mutant Beast nuclei as well as 10 Type 5 nuclei, hollering out anxiously.

The moment Emperor Ba Long was allowed to rampage through this Battleship, the hundreds of thousands of lives on this Battleship would be sacrificed. That was how terrifying a Type 7 expert was, they were akin to a disaster.

"Got it! Systems activated, energy transference in progress!"

"Detecting defensive systems, progress at 83.3%..."

"Permission granted, energy transference through, defenses activated!"

"..."

After a flurry of announcements from Bai Yi, the Storm Battleship lit up radiantly, releasing bright lights everywhere.

The calm and impassive Emperor Ba Long finally felt a tinge of fear, "Shit!! The defense systems are activated!"

Chapter 919: Halfway Down, the Last Fort!

Countless beams shot out from the Storm Battleship, and a huge energy shield formed, encompassing the Battleship.

The face of Emperor Ba Long fell, as he stepped through the air, arriving in front of the Battleship. He sent a fist wrapped in the Black Energy, blasting towards the shield.

Hong!

Following a loud impact, Emperor Ba Long's fist was able to send a terrifying shockwave all around the shield, the ripple almost breaking it apart.

"Warning! Warning! Due to the attack from a Type 7 expert, the Energy Shield's defense ability has decreased by 1%!"

After that strike from Emperor Ba Long, alarms rang throughout the entire Storm Battleship.

The massive Battleship's shield could not diffuse the power of the Emperor Ba Long, it was truly a testimony to how powerful he was.

Yue Zhong swiftly ordered, "Leave here immediately!! Head for the Xue Luo Fort!!"

"Yes!"

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the Battleship flashed forward, with its speed reaching a terrifying Mach-5 speed.

"Damn it!!!"

When Emperor Ba Long saw how fast the Storm Battleship was, he roared out in rage. He sent another fist out, the Black Energy from his fist directly tearing apart a small mountain below him.

The Storm Battleship could only withstand a Type 7 expert if it had a Type 7 Mutant Beast nucleus. However, with the absorption of the Type 6 Nuclei, its flying speed was not something a Type 7 expert could keep up with.

Soon, the Battleship managed to fly above the battlefield.

In the skies, there were many Type 2, Type 3 and even Type 4 Mutant Pterosaurs flying about in droves. It was a horrendous sight, as though the entire sky was being covered.

Yue Zhong eyed the beasts and ordered, "Barge through them!!"

The Storm Battleship then charged through like a shooting star, slamming right into the flock of Pterosaurs.

One of the Type 4 Pterosaur of over 80 m in wingspan was slammed by the Battleship, and its body instantly contorted, turning into meat paste splattering all over the energy shield.

The rest of the Mutant Pterosaurs also faced the same fate when they were slammed into, dropping out of the skies.

In just 2 breaths, over a hundred Pterosaurs had been knocked out of the skies, and the Storm Battleship had charged right through them.

Currently, the Xue Luo Fort was already at a half-collapsed state. Hordes of Dino-warriors were charging into the fort, slaughtering the human soldiers.

There were many human corpses and broken Mech-Fighters strewn all over the field, as well as the broken remnants of the defense systems.

Within the human army, many were fighting back valiantly. However, there were also many who could not take the pressure and fled.

Among these hundred thousand soldiers, the ones who fought back with much valor were the veterans from the 1st to 3rd Forts. They had a strong faith and believed in honor. Even when their casualties reached 40%, they did not crumble nor lose hope, instead, fighting as hard as ever.

Although the soldiers of the 4th to 9th Fort had strict training,

the moment their death toll reached 20%, many started to flee in defeat.

Within the Fort, one Type 3 Velociraptor laughed savagely. His body flashed forward and his right claw reached out to slash at a fleeing human soldier, tearing him in two.

"No!! Help!! Help me!!"

Seeing their comrades dying at the hands of the Velociraptor-Warrior, many of the human soldiers began to panic and screamed in fear.

The current number of fleeing soldiers were at least a dozen. If they worked together and turned back to fire at the Type 3 Velociraptor, they might possibly defeat him. However, all that was in their hearts now was fear.

One soldier wearing a Type 4 Battle Suit and wielding a Battle Spear shot forward. His Spear radiated with a bright light, piercing directly into the chest of the Velociraptor-Warrior.

"Don't run!! Turn around and fight!! I..."

Before he could finish his words, a huge bone mace came down from the sky, smashing into his body, turning him into meat paste.

Kong Liang Jin walked over, his towering height of 8 meters, his eyes flashing with a vicious light. He then grabbed a struggling human soldier and took a huge bite out of him.

With a loud crack, the human soldier was bitten in two, his organs spilling out from Kong Liang Jin's mouth, giving him an even more terrifying look.

Seeing that gruesome scene was enough to send the rest of the human soldiers around to break down and try to flee.

"Hahaha!!"

The Type 6 Dino-General let out a loud and savage laugh, as he shot forward, waving his bone bat, smashing 5 or 6 human soldiers

into meat paste.

Right then, a laser beam shot out from a bunker, blasting into the body of Kong Liang Jin.

The laser beam that could pierce a tank barely caused a graze in Kong Liang Jin's body.

He stepped forward in fury, his bone bat smashing down on the bunker. His terrifying strength exploded out, directly destroying the bunker and the human soldiers inside. The wound on his body healed at an incredible speed.

After he casually destroyed that bunker, he charged towards the other bunkers, destroying each one the moment he appeared in front of them. These bunkers that were hard to destroy even with the firepower from tanks, were crushed easily by him, and many human soldiers were turned into meat paste.

From within the pile of a destroyed bunker, one human soldier had a cold gaze as he locked onto a Tyranno-Warrior that was munching on the body of a human soldier and fired his weapon.

The beam shot through the air and blasted the Tyranno-Warrior's head wide open.

With a swish, 5 Lizard-Warriors and 2 Diplodocus-Warriors turned over and disappeared from their locations, charging over towards him.

"Freaks, your granddaddy is over here..." The human soldier barely managed to croak out, when a Diplodocus-Warrior appeared behind him.

With a single fist, the Diplodocus Warrior pummeled the human soldiers, crushing his head like a watermelon. In close combat, humans could never compare with these foreign races. This was the biggest disadvantage of the humans.

At almost the same time, a bright light flashed from that location. The next moment, a huge explosion consumed that

Diplodocus-Warrior as well as the 3 Lizard-Warriors that had gotten too close.

Inside the command center, all the officers were staring at the displays with pale countenances.

Every single display was feeding back the defeat and deaths of the human soldiers, as well as the massacre by the Dino-Warriors. At the same time, there were many heroes who did not care about their own lives and took out their enemies in suicide attacks.

Bai Yi was helping out Zheng Yan He, but in the face of absolute strength, it was futile.

With every passing second, more equipment was being destroyed, and over thousands of soldiers were dying. There were some who were fearful to the point they got down on their knees to surrender, only to be eaten alive.

After the world had changed, many of the Mutant Beasts had further evolved to possess intelligence and had savagery in their blood. In their hunger, they could even consume the corpses of other races. Humans were just moving food to them.

One officer came up to Zheng Yan He and tried to persuade him, "General, it's time to evacuate!! The fort is going to fall!! We have to run now, otherwise, it'll be too late!"

Everyone's gaze fell upon him, their eyes flickering with hope. Even ants were fearful of death, much less these humans.

Zheng Yan He had a steely glint as he glared at the officer, "No! When His Majesty gave me the reigns over the Fort, I'd promised to live and die with the Fort! Now, there're many of our valiant and heroic comrades who are still down there fighting! As their comrade, friend, and commander, how can I do such a cowardly thing?! Zhuo Ye, do not speak to me about evacuating, ever again!"

Zhuo Ye stepped back in shame, "Yes! Great General!"

Zheng Yan He turned around and bowed deeply, "Everyone, we

are the core, the heart, the brain of this entire Fort!! We cannot leave at this critical moment!! I hope that everyone can join me and fight to the last breath, for the sake of our people in Cloud Region!! Please!!"

"We're willing to die with Great General!!" Inside the command center, everyone felt bolstered by his words and roared out in heated excitement.

As the highest commander in the fort, Zheng Yan He actually did not choose to retreat, putting his life on the line. These hot-blooded warriors would naturally not leave him behind as well.

Chapter 920: Raytheon Cannon!

About 300m away from the fort, a Type 5 Velociraptor-Warrior pounced onto a fleeing human soldier, chomping down on his neck.

With a loud crack, the neck of the soldier was snapped.

The Velociraptor Warrior then used his claws to grab the body while devouring the rest of him. It was a truly gory sight.

At one corner of the fort, there was a human in a Type 5 Battle Suit hidden within the ruins. There was only the slightest sign of life from him, as though he was dead, and he wielded a special RS335 electromagnetic sniper cannon, quietly staring at a distance.

This particular human soldier was called Guo Sai. He was the top sniper of the 1st Fort, and the weapon in his hand was a specially-customized elite sniper weapon. It required Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei to power and could destroy tanks with a single shot.

There were only about 15 of such rifles within the entire Cloud Region, after all, the Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei were too precious. Furthermore, most of them were used to power the Type 5 Battle Suits, or to power the more powerful Reapers.

When the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior was consuming the human soldier, Guo Sai silently pulled the trigger.

A terrifying electromagnetic beam shot out and directly penetrated the head of the Velociraptor Warrior, blasting it apart.

The dozens of other Velociraptor Warriors turned to stare at the rubble, and with a tap of their feet, they darted over.

Guo Sai quickly jumped up from his spot, pulling out 2 ordinary Electromagnetic Cannons and retreated. He fired out continuously, killing off the ordinary Velociraptor Warriors.

However, there were 10 Type 4 experts within them, and since

their race had an advantage in speed, it was hard for the naked eye to capture their movements.

Guo Sai was also just an initial Type 4 Divine Warrior. He was exceptional in his sniping skills, but nothing else. Even with his Type 5 Battle Suit, his speed could not outstrip those Velociraptor Warriors and their powerful legs.

The 10 Velociraptor Warriors appeared all around him, preparing to pounce on him.

"Is it over? At least I managed to wipe out a Type 5 Dino-Warrior!"

A powerful sense of death welled up in his heart, and his eyes flashed with a resolute glint. The Type 5 nucleus behind also began to glow brightly.

Right as he was about to risk his life, a number of light beams shot down from the skies, and the heads of the Velociraptor Warriors erupted.

"What's going on?"

Guo Sai lifted his head to the skies, only to discover an enormous floating fortress, with countless beams of light raining upon the fort and battlefield.

At another part of the battlefield, dozens of Velociraptor Warriors were hunting hundreds of human soldiers. There were many corpses of human soldiers, torn apart and badly mangled. In contrast, there were only 1 or 2 Velociraptor Warrior corpses.

The rhythm of the battle was slowly moving towards the favor of the Dino-Army, and it seemed impossible for the human soldiers to turn the tide. At the same time, the casualties of humans compared to foreign races were more than 100:1. Each time a foreign race soldier was killed, over a hundred humans had already been killed.

One Velociraptor Warrior pounced lightly and knocked a human soldier down on the ground, opening his jaws in preparation to

crunch down on the head of the unfortunate soldier.

The human soldier's eyes flashed with despair and hopelessness.

At that moment, a beam of light shot down and pierced the Velociraptor Warrior's head, directly killing him. Fresh blood splattered all over the human soldiers.

"What is that? Has God come and save us?"

Having returned from the gates of death, the human soldier looked up at the floating fortress, his gaze full of wonder and amazement.

Inside the command center, Zheng Yan He saw the Storm Battleship, and exclaimed in spite of himself, "That's His Majesty!! That's Yue Zhong!! He did not abandon us!! He's back!!!"

Zheng Yan He thought that Yue Zhong had abandoned them, and chose to retreat himself. He knew that it would have been the right choice to make, after all, he was the Emperor, and the whole Cloud Region needed him. If he fell, they would have no leader, and there would just be internal chaos. However, he still could not help but feel disappointed. It was all wiped away the moment he saw the Storm Battleship, his hope was rekindled.

"His Majesty Yue Zhong!! Is that really His Majesty?!!"

"Long live His Majesty Yue Zhong!!"

"..."

Instantly, the command center erupted in excited cheers. These commanders had all made the resolute decision to die, however, upon hearing that there was a chance to survive, they could not help themselves.

Zheng Yan He swiftly passed the order, "Immediately convey the command, His Majesty Yue Zhong has arrived with reinforcements, they have to fight on!!"

"Yes!"

With his command, the various officers quickly got to work, disseminating the information into the multi-purpose helmets of the human soldiers.

Inside the command center, Zheng Yan He's orders could reach every single rank-and-file soldier. However, once there was panic and chaos, it did not matter the command from above, no one would follow.

Upon hearing that Yue Zhong was back with reinforcements, the soldiers on the frontlines immediately got invigorated, their morale rising.

Many of those who were fleeing, turned their heads to see the Storm Battleship, feeling excited and ashamed at the same time.

The beams of light from the Battleship was taking out hundreds of Dino-Warriors like it was nothing. Every single existence under the Type 5 realm was being annihilated.

"Energy depletion at 20%. Based on the current speed, the Battleship will run out of energy in 5 minutes."

"Based on estimations, after 2 minutes, other than the 2 Type 6 Divine Warriors, all other enemies will be wiped out."

"..."

A number of robotic announcements reported the situation to Yue Zhong.

The Battleship was the final weapon of war produced by the human race in the past. With terrifying firepower, its central computer was even more powerful than those of the Forts. When Bai Yi gained control of the computer, she was able to fully exhibit the calculation powers of the incredible piece of technology. The firing of the lasers was extremely precise, instantly killing many Type 5 Dino-Warriors.

Each time there was a volley of laser beams, many of the Type 3 and Type 4 Mutant Beast nuclei would shatter, channeling the

energy into the Battleship.

"Get rid of that fellow!!"

Yue Zhong pointed to Kong Liang Jin rampaging around in the fort and ordered.

"Yes! Killing the Type 6 Divine Warrior, based on estimated, would take 3 Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei. Please insert the Type 5 or Type 6 nuclei to proceed."

Following a robotic sound, an energy compartment revealed itself in front of Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong frowned but decided to throw 3 precious Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei into the compartment. After taking down the Capital, he had gained many of them. Killing a Type 6 Divine Warrior with 3 Type 5 nuclei was worth it. After all, if he were to face Kong Liang Jin now, it was likely that he would lose.

When the 3rd nucleus was inserted, a panel on top of the battleship opened, revealing a 10m-tall cannon, with countless engravings on it. The cannon seemed to be made out of countless crystal tubes, and as it stuck out, it turned to point towards Kong Liang Jin.

"Not good!! Danger!!"

The moment the cannon revealed itself, Kong Liang Jin felt a sense of danger, stopping himself in the midst of his murderous rampage. With a tap of his foot, he retreated explosively.

Countless light beams traveled along the crystal-like tubes, converging inside the main cannon, as the runes all around started to light up.

At the next moment, a terrifying laser beam shot out from the cannon, instantly reaching the ground. The point of impact lit up glaringly, reaching an area of about 1 km in diameter, consuming Kong Liang Jin.

"Raytheon Cannon!!! No!!"

Kong Liang Jin let out a scream of fear and rage, his body erupting with the Radiance of Life to try to defend himself.

Under the assault of that seemingly godly light, Kong Liang Jin's Radiance of Life was smashed through like nothing, his body enveloped by it.

After the light dispersed, the area had turned into a huge pit, and the Type 6 Kong Liang Jin had been reduced to nothing more than dust.

"Raytheon Cannon!! That was the Raytheon Cannon!!"

At the other side of the fort, the Type 6 Kong Xun Zhu had seen how the pillar of light destroyed her comrade. Her face turned pale as she quickly tried to escape deeper into Cloud Region. With her current position, the only way of survival was in.

Chapter 921: The Fall of Xue Luo Fort!

"The 2nd Type 6 Divine Warrior has already fled outside of the sure-kill range. Based on estimations, the chances of killing are 30%, heavily injured 50%, not hitting her at all: 20%. Do you want to proceed? If so, please insert Type 5 nuclei."

Another compartment appeared in front of Yue Zhong.

The Storm Battleship's main Raytheon Cannon was incredibly powerful. A single shot from it could kill a Type 6 Divine Warrior. Within the region of 5 km, it could definitely kill one in a single shot. Outside of the region, due to the speed of the Type 6 Divine Warrior, the Raytheon Cannon could not get a guaranteed kill in one hit.

Yue Zhong fell silent for a moment and made a choice: "Do not attack!"

On the way back to the Xue Luo Fort, he had seen the number of Dino-Army camps, there were too many Dino-Warriors around. Even if he used up all the nuclei in his hands, he would not be able to wipe out all of them.

They were different from the human soldiers. All of the foreign races were being deployed out at full strength into the battlefield.

Even a female Dino-Warrior could be utilized in war. They were just slightly weaker than the male ones, and they were similarly proficient in hunting, working, and fighting. This was the terrifying thing about the foreign races.

The gigantic Storm Battleship landed slowly near the hole of the Fort and began to fire out countless beams at the Dino-Warriors, killing them all.

In the Xue Luo Fort's command center, the display suddenly lit up and Yue Zhong's figure appeared.

He immediately gave an order, "This is Yue Zhong, General

Zheng. Heed my commands, gather all personnel to board the Battleship, right now."

Zheng Yan He's heart sank, "Your Majesty, if all the soldiers are to board, what happens to the Fort?"

Yue Zhong replied sternly, "Give it up. We have to evacuate immediately. The enemy is too strong. Even with this Battleship, we cannot defend it. If we don't evacuate now, we will all fall here. We need to preserve our men."

Zheng Yan He fell silent for a moment, before replying solemnly, "Understood! Your Majesty!"

He knew what Yue Zhong meant. These were all the elites of the human race. They had already suffered for so long, and yet, they managed to hold out and fend off an enemy 20 times the size of themselves. If these elite forces were to fall here, it would be a huge loss to the human race.

If they all survived and were reorganized, through the baptism of hell and fire, they would be an intensely strong army.

Zheng Yan He proceeded to give short but precise orders, and the various soldiers of the frontline began to move from their cover towards the Battleship.

A huge cloud of black energy came shooting from a distance, entering the command center of the Dino-Army. It was the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long.

The moment Emperor Ba Long got back to the seat, he roared out in fury, "Damn it! It's the Storm Battleship! That sort of historical weapon shouldn't even exist in this world!! Attack!! Attack with full force!!"

If it had been on the field, Emperor Ba Long had the confidence that he could whittle down the Battleship's energy shield, since it was not fully powered at the moment.

However, the Storm Battleship was on the Xue Luo Fort right

now, as long as the Raytheon Cannon was fired, even he would be injured. He did not want to fall at the Xue Luo Fort. In any case, even if more of his Dino-army perished, it would not matter to him. The Dino-Race had already been the overlords of this world for so long. It would not take much effort to repopulate.

Under Emperor Ba Long's order, all the Dino-Warriors roared out madly in response and charged towards the Fort. In the skies, the Pterosaurs also soared over in huge droves, blocking out the sky.

On the Battleship, all the soldiers were currently behind cover, utilizing their weapons to fire at the incoming enemies.

At this moment, the Winged Race, Storm Valley, and Yue Zhong's army were all giving it their best, attacking the Dino-Warriors. They had no more intentions of hiding behind. It was a critical moment, and should the Dino-Warriors make it past their ship, everyone would die.

The elites who had just boarded the ship managed to catch a moment's breath, before taking up their weapons again and engaged in combat under the instructions of Bai Yi.

The various Dino-Warriors charged over, only to be fired full of holes under the rain of laser beams.

With that sort of mindless and suicidal charge, the energy of the Battleship was being depleted. Even with the help of the human soldiers defending, many Type 3 and Type 4 Nuclei shattered upon their depletion.

The might of the Battleship was overbearing because it had a huge energy reserve. Thus, in order to retain that sort of firing rate, the energy had to be sufficient.

It was precisely because the Storm Battleship had been depleted of its energy in the past, that the humans of that era had fallen at the hands of the Dino-Warriors, and forced into Cloud Region.

On the hull, Yue Zhong wielded his Electromagnetic Cannon and

fired out constantly. Each of his shots would cause a Pterosaur to be killed in a shower of blood.

The Pterosaurs in the skies, as well as their riders, would descend sharply, dropping right into the midst of the humans. They would then slaughter whoever they could, as well as destroy the automatic defenses, before being killed.

Guo Sai, the excellent sniper, was currently camped out at a dark corner. Each time he pulled the trigger, he would claim the life of a Low-Grade Dino-General or a Mid-Grade Dino-General.

Although there was a large number of human experts acting, from time to time, many of them would be torn apart by the descending Dino-Warriors and their Pterosaur mounts.

With the firepower of the Battleship, it could easily produce a huge fire net, preventing the Dino-Warriors from entering the ship, at the same time, wiping out all of them near the Fort. However, in doing so, it would take up too much energy. With the current reserves, they could use that to hold out for at most 5 minutes. Unless it was a desperate moment, Yue Zhong would not resort to that.

After killing another 3 Pterosaurs with ease, Yue Zhong spoke into the communicator, "How many more soldiers are not yet here?"

Bai Yi replied swiftly, "Based on scans, there are still 4325 signs of life inside the Fort. There's no way to reach them through the communication channels, they must have abandoned their helmets. There's still 53% energy left, please insert more nuclei."

Yue Zhong chuckled bitterly, in order to maintain the combat strength of the Storm Battleship, he had given half of Xue Luo Fort's storage. He did not expect it to last for barely an hour, and 47% had already been depleted.

With a resolute glint, he gave the order, "Set off now, head for

the Imperial Capital!!"

Although there were still 4,000 human elites within the Fort, if they continued like this, the hundreds of thousands on the Ship would fall at the hands of the Dino-Warriors.

In comparing the 2, Yue Zhong made a helpless decision.

"Understood!"

With Yue Zhong's order, the Battleship glowed, and immediately utilized the fire net. All the Dino-Warriors within a 300m-radius were instantly wiped out.

From within the Battleship, an immense alloy armor quickly covered the ship.

Next, the Battleship began to rise amidst powerful jets of flames and air, before it shot towards the distance.

Seeing it fly away, Emperor Ba Long roared out with a maddened expression, "Damn it!! They're getting away!! Chase after them!!"

Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint, as well as the God-Devil Nucleus he had congealed, were important ingredients for Emperor Ba Long to evolve. Seeing the prey that was almost in his hands get away, Emperor Ba Long was obviously enraged.

Following his orders, countless Dino-Warriors quickly got on their Pterosaurs as they soared into the air and chased after the Storm Battleship.

Emperor Ba Long was clear that their speed could not match up with the Battleship, but in his rage, he gave such an order.

He stared at the Xue Luo Fort with a venomous look and snapped, "Damn it! Tear this damn Fort apart!!"

If it was not for the huge amount of explosives within the Forts, Emperor Ba Long would have long since charged through himself, killing every single human soldier cleanly. Yue Zhong would not have been able to get away scot-free as well.

20,000 Armored Rat-Warriors charged through the Fort, tearing everything apart in a frenzy.

The rest of the Dino-Warriors also breached the Fort, chasing the Battleship further towards Cloud Region.

Hong!!

At that moment when half of the Fort was torn apart, a huge explosion occurred, enveloping those 20,000 Armored Rat-Warriors and annihilating them.

Chapter 922: Emperor Ba Long's Tactics!

As the dust from the explosion settled, where the 20th Xue Luo Fort used to be, there was only a huge ditch.

The Forts that had stood as the final defense for the human race in the past hundreds of years had finally fallen.

The moment the last Fort was destroyed, the Dino-Army immediately poured into Cloud Region in huge droves, spreading out like wildfire.

The Cloud Region was incredibly vast, with countless humans living in all sorts of areas, cities, even in villages. These were all areas where the government could not reach.

The moment the Dino-Warriors invaded Cloud Region, they began to slaughter these straggling human bases without mercy.

At a camp which was filled with Dino-Warriors, dozens of human males were being dragged away by 4 Low-Grade Dino-Generals.

Inside the camp, a number of Type 6 Dino-Generals were seated, exuding a terrifying aura.

They stared at the humans coldly, and the leader among the humans, who was a handsome man, was so badly frightened that his face turned pale and he slumped to the floor. A putrid liquid came out between his pants, as he stammered, "Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! As long as you spare my dog life, I'm willing to do anything!!"

Seeing the pathetic state of the man, the various High-Grade Dino-Generals had disdain in their eyes. They admired and respected heroes and experts, as to these humans without a backbone, they viewed them with contempt.

On the throne, Emperor Ba Long was clouded with a black energy, coldly asking, "What's your name? Where are you from?"

The young man felt his heart jumped, and quickly replied, "I'm Luo Yi, one of the direct heirs of the Blood-Red City's Luo Clan, the future viscount."

Emperor Ba Long continued, "Luo Yi, I'll ask you this, where's the imperial capital of your Cloud Region?"

Luo Yi hurried to answer, "The Capital is in the Imperial City. I know how to go, leave me alive, I'm willing to serve Your Majesty with all my heart!"

Emperor Ba Long looked down at Luo Yi condescendingly, and declared, "Very good! Luo Yi! I can spare your life, as long as you swear to serve this Seat, I will support you to become the king of the human race."

Luo Yi immediately kneeled in joy and began kowtowing as he swore, "Thank you, Your Majesty! Thank you, Your Majesty! I, Luo Yi, swear to the heavens, that I will serve His Majesty Emperor Ba Long with all my life, till the day I die!!"

The Dino-race was the dominant power in this world, any Dino-Kingdom could easily crush all the fighting forces within Cloud Region.

The Cloud Region had remained safe all these years purely because of the Xue Luo 20 Forts. The Dino-Kingdoms also had their own friction among themselves. Those Dino-Kings were never interested in Cloud Region, hence, the humans had been able to survive for so long.

Now that the 20 Forts had fallen, the Cloud Region no longer had a defense force that could stand up to any of the Dino-armies. With their strength, they could capture hundreds of thousands of humans as their slaves with ease. To Luo Yi, being a King of a hundred thousand was already more than enough for him.

Emperor Ba Long eyed Luo Yi coldly and spoke, "You're dismissed! Those humans who were captured along with you are

now your subjects, go settle them yourself."

Luo Yi bowed respectfully, "Yes!", before leaving.

One of the Type 6 Velociraptor Warrior could not help but ask, "Your Majesty, why did you let that human become a King? Isn't it easier for us to just make them all slaves, or eat them directly?"

The rest of the Type 6 Dino-Generals had the same look of agreement as their gazes fell upon Emperor Ba Long. After this cruel battle with the Xue Luo 20 Forts, many of their kingdoms had suffered heavy losses. They were filled with hatred for the humans, some directly killing the humans when they encountered them.

Emperor Ba Long's eyes flashed with a glint, "No! This time, the enemy we're facing is not simple. He might be the most dangerous enemy we have had to face. It is a test for our Dino-race, as well as a potential catastrophe. If we can get past this, our race will then soar to greater heights. If not, what awaits us is likely our downfall."

One Type 6 Dino-General frowned as he asked, albeit with a lost expression, "Enemy? How can those humans be our enemy? Unless...unless they're the Apostles of God?!"

Hearing that term, all the Type 6 Dino-Generals had a huge change in expression, their pupils narrowing.

As the victors of the previous war, the Dino-Race got to know a lot of secrets. They were extremely clear that while they were the overlords of this planet, their fate was still in the hands of this mighty existence far beyond their understanding.

Yue Zhong was a man of the God and Devil Imprint, which was recognized as a sign of an Apostle of God. Each of them was the elite among the humans, and they were difficult experts to deal with. In the past, their race had come to blows with one such being before.

However, this was a matter over hundreds of years ago. Since then, the Dino-race had not paid much attention to the humans.

Emperor Ba Long's eyes flashed with a crafty glint, as he laughed coldly, "That's right! He's an Apostle of God. All of you had better abandon all thoughts of underestimating your opponent and use all of your might to deal with those humans. Humans are a pathetic bunch, as long as we can utilize them properly, they can fall apart from within easily. Dealing with scattered humans would then be easier. By the time we have finished dealing with the Apostle of God, we can then deal with the rest of humankind however we want."

Inside the Capital, Chen Tai was leading a patrol unit of a dozen guards, keeping an eye atop the city wall. He looked out over the wall, noticing that there was a long queue of humans, stretching for about 20 li. They were all moving out towards the mountain valley containing the Gate of Hell. His eyes flashed with worry and unease. This was a huge, unprecedented move, leaving behind this world that had lived in for dozens of years. Fleeing to another foreign world, there was no way he could not be uneasy and worried.

Right at this moment, one city guard looked up and his face fell. Pointing to the sky, he exclaimed, "General! Look, what's that?!"

Chen Tai lifted his head and was shocked. He discovered a huge floating fortress that blocked out a huge patch of the sky, descending towards the ground.

Many soldiers got nervous and wielding their weapons to aim at the huge Storm Battleship.

Suddenly, Yue Zhong' projection appeared in various displays throughout the city, "This is Yue Zhong. I'm on the Storm Battleship, one of our trump cards."

"It's His Majesty!!"

"Storm Battleship? Isn't that a frickin' floating fortress?!"

"That's amazing!! With such a fortress, we don't have to fear to lose a home!"

"..."

From within the city walls, the people began to erupt in cheers and excited discussion.

Chen Tai looked at the Battleship with a look of relief, "It truly is something only His Majesty is capable of!"

Yue Zhong walked out of the Battleship, and went into the Capital, summoning all the officers.

He swept everyone a gaze, before asking Dou Meng directly, "Dou Meng, what's the situation on the ground now?"

Dou Meng replied, "Based on the current number of humans in the capital that are going through the Gate of Hell, it would likely be completed in 5 days."

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "5 days, it's truly too long. Is there any way to expedite it?"

There was over a few thousand kilometers to the Capital from the Xue Luo Forts. If it was a journey for humans without any transportation, it would be hard to complete the journey even in a half a year.

However, to those Dino-Warriors, it would take them a few days. If they did not rest and just hurried all the way, it was possible to reach in 1 day.

Dou Meng did not answer that question, instead, he asked, "Your Majesty, has the Xue Luo Fort truly fallen?"

The rest of the officers also turned to look at Yue Zhong. They had already known of the results of the battle, but they wanted to obtain the information directly from Yue Zhong's mouth.

Yue Zhong replied softly, "It has already fallen! Based on our

estimations, 16 Dino-kingdoms had taken part in the attack on us, with more than 1 Type 6 Dino-General. In the end, our Forts have fallen."

Hearing the report, everyone's face was downcast.

The Xue Luo Forts had never fallen since they were constructed, and were the strongest shield of the human race. However, now that it had fallen under the relentless assault of the true might of the Dino-race, these people were rocked.

Dou Meng looked as though he had aged 5 or 6 years, and sighed, "Your Majesty, 5 days is already the fastest that we can go. No matter what, you'll have to hold out for 5 days."

Yue Zhong fell silent and nodded, "Alright! I will go try my best to fight for 5 more days."

After the meeting was dismissed, Yue Zhong walked out quietly, a tremendous pressure on him. The lives and deaths of hundreds of thousands of people was not a small matter.

He had not walked very far, when he came across Luo Qing Qing, who was in her Type 5 Battle Suit, walking towards him.

She gazed at him and could tell that something was wrong, "Something troubling you?"

Yue Zhong chuckled bitterly, "5 days, I have to buy them 5 more days' worth of time. How am I going to do that?"

Luo Qing Qing's brows arched, "Yue Zhong, this isn't like you. No matter what happened in the past, you had never been down at all. Since it's going to be hard to defend for 5 days, why not seize this chance to launch an attack?"

Chapter 923: Counter-Attack!

"Attack?"

When Yue Zhong heard these words, his eyes suddenly lit up, and the fog seemed to clear from his eyes.

Yue Zhong had always been a person who preferred to be on the offensive. However, due to the battle at the Xue Luo Forts being a defensive one, and the numbers of the Dino-Warriors being too many, his mindset had never been on the offensive, since it would mean death.

However, the situation was different now. The Xue Luo Fort had already fallen, with many Dino-Warriors now spread out in Cloud Region to slaughter the humans. No matter how big their numbers, when scattered throughout the vast Cloud Region, it would be impossible to reform and gather into that terrifying army outside the Fort. This was the only chance for the humans to retaliate.

Yue Zhong had just evacuated from the Xue Luo Forts and had always been on the defense. Thus, he had forgotten about the possibility of being on the offense. He was still human, after all, not an omnipotent god.

His eyes had a different glint in them now, and Luo Qing Qing, whose image was already radiant in his eyes, became even more dazzling, "Thank you, truly."

Luo Qing Qing laughed coyly, "I can help to lead a troop and attack those damn lizards."

Yue Zhong's heart immediately relaxed a lot more, "I'll have to trouble you then!", before turning to his communicator, "Bai Yi! Support Luo Qing Qing fully, make sure she gets the resources she needs."

Zheng Yan He was an outstanding defensive general. He knew

the Forts like the back of his hand. As for Luo Qing Qing, she was termed as the Storm Queen, with her heaven-defying talents, she had been born to battle. Her combat abilities were extraordinary, and she adapted best in battle.

She laughed brightly in response, before turning around with a valiant aura and left, leaving Yue Zhong to gaze at her beautiful back.

As the Storm Queen, Luo Qing Qing's position was similar to Yue Zhong, she naturally would not be in a subservient position, unlike his subjects.

Yue Zhong admired her leaving back for a while before his gaze turned resolute, and he left for the outdoor with big strides.

Soon, 4 fully equipped troops of 10,000 men charged out from the capital, galloping for the different parts of Cloud Region.

Although Yue Zhong had rescued over 100,000 elite soldiers from the Xue Luo Fort, most of them had been through many days of the unending assault. They were exhausted and needed the rest.

The capital also required many soldiers to guard, thus, Yue Zhong could only deploy about 40,000 soldiers.

Humans and Dino-Warriors were vastly different. The human soldiers required strict military training over a period of time to produce elite soldiers, whereas the foreign races had combat already in their DNA. The moment they matured, they were powerful warriors already.

Inside a village, where there were only rice and vegetable fields, a number of old farmers were going about their activities, while kids were playing out in the sun. The housewives were sewing clothes for their families, and it had a picturesque feel of a loving and warm village.

All of a sudden, a number of Velociraptor-Warriors jumped out of a forest near the village, their eyes bloodshot.

"What is that?!"

One farmer saw the sudden appearance of the Velociraptor-Warrior and could not help himself but take a step closer.

Inside Cloud Region, due to the hundreds of years of peace, the ordinary people had never seen the foreign races before.

The eyes of the 3 Velociraptor Warriors flashed dangerously. With a single leap, one disappeared from where he was and reappeared in front of the farmer, chomping down viciously.

At that instant, the farmer had huge chunks of flesh torn from him, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

"Ah!!! Monsters!!!"

The rest of the farmers felt their hair stand at this horrific scene and screamed as they fled in various directions.

The rest of the Velociraptors also quickly disappeared and charged right into the village.

Screams soon echoed out, as blood splattered everywhere. The village was soon turned into hell, as the Velociraptor-Warriors tore into the humans.

Outside the village, over hundreds and thousands of Velociraptors were charging for this human village.

The Velociraptor Warriors were naturally smaller in stature and their hind legs powerful, thus their speed was insane. Each time they attacked, it would be in droves and relying on their packs to hunt. They could only use such tactics to keep up with those larger and stronger Tyranno-Warriors.

"Attack!"

A cold order rang out, and immediately, beams of light shot out from various angles, blasting the Velociraptor Warriors.

Faced with this sudden ambush, many Velociraptors screamed out and turned around, intending to pounce towards those

soldiers.

Unfortunately, the relentless beams turned many of them into sieves, their bodies crumpling to the ground.

After paying the price of hundreds of deaths, the remaining Velociraptor Warriors managed to charge into the camp.

At this moment, Luo Qing Qing appeared, decked in her Type 5 Battle Suit, single-handedly charging into their midst with her Battle Spear. Each time her spear lit up, the heads of the Velociraptor Warriors would blow up, fresh blood dying the ground.

Luo Qing Qing was like a valkyrie, standing her ground, and any Velociraptor Warrior that charged at her would be taken down without fail. Not a single one could cross her line.

After half an hour, this unit of 500 Velociraptor Warriors were all wiped out, leaving blood and dismembered corpses all over the ground.

Hai Xi stepped over the dead bodies, reporting, "Your Majesty, there are no more survivors inside the village!"

"Let's go!" Luo Qing Qing sighed, turning around to leave.

Countless soldiers followed, heading for the next point.

At another part of Cloud Region, within the Lei Xi City, there were charred black bodies of Dino-Warriors, as a unit of Mech-Fighters were cleaning up the battlefield.

Yue Zhong stood outside the city, looking at the corpse, frowning deeply. He had led this army of Mech-Fighters to annihilate a 10,000-strong army of Dino-Warriors, but the rest of them were still pushing on slowly on the Capital. There did not seem to be any effect on them. Even with Yue Zhong going on a massacre, it did not affect the main Dino-Army.

If a unit of 10,000 humans were wiped out, it would be a disaster.

But to the alliance of 16 Dino-Kingdoms, that number was nothing.

Emperor Ba Long also did not employ any particularly deep strategy. He just intended to use the sheer force of his military might to push towards the capital. This was a simple but effective tactic. Yue Zhong was already outnumbered, and there was no risk to this particular method.

"No, if this goes on, not to mention 1 day, we can't even drag it out for an hour."

Yue Zhong frowned, and stepped over the blood-red ground, deep in thoughts.

"Oh right! With their numbers, their food consumption must be astronomical. Even with the battle and consuming their comrades' corpses, there has to be some sort of supply."

All of a sudden, Yue Zhong's eyes brightened. His body flashed as he hurried back towards the command center and asked Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, help me check if the Dino-army has some form of logistics support."

Although they had retreated, in order to gain intel, Yue Zhong had released numerous electronic flies and dragonflies as well as other minuscule robotic lifeforms as Bai Yi's eyes and ears throughout the region.

It was because of them that Yue Zhong could accurately grasp the direction with the Dino-army was moving, and avoid their main force, hunting the smaller units.

"Understood!"

Upon receiving Yue Zhong's order, Bai Yi's eyes flashed with data, swiftly performing her calculations.

The numerous robotic lifeforms throughout Cloud Region were quickly activated and flew out to gather the information.

Bai Yi then swiftly projected out a display in front of Yue Zhong,

"We've discovered the location of the logistics."

Yue Zhong saw the display and finally heaved a sigh of relief, "That's great, we can finally cause those buggers some trouble."

With that, the Mech-Fighters immediately moved out under Bai Yi's control, quickly searching for the next target to eliminate.

Bai Yi had her own sentience, and as long as Yue Zhong gave the order, she would be able to control the Mech-Fighters to search for Dino-Warriors to hunt automatically.

If it was not for the necessity to guard the Capital, allowing for a wide-scale evacuation, Yue Zhong would definitely throw all the Mech-Fighters into the fray, and hunt the Dino-Warriors.

About 50km south of the Xue Luo Forts, a number of huge Diplodocuses were dragging mountain-like vehicles behind them. There were 80,000 Velociraptor-Warriors on their mounts riding alongside the procession, eyeing their surroundings warily. This procession was about a few kilometers long, looking extremely ferocious.

There were also 15 Mid-Grade Dino-Generals among them. Out on the field, no other force could possibly be a match for this unit.

As this was at the back of all the forces, and due to their large numbers, the Dino-Warriors could not help but relax a little, without the intention to search.

Behind a sand dune, Yue Zhong looked at the passing army and ordered coldly, "Do it!!"

All of a sudden, clouds of dust rolled by, and 500 tanks escorted by 6,000 soldiers on enhanced motorcycles appeared.

Chapter 924: Annihilating 80,000 Velociraptor Warriors!

The 500 tanks began to fire, with multiple bursts of light. The impact and explosions Dino-Warriors and blasted many of them apart.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

A sharp scream rang out among the Velociraptor Warriors.

The Velociraptors on their mounts did not panic when being attacked. Instead, their eyes turned bloodshot and they urged their mounts forward as they howled out in rage, charging towards the 500 energy tanks.

The difference between these Velociraptor Warriors and humans were that they were ferocious and savage in nature, even when attacked, they would not lose their morale and flee.

The running speed of those Velociraptors was extremely fast, reaching the sound barrier. Even with a Velociraptor Warrior riding on them, their speed exceeded those bulky, energy tanks with their thick hulls and defense.

80,000 Velociraptor Warriors joined hands to launch an assault, such a number was extremely terrifying. The Velociraptor Warriors had claws 30 cm-long, and they could easily tear through the hulls of the energy tanks. Even if there were 500 of them, when faced with these Velociraptor Warriors, their outcome would be being torn apart.

The laser vehicles around the tanks also began to fire out multiple beams, killing numerous Velociraptor Warriors. However, it did little to impede their advance.

Right at this time, Yue Zhong stepped forward in front of everybody. With a thought, he channeled the Summon Tamed Beast skill, and a huge tear appeared in mid-air. The monstrous

Type 5 Mount Tai stepped out, shocking everybody.

The moment Mount Tai appeared, with a huge flick of its powerful and large tail, it swept into the Velociraptor Warriors, directly smashing many of them into meat pulp.

Due to the sudden strike, 2 Type 5 Velociraptor Warriors had not enough time to react from their charge and were thus flattened as well, dying miserable deaths.

After killing over a hundred Dino-Warriors with a single blow, Mount Tai then charged forward. As it galloped, its huge tail would swing from left to right, smashing numerous Dino-Warriors into meat paste.

When the Velociraptor Warriors slammed into Mount Tai's body, they were like eggs smashed against rocks, bursting apart, or being crushed underneath it.

More and more of them were being smashed by Mount Tai, while the remaining that got past it were taken out by the energy tanks and laser mounted vehicles.

One Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior roared out, "Type 5 Mutant Beast!! It is a Type 5 Mutant Beast!! Get some distance and finish it!!"

A single Type 5 Mutant Beast was terrifying enough to wipe out a battalion by itself, but it was not without any weaknesses. Most of the time, it was the lack of intelligence, the other was that huge Type 5 Mutant Beasts usually lost out in the speed department.

"Your chance is over!"

At the moment the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior was preparing to retreat, Yue Zhong appeared right in front of him in all his Type 5 Battle Suit and Dark Dou Qi, sending a powerful punch towards him.

The Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior had no way of sensing Yue Zhong in his Third Order Stealth, and when faced with this sudden

strike, he was caught unprepared, and the fist smashed into his head.

Peng!

Following a loud boom, the head of the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior burst open, fresh blood spraying everywhere. A huge amount of life force entered Yue Zhong's body.

Noting that he had killed the Type 5 Velociraptor with a single hit, Yue Zhong felt excited, "I've truly become stronger once again!!"

Although the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior was one of the weaker Dino-Races, to humans, they were still a frightening existence. Yet, such a freak was killed by Yue Zhong in a hit, thus, he relished in the reality of his enhanced strength.

"Damn human! You dare to kill our men!! I will tear you apart limb from limb!!"

Another Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior roared with rage, and with a tap of his foot, the ground beneath him split. He disappeared from his location, wrapped with white Radiance of Life, as he tried to slash at Yue Zhong.

"Foul creature, scram for me!!"

Yue Zhong channeled his Dark Dou Qi, and with a bellow of rage, his fist shot out like thunder, smashing into the claws of the Type 5 Velociraptor.

With the enhancement of the Fifth Order Dark Dou Qi, Yue Zhong's fist could topple even mountains.

The Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior had the bones in his arm broken at the point of contact, blood flowing down from his shoulder.

He yelped in shock and disbelief, "How is this possible? You're just a human, how can your strength possibly be greater than

mine??"

Among experts of the same realm, humans were considered the weakest. This was common knowledge among the foreign races, and the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior could not believe that he would be at the short end of this exchange.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with a fierce glint, shooting forward and sending another fist at the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior, smashing his head like a watermelon, "Beast, go ask your questions down in hell!!"

With the death of the Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior, another bout of life force flowed into Yue Zhong through the God and Devil Imprint.

Yue Zhong felt like an undefeatable war god now, and he directly charged into the midst of the Velociraptor Warriors and started a massacre.

7 Type 4 Velociraptor Warriors tried to surround Yue Zhong. With a flash of his body, he transformed into a beam of light that shot past the 7 of them. In an instant, their chests all erupted in showers of blood, and their corpses crumpled to the ground.

Another Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior rushed at Yue Zhong with an unresigned fury, unfortunately, in a few breaths, he had been killed with his body mangled, and his Life Force absorbed by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong's speed was truly terrifying, and his speed of killing was even more so. Before the Type 5 Velociraptor Warriors could react, he had already reached most of them and directly obliterated them with his fists.

One on one, Yue Zhong could now easily kill a Type 5 Velociraptor Warrior, however, dealing with 3 of them at the same time would still be dangerous.

Mount Tai continued to rampage through the horde of

Velociraptor Warriors, scattering the army. In the midst of the chaos, Yue Zhong continued to take out the Type 5 Velociraptor Warriors.

After dozens of them had been killed by Yue Zhong, there were no more entities left to threaten the Type 5 Mount Tai. It continued to smash around unhindered, flattening many of the lower-rank Velociraptor Warriors into meat paste.

Behind Mount Tai, the 500 energy tank, as well as the laser mounted vehicles, also blasted out with their weapons, taking out the Velociraptor Warriors at a rapid pace.

At the same time, Mount Tai suddenly let out a powerful roar, which instigated the other Diplodocuses that had been used as carriage beasts to turn on their old masters. They charged right at them, stepping on them and smashing the helpless Velociraptor Warriors with their tails.

The intense battle continued for 3 hours, and the initial 80,000-strong army was reduced to barely a few thousand. The rest of them had been killed.

On Yue Zhong's side, he had lost 20 energy tanks, 500 laser-mounted motorcycles. Mount Tai had also suffered multiple injuries, with claw marks everywhere. However, under its powerful regeneration, the wounds quickly healed.

After wiping out this 80,000-strong army, Yue Zhong came to the huge carriages pulled by those Diplodocuses. He tore off the simple cloth cover from one of them.

Within the carriage, there were multiple stacks of dried Mutant Beast meat. On top of that, there were also thousands of human and other foreign races corpses. Evidently, these were to be used to feed the Mutant Beasts that the Dino-Warriors reared.

Yue Zhong scanned through the supplies carefully, noting many of the corpses had broken limbs and mangled bodies. They were

likely the bodies from the battle at the Xue Luo Forts. These foreign races and vassal forces were merely rations to the cruel Dino-Warriors.

As they opened up the rest, they discovered even more corpses of the foreign races. It was a chilling sight.

"Burn them all."

Under Yue Zhong's orders, the carriages were set on fire, and the huge amount of food supplies were turned to ashes.

Just then, Shao Yun came up to Yue Zhong excitedly, "Leader!! We discovered some things inside the carriages in front!"

"This is a Type 6 nuclei. This is some data?"

After Yue Zhong opened the box, he discovered that there was a Type 6 nuclei within, as well as a memory unit.

Yue Zhong plugged the memory unit into a handheld computer and asked Bai Yi, "This should be something good. Bai Yi, can you scan and tell me what is stored in here?"

Bai Yi's eyes flashed with data before replying swiftly, "There's a blueprint for the design of the human combat suit within. It is an advanced blueprint design from the God and Devil System, and all the combat suits we have seen are simple, crude versions of the original prototype."

"If we can manufacture this advanced Battle Suit according to the designs, it can accept any nuclei of Type 9 and below. However, there's a flaw in the suit. That is, there has to be a suitable user, with at least 80% compatibility. Otherwise, there is no way to utilize the suit in combat."

Chapter 925: The Battle at Imperial Capital!

When Yue Zhong heard this, he frowned, "Compatibility requirements? No wonder it was simplified."

To humans, an equipment that could be manufactured and used on a large scale was the best thing. If there was no way to utilize it, then there was no use in producing a powerful equipment.

Yue Zhong asked Bai Yi, "With our current technology, are we able to manufacture this?"

Bai Yi replied, "If we can bring all the technology back from the capital to Earth, we will be able to produce such an equipment. If we were to use what is available on Earth, then it would take at least 20 years to produce this Battle Suit."

Yue Zhong could not help but be overjoyed at his opportunity to come to the Third World. As long as he could bring them all to Earth successfully, his faction on Earth would gain a huge boon.

"Let's set off, our battle is not yet over!"

Yue Zhong kept the Type 6 nucleus carefully, before leading the army further to attack the reinforcements and back support of the Dino-Army.

About 1,000 km away from the Imperial City in Cloud Region, there was a huge camp set up, within one of the tents, all the upper echelons of the Dino-Army had gathered, facing the tyrannical and oppressive Emperor Ba Long.

One Type 6 Dino-General reported to Emperor Ba Long, "Your Majesty, we have suffered an ambush from the humans, and our back-end has lost over 150,000 soldiers, as well as numerous supplies. Based on the current reserves we have, we can only last for another 3 more days. After that, we will have no more food."

The Dino-Warriors were incredibly savage and ferocious but required a huge amount of food as well. One can only imagine the

food requirement for an army over a million in size.

It was because of this that the Dino-race had prepared for so long and gathered supplies before launching an assault on the Xue Luo Forts, successfully crushing them.

After successfully invading Cloud Region, many of them scattered and began to hunt the humans and other lifeforms in order to lighten the pressure.

Emperor Ba Long replied coldly, "3 days eh? I've been careless. To think the humans would have such guts to attack us."

Another Type 6 Dino-General asked, "Your Majesty, should we stop the advance?"

Emperor Ba Long shook his head and spoke coldly, "Kong Lie Feng, go take your troops and push your vassal forces towards the capital. Kong Yi Xun, Kong Hui, Kong Bao Xian, the 3 of you shall lead 500,000 units back and wipe out those damn humans. Protect our supplies. The rest of the units shall hunt freely for a day."

"Yes!"

Under his orders, the Dino-army mobilized and moved out in different directions.

Near the Xue Luo Fort, there were multiple blazes, as numerous carriages were set aflame and burnt to ashes.

"They've finally moved!" Yue Zhong saw the incoming Dino-army and frowned.

Any number of troops diverted away from the main force to deal with Yue Zhong's supply-hunting troops would mean less pressure at the Capital.

"It's time to retreat as well! Bai Yi!"

Yue Zhong barked out lowly, and the huge Storm Battleship came swooping down.

The hundreds of energy tanks and thousands of laser mounted

vehicles quickly boarded the Battleship.

Soon, the Battleship rose into the air again and made for the direction of the Imperial Capital.

A part of the enemy's forces had been diverted to protect the supplies line. Yue Zhong's objective had been met, he had to refocus his efforts in defending the Capital now. As long as he could hold out for another 3 days, it would be his victory.

Since a huge portion of their resources had been destroyed, the Dino-Warriors on the back end could not sit still any longer. Over hundreds of thousands of Dino-Warriors were already on their way towards the back, led by Type 6 Dino-Generals. If Yue Zhong wanted to defeat the enemy, it would require a painful price.

Outside the Capital, numerous foreign races warriors were charging with bloodlust at the Capital, under the influence of the war drums.

The City Wall of the Capital had been commissioned by Wei Ming Qing, built with countless resources and wealth. Its defense was even more powerful than the Xue Luo Forts. However, due to the civil war, the wall had already suffered some damage. Many areas had been blasted wide open by the energy missiles, and even the Raytheon Cannon had fired a shot at it. Therefore, the defense was much weaker now.

Even so, the City Wall was still equipped with countless automated weapons, as well as Prism Laser Cannons.

Under the relentless attacks of the lasers and cannons, droves of foreign soldiers were blasted apart.

"These are the foreign soldiers that breached the Xue Luo Forts? Truly terrifying! His Majesty and the rest had been battling against these monsters?" On the city wall, Liu Tai looked at all these aggressive monsters that had no care for their own lives and felt a chill in his heart.

If it had been the human race, the moment the casualty rate reached 30%, they would have lost their fighting spirit and morale. However, these vassal forces were different, unless they died in battle, they would be attacking relentlessly.

The battle at the Capital was different from that at the Xue Luo Fort. Among the huge numbers of foreign soldiers, many fearsome Dino-Warriors were mixed in as well.

Each of the Dino-Warriors was wielding human-made electromagnetic cannons, laser guns, and energy weapons to attack. They fired continuously at the automatic defenses.

After the Dino-Warriors breached the 20 Xue Luo Forts, they had looted numerous weapons and equipment from the human corpses and Forts. Having a certain level of intelligence, they swiftly learned how to utilized the weapons and used them against the human soldiers.

Multiple beams fired out from the foreign forces, targeting the automatic weapons on the city wall.

At the same time, from a distance away, some Type 5 expert appeared with powerful-looking bows and arrows, firing out the arrows at the city wall as well.

Numerous Prism Laser Cannons extended out from the city wall, firing out at the Type 5 experts, blowing them up.

Huge droves of Pterosaurs, Archaeopteryx as well as Sinosauroptryx that had grown wings soared through the skies, bearing Dino-Warriors on their backs.

Among them, many of them had the ability to control the wind, and countless wind blades were summoned and shot out at the Prism Laser Cannons.

Under the assault of the wind blades, many of the Prism Laser Cannons were directly smashed and turned into rubble.

At the same time, the Dino-Warriors atop the mounts leaped

down from the skies, directly charging to the top of the city walls, trying to destroy everything.

This time, the Dino-Army were throwing all their forces into the fray from the get go.

Due to their attacks, many of the automatic defenses and Mech-Fighters were destroyed. Even the human soldiers hiding behind cover were not spared, with over 500 casualties.

In the evening, the assault had not yet stopped, braving the hundreds of energy cannons and rocket launchers to mount another volley of attacks.

In front of the capital city wall, the beams illuminated the skies, with rockets and missiles exploding every once in a while. The energy cannons also fired without stop, shooting the aerial beasts down.

Hundreds and thousands of foreign races and Dino-warriors had perished since the start of the battle, with their corpses littered all over the ground in front of the city wall.

The battle continued through the night before daylight finally broke.

Behind their cover, Liu Tai's eyes were bloodshot as he eyed the neverending droves of foreign soldiers and Dino-warriors, and shock filled his heart, "Is this the battle tactic of the Dino-army? Truly fearsome!! His Majesty and the rest had to fend this off for more than a month?! Unbelievable."

After just one day of such a cruel and intense battle, the human soldiers were all exhausted, their mental state stretched. Their combat efficiency also dropped drastically.

Fighting against those monsters, they did not even have a sliver of time to rest. The moment they let up, those foreign soldiers would be able to breach past the fire net and reach the wall, destroying anything they could.

Zheng Yan He was experienced and well-prepared, the moment there was sunlight, he quickly assigned 10,000 new troops to the battlefield, taking over the exhausted ones.

"If things go on like this, we should be able to hold out for 2 days!"

At a high location within the capital, Yue Zhong was wielding his Electromagnetic Cannon, firing and killing Dino-Warriors with every single shot. He eyed the waves of foreign soldiers and heaved a sigh.

As long as they could hold out for another 2 days, then all the citizens of the Imperial City would finish transferring into the 2nd World. At that time, it did not matter if they had to give up the Imperial City.

At the moment that Yue Zhong heaved a sigh of relief, he suddenly heard a sharp howl from the direction of the Dino-Warriors. Instantly, all the Dino-Warriors began to retreat.

Yue Zhong looked at them with suspicion and doubt, "What's going on?"

With the powerful defenses of the Imperial City, if they didn't send out a Type 7 expert, it was impossible to breach the city in 2 days.

Even then, Yue Zhong could utilize the Storm Battleship to fire the Raytheon Cannon to heavily injure the Type 7 expert. However, to think that they actually called for a sudden retreat, Yue Zhong could not help but worry.

Chapter 926: The Seeds of Division!

The Dino-Warriors had not retreated far behind, when there was a movement from their ranks, as they split in the middle.

A number of humans walked out with projectors.

Then, the beams shot out, forming a 10m-tall image of Luo Yi.

Luo Yi spoke loudly, "How do you do people. I'm Luo Yi, the new King of Cloud Country that Emperor Ba Long has kindly appointed. As long as everybody can fulfill Emperor Ba Long's single condition, His Majesty is willing to leave Cloud Region, and sign a peace treaty with us!!"

Luo Yi's voice resounded from the various amplifying equipment, traveling in all directions. All the soldiers within the city heard the words, and everyone jolted.

The Dino-Warriors and their vassal forces were extremely strong, this was something all the human soldiers could see. Any single one of them could tear apart dozens of the humans. Furthermore, humans were naturally fearful of death, hence, they were unwilling to continue fighting.

Luo Yi spoke, "The great Emperor Ba Long has announced, as long as you guys hand over Yue Zhong to him, he will take Yue Zhong and leave with his troops."

"Yue Zhong?!"

"It's His Majesty?"

"..."

Hearing Luo Yi's words, all the soldiers on the city wall felt waves in their hearts. There were even some officers with strange thoughts at this moment.

Within the Capital, most of the guards were not exactly Yue Zhong's subordinates, instead, most of them had been ex-captives

that surrendered. They were naturally not loyal to him.

Luo Yi continued to persuade, "Listen to me everybody, Yue Zhong is a disaster. The moment he came to our Cloud Region, he slaughtered Emperor Wei Ming Qing. Now, he attracted the Dino-Race here. As long as he turns himself in, our Cloud Region would have a future. The great Emperor Ba Long has spoken, as long as you hand over Yue Zhong, everyone can live. If not, after they breach the city, none will be left alive."

Luo Yi barked, "This time, in order to invade Cloud Region, there are a total of 27 Dino-Kingdoms participating. We definitely cannot withstand this. Yue Zhong, if you are a man, you will step out to sacrifice yourself for the sake of..."

Before he could finish, Yue Zhong ordered with a cold look, "Destroy him!"

The Prism Laser Cannons adjusted their aim and in an instant, countless beams shot out, destroying the projector and equipment.

Yue Zhong frowned deeply and sighed, "Shit. I miscalculated. I thought I could buy time. Seems like things are going to become troublesome."

The Dino-race had always viewed humans as livestock to be killed. Any form of resistance was dealt with violently and swiftly. This had forced all the humans to band together to resist them.

Now, they were actually resorting to a government, supporting some humans to form their own faction. By doing this, it would allow some of the weaker-willed people to have a choice in surrendering.

This was a venomous tactic by Emperor Ba Long. By burying the seeds of doubt and division among the humans, when things reached a boiling point, some of them would then cease resisting, some might even raise their weapons against their own kind in order to survive.

After the projectors were destroyed, the human crowd split up, with numerous old people, women, and children carrying sandbags running forward towards the city wall.

"Open the gates!!"

"Save us please!!"

"Help us, please help us!!"

"Open the gates and let us in!!! Aren't we fellow humans?!"

"..."

The humans who were forced towards the gates of the Capital began to scream out as they rushed forward. Each of them was carrying mini amplifiers, their shrill voices broadcasted throughout the city.

Among these weak survivors running forwards, there were some Dino-Warriors mixed in. They were intending to use the humans as shields to launch an attack on the city wall, destroying the automated defenses.

"Beast!!"

"Shameless!! They're too shameless!! These damn beasts!!"

"Damn it! Damn it!!! These motherfuckers!!"

"..."

Within the wall, the human soldiers witnessed this and their eyes turned bloodshot, their fists clenched. They were filled with incomparable grief and indignation but were helpless at the same time.

Facing those frail old people, weak and skinny women, as well as the innocent and immature children, the Iron-Blood Warriors were unable to make a move. They were afraid that if their hands trembled, they might accidentally open fire on them.

On the wall, Yue Zhong's eyes were also bloodshot, his killing

intent soaring through the roof. He sent out a punch at the wall, "Beasts!!"

Although his strength had reached the peak of Type 5, in this situation, there were limitations to what he could do.

Inside the command center, Zheng Yan He looked at the humans out there being treated as cannon fodder and sighed in sadness. His eyes flashed with a momentary pain before they regained their resolution, and he ordered the only logical order they could, "Fire!"

Under Zheng Yan He's order, the energy cannons that had stopped fired out once more. Under that relentless volley, many of the humans and Dino-Warriors alike were blasted into smithereens.

The Mech-Fighters and automated weapons began to fire as well. Countless beams fired upon the group below, killing both the humans and Dino-Warriors.

"Beast!!"

"Flee!!!"

"..."

When the human soldiers saw how their fellow men have blown apart under the merciless firepower, their gazes were filled with sorrow, as they cried out.

It was not because they were not brave, but because they had compassion, and were helpless.

Cloud Region had enjoyed peace for countless years, this battle had opened the eyes of these soldiers to the cruelty of war once again.

In the Dino-Army camp, Emperor Ba Long saw the group of humans and Dino-Warriors obliterated and sighed, "Did we fail? Those humans defending are truly hard to deal with."

If Zheng Yan He had allowed them to get close because of pity or

sympathy, then the Dino-Warriors would be able to clear the city wall with greater ease.

When that happens, Emperor Ba Long would then make use of his overwhelming advantage in numbers to steamroll over the defense.

The intense battle continued for another day, and the exhausted soldiers were swapped out, and another batch of soldiers was deployed in their place.

When those soldiers retreated, Luo Yi's words were also passed around.

Inside a meeting room, the 4 leaders of the Great Clans gathered once more.

Dou Meng spoke softly, "What do you guys think?"

Zhao Zheng had a glint in his eyes, "From Luo Yi's words, we can assume that the target of the Dino-race is only Yue Zhong himself. If he was handed over, then after Emperor Ba Long gets what he wants, he should call off the assault. After all, with their strength, and their combined forces, they should have already wiped us out long ago."

Lu Yi fell silent before suddenly saying, "Shall we take this chance to take out Yue Zhong?"

The moment his words came out, everyone fell silent.

Although it seemed that Yue Zhong had gained control over all the military on the surface, the 4 Great Clans were, after all, long-time snakeheads of these parts. Their roots extended out far and wide. If they were to go all out, it was possible to incite a large-scale rebellion.

Furthermore, there was the situation of the Dino-army invasion, if the 4 Great Clans were to create trouble, their chances of success would not be small.

Dou Meng pondered for a long while, before finally saying, "No. Yue Zhong is too strong. If we were to rebel now, our 4 Great Clans would only perish. Furthermore, the Dino-race are a foreign race, after all, their savagery and viciousness know no boundaries. Who knows if they will keep their word. We should continue to help Yue Zhong and leave this world."

The other 3 heads pondered and in the end, agreed with Dou Meng's suggestion.

With no strange movements from the 4 Great Clans, the rest of the people within the Capital also continued to push forth the migration.

After holding out for an entire day, Yue Zhong then deployed 150,000 Mech-Fighters into the battle, replacing all the human soldiers, while conducting a large-scale evacuation for the human soldiers.

Once all the human soldiers retreated, the Capital was able to hold out for one more day, before being destroyed by the Dino-Army.

The outer city wall then exploded madly, consuming over 20,000 of the Dino-Warriors.

By the time the explosion settled, the Dino-Army swiftly occupied the city and began their hunt for the humans.

After 2 days, Emperor Ba Long appeared in the mysterious valley, staring at the ancient and primordial Gate of Hell with a fixed gaze.

"This is the Gate of Hell!! They have already used this to leave this world!!"

Emperor Ba Long's face fell, as he reached out to grab at the gate.

At the moment his right hand touched the gate, a black energy seeped out from the Gate of Hell and coiled around his right hand.

In an instant, Emperor Ba Long's right hand suddenly seemed to

have passed through 10,000 years, instantly withering, and losing signs of life. In the end, it crumbled into dust.

Emperor Ba Long's face turned, and he quickly retreated backward, looking warily at the Gate of Hell, "The time is not yet ripe! Our race cannot pass through the Gate of Hell yet. However, it's soon. Once it opens, it cannot close. Yue Zhong, I will retrieve your head one day, your God and Devil Imprint will be mine!!"

Chapter 927: Ghost City!

It was bleak everywhere, without any signs of green. The sky was downcast and there was no sunlight. This was the 2nd World.

Ghost City was an important interchange, with the human population reaching 300,000.

At a particular arena within the city, over tens of thousands of people had gathered, their attention fixed on the center of the stage, shouting loudly.

There was a human soldier wielding a huge ax, while facing him was a 3m-tall Irradiated Devil, whose body was covered in boils and sharp, protruding bones.

"Kill him!!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"..."

Inside the arena, the screams and cheers of the people could be heard.

The Irradiated Devil's eyes flashed with a vicious glint. With a tap of his foot, he charged towards the human soldier with a bloodthirsty aura.

The human was like an agile monkey, deftly routing to the side, successfully getting behind the Irradiated Devil. He then swung down viciously on the back of the monster, slicing apart his body, and a huge amount of black blood splattered out from the Irradiated Devil.

With an enraged scream, the boils on his back began to burst, and dark, black pus landed on the face of the human soldier.

The soldier's face was splattered with the pus, and immediately it began to corrode his face, causing multiple sizzling holes.

"Ah!!!"

The human soldier screamed out miserably, his hands grabbing his face as he thrashed about in pain and agony.

At this time, the Irradiated Devil reached out with both hands, grabbing the human soldier, and pulled apart with a burst of strength. The human soldier was torn in two.

Blood and innards spilled out everywhere, looking extremely gory.

"Haha!! Well done!!"

"Trash!! To think I bet on you!!"

"..."

Among the audience, some were screaming excitedly, while others cursed and swore, having bet on the outcome.

Inside the VIP seating, there were a number of men within, as well as 7 or 8 extremely beautiful serving ladies.

Other than the serving girls, there were 6 who were fair and adorable human girls, wearing extremely little.

The beautiful serving girls were seated beside the men, while the 6 adorable little girls were smiling coyly and trying to please one particular young and handsome man.

In his arms, there was a loli with an impressive pair of breasts, and he was holding a glass of fresh blood, eyeing the cruel battlefield below. He laughed coldly, "What an utter disgrace! These humans are truly lowly and despicable creatures. They're even excited at the deaths of their fellow humans. What a sight."

A muscular black man gobbled up a plate full of blood and flesh, as he muttered, "Humans are just our food source. As long as they taste good, it doesn't matter if their behavior is ugly or not."

The blond-haired man laughed lightly and did not say more. At this moment, 2 burly Flesh-Eaters dragged a voluptuous mixed-blood woman with beautiful features, dressed in black leather.

The blond-haired man raised his glass to the woman and laughed, "How do you do, Snowstorm Queen Sima Bing, pleased to meet you here."

Sima Bing was radiating an icy aura as she snorted coldly, "Who are you?"

I'm one of the Saint Clan's Ancestors, Vanetemse."

He laughed lightly, as a powerful pressure that could seemingly kill a person enveloped her Sima Bing.

Sima Bing's face fell as she exclaimed, "What?! Type 5 Ancestor?!"

Under the pressure from Vanetemse, Sima Bing felt suffocated. She was like a frog being stared at by a frog, her entire body plunged in cold.

In the 2nd World, a Type 5 expert was almost invincible. A single one could destroy an entire army. Such a freak was not something a Type 3 expert like Sima Bing could handle.

Vanetemse then spoke in an alluring voice, "Sima Bing, I know that your position among the human resistance is high. As long as you surrender to us, I can help you turn into one of us. At the same time, you will have a breakthrough to the Type 4 realm, with an unlimited lifespan, as well as riches and power."

Sima Bing's expression turned vicious, as she spat a glob of saliva at his face, "Forget about it! I will never join you animals. I'm a human, not a freak like you monsters! Peh!"

Vanetemse's eyes flashed fiercely, and a blood-red beam shot out to disintegrate the saliva.

His face turned dark as he waved his hands, "Bitch, you truly do not know when a toast is offered. Do it!!"

The Flesh-Eater that was grabbing Sima Bing pulled out a red pill and directly squeezed her mouth open, forcing the pill in.

The moment the pill entered her mouth, she felt a strange energy

flowing through her limbs, and her breathing suddenly became haggard.

Sima Bing looked at the savage grinning expression of Vanetemse and gasped, "What did you feed me?!"

He laughed cruelly in response, "Don't you feel that you're a human? I'll not let you be one, you shall be a bitch instead!! Hahahaha!!"

As he laughed cruelly, the expressions of the 6 adorable girls turned ugly, their bodies trembling.

At that moment, 4 Flesh-Eaters brought in 4 huge, black dogs into the box.

The 4 hounds had bloodshot expressions, panting excitedly, evidently having been fed something.

The alluring Sima Bing had a clouded gaze, her eyes filled with an expectant look as she curled up on the ground, breathing raggedly, trying to fight back the effects of the medicine.

Vanetemse laughed out maniacally, "Let us see how this human will copulate with dogs. Performing such perverse and degenerate acts, she dares to claim that she's a human? Haha! Sima Bing, if your comrades were to see your slutty side, what do you think they will feel?"

Vanetemse was an old freak that had survived many years. As a Type 5 Ancestor, his position was high. He had enjoyed and reveled in all that was possible. Furthermore, the innate nature of the evolved zombie traits in him made him more cruel and sadistic.

Under the torment of the medicine, Sima Bing's breathing became even more ragged, and she looked more like a drug abuser in cold turkey treatment, crawling helplessly towards those 4 dogs.

Vanetemse's face was contorted in a savage expression and he laughed twistedly, "Hahahaha!"

The human women within the room all looked away, unwilling to witness the depravity that was about to happen.

At the moment that Sima Bing had reached the dogs, there was a loud blast, and the door to the room was blasted open. A number of blade shadows appeared inside the room, slashing up the 4 Flesh-Eaters and 4 dogs.

In the blink of an eye, their bodies were sliced up into multiple pieces that splattered on the ground.

Yue Zhong stepped in, wielding his Type 4 Flame Blade.

Sima Bing's hands closed in on thin air, and her face flushed further, as her eyes glazed over. She grabbed onto Yue Zhong, curling around him like a snake, moaning out in a manner that could cause one's heart to pump, "Give me!! Give me!! I want it!! Haaah!! Give me!!"

Yue Zhong had been fighting on the frontline these few days, fending off the elite Dino-Warriors. He had not even touched a woman for so long. Seeing Sima Bing in heat, he almost could not control himself as well. However, he was still a warlord, and he chopped down on her neck lightly, causing her to faint.

The commotion at the door had drawn everyone's attention. Seeing the corpses, the women were all filled with fear, but no one screamed.

After all, they had seen plenty of such scenes in this world.

After all, when the cruel Flesh-Eaters and Bloodsuckers went overboard in their fun, they would chop off the heads of the women they toyed with, drinking the blood.

"Yue Zhong! You are Yue Zhong! This is good! We have been searching for you for so long!! Hand over the God and Devil Imprint on you!!"

Vanetemse's eyes lit up when he saw Yue Zhong, laughing out in excitement. He threw the well-developed loli to one side like trash,

before disappearing from where he was and appeared in front of Yue Zhong in the next. He slashed out viciously at his head.

"Trash! Just based on you trash?! Overestimating yourself!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze turned cold, punching out with his fist wrapped in Dark Dou Qi.

The power of the Dark Dou Qi exploded out, causing a huge hole in Vanetemse's body, while Vanetemse himself was sent soaring back into the wall.

Chapter 928: Killing a Type 5 Ancestor!

Seeing this terrifying scene, everyone within the room was stunned. Vanetemse was a Type 5 expert, and he could easily tear apart an RH2 with ease. Such an Overlord-class character was actually heavily injured in one hit, this caused everyone to fall into disbelief.

"How is this possible?! You're just a human, how could you possess a Type 5 Divine Strength?! I don't believe this!!"

Vanetemse roared out in rage as he stepped out from the debris of the wall, his body covered with his Radiance of Life. At that instant, he turned into countless blood-sucking bats and pounced towards Yue Zhong.

As part of the Vampire Clan, their bodies might not be as powerful as the Dino-Race, however, in terms of regenerative ability, speed, and mystical abilities, they were superior.

"Hmph! Scram for me!"

Yue Zhong snorted coldly, his body exuding an aura like a fiendgod. He took a step forward and slashed outward at the bats.

With the flash of his blade, many bats were sliced apart, turning into multiple pieces that fell out of the skies.

When the other bats saw this, they flapped their wings frantically in a bid to flee.

The Bats Transformation skill was a secret defensive measure of the Vampire Clan. As long as a single one escaped, then even if the rest were killed, Vanetemse could resurrect.

Of course, the more bats that were killed, the weaker Vanetemse would be after resurrecting.

"Yue Zhong, go to hell!!"

"..."

Following a roar of rage, the other Type 4 experts of the Flesh-Eater and Vampire Clans acted, dashing towards Yue Zhong. Vanetemse took the chance to flee.

The moment the Type 4 experts acted, a black shadow suddenly appeared, and daggers flashed out.

At that instant, bloody holes appeared in the chests of the experts; their hearts already crushed.

The hearts and heads were the weak points of the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires, the moment they were destroyed, then these Type 4 experts would also become corpses.

"You want to escape? Go to hell!"

Facing the fleeing bats, Yue Zhong sent out his Devil Flame at the various bats. In a flash of fire, the bats were reduced to ash.

In the end, when the last bat was also incinerated, a powerful life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong through the God and Devil Imprint.

Yue Zhong quietly assessed after killing the Type 5 Ancestor casually, "The combat ability of these Vampires truly cannot compare to the Mid-Grade Dino-Generals."

Within the box, all the women and girls stared at Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with shock. They were clear about the might of a Type 5 Ancestor. Such a terrifying freak had actually been obliterated by Yue Zhong in a few moves, where he could not even escape. This was beyond their understanding.

Phantom came up to Yue Zhong's side and asked, "What do we do about these women?"

Yue Zhong glanced at Sima Bing and said, "Bring them out, I have something to do."

Under the aphrodisiac, Sima Bing's eyes were already opened, and her limbs were coiled around Yue Zhong, wriggling

incessantly. Her face was flushed and her body was drenched in perspiration.

Phantom glanced at Yue Zhong silently, before barking coldly at the remaining women, "Go!"

The beautiful women and girls walked out obediently behind Phantom. They had been through the toughest and strictest of training and knew how to follow the orders of the strong.

Yue Zhong also could not hold himself back and kissed Sima Bing.

The moment Sima Bing felt the presence and touch of Yue Zhong, her passion was reignited, and she began to claw at his clothes, kissing him deeply as though her life depended on it.

Both of them became entwined on a huge bed, frantically exploring each other with their hands and mouths.

At the same time that Yue Zhong was enjoying himself with Sima Bing, an army of 10,000 led by Luo Qing Qing invaded Ghost City.

The human soldiers who were equipped with the tech of the 3rd World were almost unstoppable. Many Flesh-Eaters and Vampires appeared, only to be blasted by laser guns and electromagnetic cannons.

The Type 5 experts were rare existences in this 2nd World, with the majority residing within Saint City. Ghost City only had Vanetemse.

In fact, he was only here to wipe out the human resistance, as well as to indulge in his depraved games with the human girls.

Soon, the entire city was brought under Luo Qing Qing's control.

Sun Lan Lan was currently leading a few officials to establish a new government swiftly, transforming Ghost City.

After their throes of passion, Sima Bing laid in Yue Zhong's embrace, gasping slightly. Her snow-white shoulders laid against

his broad chest, her eyes filled with a complicated gaze. She had never expected she would become Yue Zhong's woman like this.

Sima Bing had a favorable impression of Yue Zhong, however, it was a position of respect and reverence, not love. Being thrust in this position was slightly uncomfortable for her.

Yue Zhong felt uncomfortable as well, being stared at by her. He propped her up while running his fingers over her delicate skin, asking, "Why are you here?"

Sima Bing's brows arched, as she snorted coldly and spoke with a slightly resentful tone, "Somebody disappeared, leaving behind a mess for us to clear. The Flesh-Eaters and Vampires had used their all to whittle away at our strength. Many of our brothers and comrades have died! Why didn't you come back slightly later, when we're all dead, wouldn't that be better?"

Yue Zhong frowned and asked, "I remember having made some preparations before I left, everyone was to lie low, how did things become like this?"

Sima Bing sighed softly, "Those Flesh-Eaters and Vampires are truly too vicious. They captured many of our comrades, using them as bait. Many of us could not stand by and watch them be killed, thus they fell for the traps. Many traitors also appeared. I had been sold out by one myself, that was why I was captured and brought here."

Yue Zhong was not a god, and could not possibly plan for everything perfectly. Although he had made preparations, there was no way of ensuring that everyone followed his orders.

The resistance was also made up of humans with flesh and blood, they could not possibly be like puppets and robots that could follow Yue Zhong's orders completely.

Yue Zhong asked, "Are you still able to contact Jess and the rest?"

Sima Bing shook her head, "No! In order to prevent any more

traitors, the moment there's a large-scale movement, other than the top echelon, no one will know where is the next location. Since I've been caught, they would have moved to a location that I do not know of."

Yue Zhong fell silent, before slowly replying, "That's the case eh? Then forget it! Let them come to me themselves!"

Sima Bing suddenly asked with some expectations, "Yue Zhong, are you already a Type 5 Divine Warrior?"

Yue Zhong did not hide it, "That's right, I'm already a Type 5 Divine Warrior."

Sima Bing was slightly indignant, "That's unfair, we were all Type 3 Divine Warriors, why is it only you that could evolve so fast? Are you really blessed and chosen by the gods?"

Yue Zhong kissed her forehead lightly and chuckled, "Maybe!"

After taking down Ghost City, Yue Zhong's forces did not stop, instead, splitting into 6 different units led by Han Qiong, Ma Lei, Shao Yun, Liu Tai, Luo Qing Qing and Han Zi Xuan separately. These units started to invade the surrounding cities.

With their equipment, the nearby cities were all taken down easily, the city guards within annihilated.

The humans that migrated from the 3rd World then shifted into these cities, occupying and somewhat stabilizing themselves.

The 2nd World had suffered much from the nuclear warfare in the past, thus, the environment was much harsher than the 3rd World. Other than the cities, the rest of the outer zones were filled with Irradiated Devils, Savage Ones, Living Corpses, Mutant Beasts as well as the radiation. It was really tough for humans to survive.

Under such circumstances, Yue Zhong could not help but launch assault after assault, taking down the cities.

With the relentless advance of his troops, it was not long before

over 20 cities had been occupied by Yue Zhong.

The number of cities and the speed that they were taken down at finally alarmed Saint City.

Within Saint City, inside the White Tower, a number of Type 5 Ancestors sat on two rows of golden thrones.

At the 4 highest seats, the 4 rare Saint Kings were seated as well.

The gazes of the Type 5 Ancestors all fell upon these Saint Kings.

Saint King Weylan spoke up, "Today, I have summoned everybody here to report something. Yue Zhong has resurfaced, bringing with him a large number of humans. These humans possess weapons that surpassed the technology of this world. They also have countless experts. We have already lost 28 cities."

Chapter 929: 8 Armies!

"What?! How did this happen?! Saint King Weylan, how many forces does Yue Zhong have?"

"Saint King Weylan, how much strength does Yue Zhong possess himself?"

"..."

The countenances of the numerous Type 5 Ancestors all changed, as they could not help but ask.

After the first war with the humans, these Ancestors knew the threat of a person with the God and Devil Imprint. They would either die out fast under various dangerous circumstances or become extremely strong, extremely quickly.

If Yue Zhong were to reach a Type 6 realm, then the entire Saint Clan would be helpless against him. Death would be all that awaited them, or they could consider fleeing to the radiated zones.

Saint King Weylan waved his hands, as a number of alluring women in tight clothing came out, giving out documents to the various Type 5 Ancestors, "This is the information on Yue Zhong's army. Take a look."

They quickly flipped through the information in front of them.

A Type 5 Divine Warrior would have enhancements on every part of their body, most of them just had to take a look and they could easily process the information quickly.

One Type 5 Saint Clan expert scanned through the documents and his face fell, "Who could have expected his strength to grow so explosively. He even managed to recruit other Type 5 experts."

Luo Qing Qing was incredibly powerful, even a peak Type 4 Vampire would be easily pierced to death by her. Those who exchanged clashes with her could immediately tell that she was a

Type 5 expert.

Gu Mu, recognizable with his long plaited ponytail, had a vicious look in his eyes, "That's why, we must kill him! Right before he becomes even more powerful! I recommend for all our forces to be deployed, split into 8 armies, wiping out all those darn humans!"

"I agree!!"

"Same here!! We cannot let him grow, we have to cut off his growth right now!!"

"..."

Killing intent began to pour out of the numerous Type 5 Ancestors. They had all experienced the Sacred War for themselves, and knew how dangerous it was for a person with the God and Devil World to develop.

Saint King Weylan quickly made his decision, "Fine! It's dangerous, we shall activate our forces immediately to wipe out Yue Zhong!"

The moment White Tower made its decision, the entire Saint City became a hubbub of activity.

Countless human soldiers that had been brainwashed by the Saint Clan were activated, donning on their equipment, and formed various units. Under the lead of the various Saint Clan generals, they separated into 8 major armies, marching on towards Ghost City.

Ghost City had already become the temporary capital for Yue Zhong's army, with many humans passing through each day. The total number of residents had already reached 600,000. The city was bustling with activity, and it looked prosperous, a vast difference from when the city was still under the rule of the Saint Clan.

Yue Zhong stood in a tall building, gazing down at the activity below, and could not help but feel a sense of achievement.

A soldier came up to him, reporting, "Your Majesty, someone requests an audience!"

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Who?"

With his current identity, he would not just meet anybody. Within Ghost City, there were already 600,000 people. If everyone wanted to see him, then his time would be wasted on them.

The soldier replied, "Someone called Luo Chen."

"Send them in."

Not long after, 2 men and 2 women entered the room led by the reporting soldier.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across them, his eyes flashing with joy as he stepped forward to hug a little girl with short, blue hair, dressed in military uniform. She was extremely cute, yet interestingly valiant with her attire. "Floxenia!! You're fine!! Thank goodness!"

This beautiful and adorable loli Floxenia had the ability to read minds, and her ability was extremely useful, almost as precious as a White-Silver Grade Treasure of Hope.

The human heart was hard to fathom, and human relationships were tricky and delicate. Yue Zhong had numerous subordinates, however, he did not know who was loyal to him, or who were pawn pieces placed by his enemies. With Floxenia with him, he could control his organization better, preventing any potential dangers from lurking.

Floxenia could sense Yue Zhong's genuine joy accurately, and she leaped into his arms like a docile cat, enjoying his warmth, at the same time, feeling a strong sense of security envelop her. In his embrace, she revealed a bright smile, "Brother Yue Zhong, I've missed you so! How come you only came back now? I missed you so badly!!"

The other pretty woman Lisa saw how Floxenia was behaving,

and her eyeballs nearly popped out.

When Yue Zhong had left, everyone was in anxiety, Floxenia had started to cleanse the organization mercilessly, ousting any traitor or spy that she caught ruthlessly. Under her orders, over 200 people had died. Many of the resistance soldiers were fearful of this little devil, the moment they faced her, their legs would turn to jelly and their backs broke out in perspiration. They did not dare to let their thoughts wander. Only Jess, Luo Chen and Lisa, whose minds were resolute, and had nothing to hide, dared to stay by her side.

If it wasn't for her efforts to cleanse the organization and instill fear, the Resistance would have long since fallen at the pressure of the Saint Clan.

Luo Chen swept the room a glance, before his eyes landed on Yue Zhong, his gaze full of respect, "Leader, you're truly the Saviour of the legends. From a single trip, you actually gained such a powerful force. Truly admirable."

Within the room, there were a total of 8 Type 4 experts, it was truly a force to behold.

After all, before Yue Zhong had joined the Resistance, 8 Type 4 experts were enough to eradicate a large part of the Resistance.

Now, such experts were just Yue Zhong's guards, it was naturally shocking to Luo Chen.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "It's been hard on you during my absence, Luo Chen."

When Yue Zhong had disappeared, the responsibility of leading the Resistance had fallen on Luo Chen's shoulders. He had to support the weight of the organization, pulling strings on multiple fronts, expending much resources and energy.

Luo Chen replied without minding it, "It's what I should do. As long as we can annihilate those damn Flesh-Eaters, I'm willing to

do anything."

Luo Chen's face turned serious, "Oh right, Leader, you guys have conquered 28 cities at one go, it has definitely alerted Saint City. They have already deployed their forces, split out in 8 different directions. The total size should be over a million, and they're marching on to us right now. Leader, please make your due preparations."

The 2nd World and the 3rd World were vastly different. The conditions of the 2nd World were extremely harsh, with numerous radiation zones. The roads were not suitable for large armies to move. Furthermore, humans were different from Dino-Warriors. If they were out on the field, the pressure on the logistics and support was extremely heavy. The deployment of a million troops would require countless more support. Thus, the Saint Clan had no choice but to split them up into 8 armies. Otherwise, the support line would crumble.

Yue Zhong laughed, "I've already known about this for a while. You're right on time, I've something for you to do."

Yue Zhong was also a long-time combatant. After conquering 28 cities, he had immediately deployed his experts to scatter the robotic flies and dragonflies to conduct surveillance. At the same time, he had Type 4 recon officers planted near Saint City. The moment Saint City deployed its army, he had already known about it.

Luo Chen saw how calm Yue Zhong was, and his originally anxious heart grew calm. He trusted Yue Zhong to lead them through this crisis, "Yes, Your Majesty!"

Out in the desolate and vast wilderness, a number of infantry vehicles rolled along, escorted by countless machine gun vehicles, heavy tanks, IFVs, rocket launchers as well as rocket launchers.

In the skies, there were over hundreds of assault helicopters. These assault helicopters were already off the control of a central

computer, piloted manually. Bai Yi had no way of controlling them.

The Saint Clan had known of Yue Zhong as well as the Super A.I. that he controlled, they would not commit the mistake of allowing him control of their troops.

One particular Type 4 Flesh Eater expert roared out with his voice, "Listen up everybody! I shall announce this here, as long as we can conquer Yellow Wood City, the army will be on rest for 5 days. These 5 days, you can do what you like. The first person to invade the city shall be promoted by 3 ranks, as well as conferred the title of nobility. You will also be transformed into one of the Saint Clan, enjoying immortality, riches and power!"

The voice of the Type 4 Flesh Eater spread far and wide, causing the blood of the human soldiers to pump.

The break of military rule meant that these soldiers could do whatever they wanted, including killing, pillaging and raping. Also, by transforming into one of the Saint Clan, they would advance in life, enjoying the pleasures that came with it.

"Kill! Kill!! Kill!!"

"Kill! Kill!! Kill!!"

"..."

Inside the infantry vehicles, the soldiers began to call out like riled up beasts, their morale raised to a high.

The leader of the troop, the Type 5 Vampire Denier nodded with satisfaction, "Very good! Morale can work wonders. This troop will surely go all out to invade Yellow Wood City. A mere Yellow Wood City, how will you stand under the assault of my 150,000-strong army!!"

Chapter 930: Defeating the 8 Armies!

Within a secret command center in a valley, Han Qiong eyed the 150,000-strong army that was wide open, and ordered coldly, "Bunch of fools, attack!!"

The moment she gave the order, countless energy cannons hidden within a forest began to fire.

With a bright burst of light, a number of large white orbs blasted down on the Saint Clan troops, instantly obliterating large patches of them.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

Faced with this sudden assault, the 150,000-strong army was plunged into chaos, the various commanders shouting and hollering.

Denier frowned from within his vehicle, "What the hell is going on?! Damn it, where's the enemy?! Where are they?!"

Currently, there was no visible enemy within the vicinity, and yet, they were being bombarded by volleys of firepower. It nearly caused them to fall apart.

Many of the soldiers turned pale, fleeing in various directions. Even when barked at by their commanders, there was no way of stopping them.

One Vampire came up to Denier, asking anxiously, "Esteemed Ancestor, what do we do now?"

Denier barked, "How the hell should I know? Go find a human commander! Only they know how to command!!"

Denier was a Type 5 expert, but he wasn't versed in the art of war. In the past, he had commanded zombies against humans, with a single order, the horde of zombies would just surge forward, tearing the humans apart without care for their own lives. When

they met with a tough obstacle, he would then step forward and use his might to crush the human resistance. In terms of command, he was clueless.

The Vampire's face turned pale as he answered quickly, "Yes!!", before leaving quickly.

As the Saint Clan troops fell into chaos, 10,000 Mech-Fighters, a hundred energy tanks, 20 Reapers as well as 200 laser anti-air vehicles rolled out onto the battlefield.

The 20 Reapers and 200 laser gun anti-air vehicles had terrifying firepower, under the relentless firing of beams, the assault helicopters in the skies blew up in flames and fell out of the sky.

At the same time, the 100 energy tanks began to fire multiple shots into the Saint Clan troops, causing their own armored vehicles to be blasted apart.

The human troops of the Saint Clan had undergone strict military training before, hence, some of the elite troops still continued to attack.

However, when the ordinary bullets struck those energy tanks, they were deflected off easily, not dealing the slightest bit of damage at all.

Ordinary bullets and heavy caliber bullets were unable to damage the Mech-Fighters as well. Only the cannons could destroy them.

However, their artillery forces had been destroyed together with the assault helicopters in the first instance, making it hard for them to retaliate.

After holding out for a while, the 150,000-strong troop was on the verge of collapse, with pieces of abandoned armor and weapons laying everywhere. Human soldiers were fleeing for their lives, stepping over themselves, and the injury count was too high to boot.

"No running!! Those who flee will be executed!! Fight!! Get back

here and fight!!"

A number of Flesh-Eaters and Vampires began to scream at the fleeing soldiers, as they tore some of them apart, hoping to make an example out of them. It was a cruel and gory sight.

Faced with those threats, the human soldiers were filled with dread, many turned around desperately, rejoining the battle.

However, they were faced with those still swarming from the forefront. They were thus knocked down and stomped over by the stampede.

Once the tides of the battle were not in their favor, it was hard for them to fight back. However, the Vampires and Flesh Eaters were still slaughtering those deserters, to little effect.

One particular Type 4 Flesh Eater had a vicious glint in his eyes. He grabbed hold of a deserter and tore him apart in two, the fresh blood and organs splattering all over himself. His appearance was like that of a bloodthirsty devil, as he roared out, "Damn it!! All you cowards, after we go back, I will turn all your families into slaves!! We will chop off their heads and dig out their hearts to drink their blood!!"

When the human soldiers saw this, many were filled with dread and fear and stopped in their tracks.

At this moment, a dozen electromagnetic beams shot from afar, penetrating the head of the Type 4 Flesh Eater, causing it to burst apart like a watermelon.

The laser and electromagnetic beams shot out, reaping the lives of the various Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. This time, the surge of retreating soldiers could not be held back anymore, and they fled madly.

Denier's temper flared at the sight of the escaping soldiers. He had not expected that the 150,000-strong army of his would crumble just like that, "Fuck!! Damn trash!! Useless trash!! These

humans are all a bunch of trash!!"

Human soldiers and zombies were different. When casualties reached a certain number, other than those with strong faith and training who would stay on to fight, most other humans would despair and value their lives more.

Denier's past strategies of leading zombies were not applicable to the humans.

Furthermore, the army that Yue Zhong had brought over from the 3rd World possessed more powerful technology, it was basically bullying already.

"Damn trash, when I get back, I will definitely gorge on the hearts of a 100 virgins!!"

He cursed out in rage, looking at the battlefield helplessly, before gritting his teeth and hollering, "RETREAT!!"

Under his orders, the remaining thousands of Vampires and Flesh Eaters darted through the battlefield, quickly retreating.

On the battlefield, a large amount of equipment, ammunition, and weapons were left behind.

This leftover equipment and ammunition were enough for Yue Zhong to arm a few units of his troops.

Han Qiong looked at the fleeing Saint Clan army, and her mouth broke into a smile, "These monsters dare to go against us humans in warfare? What a bunch of retard."

At the same moment that the human troops of the Saint City were defeated, a 2,000-strong unit of elites that were armed to the teeth was riding enhanced laser motorcycles quickly joined the battle, chasing after the fleeing soldiers.

The humans ran and cried, throwing away their armor, while many fell.

"Damn flies, come back with me, kill them!!"

Denier saw the motorcycle unit chasing after them, and his eyes flashed with a savage glint. He suddenly turned behind, his body darting and directly charging through the motorcycle unit.

The moment he entered the midst, Denier revealed the frightening might of a Type 5 expert. He turned into a beam of blood that darted through the soldiers. Anywhere that his blood touched, the soldiers would become emaciated and devoid of blood.

The rest of the Type 4 Vampires and Flesh-Eaters were filled with bloodlust as well, pouncing on the motorcycle warriors with ferocity, unleashing a massacre right where they were.

In terms of close combat, ordinary human soldiers were not a match for these Vampires and Flesh-Eaters.

With Denier leading the counterattack, the 2,000 elite motorcycle unit was defeated and forced to retreat.

The ability to turn the tides of a battle was precisely something a Type 5 expert could carry out.

As Denier was rampaging through the elite soldiers, a number of laser-mounted vehicles extended their Prism Laser Cannons from afar.

Denier was suddenly filled with a sense of crisis. Without hesitating, he transformed into over a hundred bats, doing his best to escape from the location.

In an instant, the thick beam of laser shot past their locations, disintegrating hundreds of bats into ashes that fell to the floor.

"The Saint Clan Ancestor is dead!!"

"The Saint Clan Ancestor is dead!!"

"..."

Seeing their Type 5 Ancestor perishing under the lasers, the remaining Vampires and Flesh-Eaters were all shocked. Their

morale dipped drastically, and they began to flee in various directions.

Han Qiong led her army to defeat hundreds of Vampires and Flesh-Eaters, before bringing the troops to capture those captives and collect the loot.

At almost the same time of Han Qiong's attack, Luo Qing Qing, Liu Tai, Liu Du, Han Zi Xuan, Zheng Yan He, Ma Lei, and Shao Yun were all leading their own troops to attack the Saint Army 8 Armies in the various locations as well.

On one hand, there were the human elites who had gone through countless battles, equipped with powerful weapons, on the other, a backward troop with numbers but inexperience.

The Saint Clan's army was accosted on all fronts, losing their weapons as they crumbled within, suffering losses and fleeing soldiers.

Luo Qing Qing also killed one Type 5 Ancestor by herself.

In a single battle, the entire world was shaken.

When Luo Chen knew of all these, he was overjoyed, and his faith was strengthened, "Amazing!! This is truly too overbearing. You're truly as the legends described! Leader Yue Zhong is too powerful."

Sima Bing sucked in a breath of cold air, her gaze complicated when she got wind of the battle report, "What an impressive fellow."

Jess was elated, laughing, "Indeed, the prophecy was right. With him as our leader, our human race would likely rise from the ashes."

The news of the Saint City's defeat at the hands of the Resistance soon traveled through all the cities in the 2nd World. The lowest caste and slaves in the various cities began to get in contact with the Resistance.

The news also naturally traveled to the Saint Clan within the White Tower.

By this time, they were thoroughly shocked, they did not dare to underestimate Yue Zhong further. He was already an existence with enough power on his hands to threaten their very lives.

Chapter 931: Heart of Hope!

Inside Saint City, within the deepest recess of the glorious White Tower, there was a huge lake of blood, formed from the deaths of countless people. It exuded a strange and mysterious aura.

The 4 Saint Kings were currently kneeling in front of the blood lake in reverence.

Saint King Weylan was kowtowing profusely, "Oh Great Saint Emperor, the human with the God and Devil Imprint has reappeared. He had gained a tremendous might from some strange world that is able to deal with our clan. We hope that your esteemed self can come out of your retreat to help us deal with that damn human."

Inside the blood lake, there was the final trump card of the Saint Clan, the only surviving member of the Type 6 Divine Warriors that had taken part in the previous Sacred War.

A Type 6 expert was a truly invincible existence, just one of them could easily annihilate a 10,000-strong army, turning the tides of the battle instantly.

It was precisely due to the Type 6 Saint Emperor that the humans could not defeat the Saint Clan in the previous war.

The moment Weylan's voice landed, the blood lake began to bubble and churn, as a raspy but evil voice sounded out, "I've already spoken clearly. Do not mind that human. The Gate of Hell is about to open soon. Go make your preparations. Once the gates are opened, lead the army to go take over the new world."

"The new world is undergoing transformations and evolving, it is the best place for our clan to evolve. As long as our Clan can conquer that new world, it's not impossible for you guys to become Type 6 existences. We will also become Type 7 existences. By that time, the humans would just be ants, easily crushable beneath our

feet. Go, concentrate on invading the new world. Is that clear? If you guys fail in this, I will definitely rip your tendons and dig your hearts out!"

"Yes!!"

Hearing the threat of the evil voice, the 4 Saint Kings shuddered slightly. They replied respectfully, before quickly making their way out.

"Gates of Hell, open quickly. I'm already sick of waiting, I want to taste the pleasure of tearing those humans apart!"

The blood lake churned once more, as the evil voice filled with killing intent resounded in a quiet whisper.

After Yue Zhong's army defeated the 8 armies of the Saint Clan, at the entrance of Ghost City, there was a bright flash of light, and an archaic and evil-looking Gate of Hell appeared, emitting a powerful pressure.

Inside a study, Yue Zhong was currently hugging Willianna in his left hand, while his right hand held Liu Yi Chen. In front of him, Qi Qing'er was singing in her melodious voice, while the little minx Annie was dancing with barely anything on her. As she danced she kept looking at Yue Zhong coquettishly. Floxenia was currently feeding him pieces of fruits. Looking at this scene, Yue Zhong was truly enjoying himself.

Since he had defeated the Saint Clan's troops, Yue Zhong finally had a hard-earned break.

"Congratulations on completing your mission to survive for an entire year on the 2nd World. You have gained a Treasure of Hope as a reward."

"Congratulations on gaining a Treasure of Hope, The Heart of Hope."

As Yue Zhong was massaging Liu Yi Chen and her silky skin, the 2 notifications rang out in his ears.

At the next moment, the space in front of Yue Zhong twisted and contorted, as a number of bright lights flashed, and a small silverish-white sphere the size of a fist appeared.

Yue Zhong grabbed it and frowned, thinking, "Heart of Hope? What is this treasure capable of?"

Every single Treasure of Hope was a White-Silver Grade Treasure, with shocking abilities. Yue Zhong had been able to win in the numerous hopeless situations precisely because he had the Super A.I. and the Puppet Box. If he did not know how to utilize any of the Treasures fully, the effectiveness would be reduced by more than half.

Yue Zhong pulled out the handheld computer that contained Bai Yi, "Bai Yi, do you know what does this Heart of Hope do?"

Bai Yi swiftly replied, "In my database, there is no information on this Treasure of Hope."

Yue Zhong was helpless when he heard that. He held it up and observed it carefully while thinking to himself, "Heart of Hope. Based on its name, it's likely something to do with the heart. Is it an enhanced human heart? Or an enhanced Mutant Beast heart? From its appearance, it seems to be an easy Treasure to use."

With that thought, he placed it against his own chest. The Heart of Hope remained still, without any reaction.

He continued to ponder quietly, "Seems like it's not for humans, but against Mutant Beasts."

Right at that moment, another notification resounded from the God and Devil System.

"You have already completed the mission to survive, the Gates of Hell will thus open. The Gate of Hell leading to Earth has opened, while the Gate of Hell connecting the 3rd World to Earth will open in 4 months' time. Please head back to Earth to make your preparations. You have 24 hours to settle your affairs, after 24

hours, you will have to head back to Earth to receive your mission."

"From now on, the Gate of Hell will become a gateway between both worlds, the inhabitants of the 2nd World can also make use of it to enter Earth."

When Yue Zhong heard that, he chuckled bitterly and shook his head, "24 hours eh? Truly on a tight schedule."

"Everybody, listen up!"

Yue Zhong quickly pulled out his communicator and notified all his trusted aides. After a round of screening with Floxenia's mind-reading capabilities, he began to announce his background and the news that he had to return to Earth.

Yue Zhong said, "That's how it is. After I leave, I'll leave everything here to Luo Chen, Jess, Floxenia, Han Qiong, Sun Lan Lan, Ma Lei, ... Zheng Yan He, all of you. Make your preparations and find the suitable Gates of Hell to enter Earth. I think that they will appear very soon on this 2nd World, they should be easy to find."

"Yes!"

The upper echelon of Yue Zhong's subordinates all nodded slightly.

After the meeting was dismissed, Floxenia pulled on Yue Zhong's sleeves and spoke pitifully, "Can I go with you? I don't want to leave you, Brother Yue Zhong."

He ruffled her hair and rejected her, "No, Floxenia. They need you here. Furthermore, I have no idea where I'll end up when I go through the Gate of Hell. If I were to appear in a dangerous place, it would be troublesome if even I can't protect you. Once I've gone through, and make sure that nothing is wrong, I'll come back to pick you."

With Yue Zhong's current strength at the Type 5 realm, he was

practically invincible on Earth. However, he had been gone a year. Who knew what Earth had become. While he was evolving, the other biological lifeforms on Earth would be evolving as well. If he came to a lake full of Mutant Beasts, or powerful zombies, then he had no confidence that he could protect Floxenia at all.

Floxenia took the chance to pout, "Fine! But! Brother Yue Zhong, while I'm staying here obediently to root out those spies, once I go over, you must keep me company for a few days! Promise!"

Yue Zhong chuckled and agreed, "Fine!"

Annie, Liu Yi Chen and the other women looked on enviously.

After promising Floxenia, Yue Zhong stood up to walk outside.

As he passed through the city gate of Ghost City, he caught sight of 2 Mech-Fighters. Suddenly, a thought struck him, and he took out the Heart of Hope and placed it against the chest of one of the Mech-Fighters.

The moment the Heart of Hope touched the Mech-Fighter, there was a bright flash of light, and a number of strange engravings came out of the sphere, entering the body of the Mech Fighter before the entire sphere penetrated it mysteriously.

When the Heart of Hope was embedded in the heart of the Mech Fighter, the eyes of the Mech-Fighter flashed, as though it came alive, and it walked up to Yue Zhong, getting down on one knee while replying, "Hello, Master. I am the Heart of Hope."

Yue Zhong glanced at it curiously, "Heart of Hope, what's your ability?"

In response, "I have the ability to greatly strengthen any mechanical life form. I can be inserted into any robots, becoming their hearts, and causing them to become stronger. The highest capacity I can pump out would be 500% of the original robot's fighting capabilities. Depending on the strength of the host robot, I can channel even more power. The stronger the robotic form, the

more devastating my attacks. If you were piloting a mech, I can absorb the energy that you release to transform the Mech-Fighter to become stronger as well."

Yue Zhong then placed his hands on the chest of the Mech-Fighter, "Alright, I got it. Come on out."

With a bright flash, the Heart of Hope soared out from the body of the Mech Fighter, landing back in Yue Zhong's hands.

After losing the Heart of Hope, the Mech-Fighter also lost its signs of life, just like a dead person.

Yue Zhong looked at the sphere in his hands expectantly, "Seems like it's a Treasure to strengthen fighter robots. The frames and damage can become stronger. Right now, the strongest robot I have is a Reaper. Who knows just how strong it can be with the Heart of Hope installed?"

Chapter 932: Korea!

Yue Zhong did not place the Heart of Hope into the Reaper. Instead, he kept it back into his storage ring. He wanted to keep this trump card hidden.

After keeping it, he came to the Gate of Hell and stepped right through it.

The moment Yue Zhong entered the Gate of Hell, it closed shut, and the space around it contorted and twisted before the Gate of Hell disappeared.

Back on Earth, inside a city, the Gate of Hell suddenly appeared. When it opened, Yue Zhong walked out.

As he stepped out, the gate closed shut and disappeared in a blinding fashion.

"Where is this?"

Yue Zhong took a look at the surroundings, discovering that he was in the midst of a zombie-infested city center.

Masses of zombies in tattered clothes and emitting foul, rotting smells, running over in a frenzy to bite him.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Black Tooth Blade, swinging it casually, and the zombies were all turned into slices.

He was already at the peak Type 5 realm, with the strength of an entire regiment by himself. On Earth, other than the nuclear bombs, cloud bombs, or dense missiles, few weapons could actually hurt him. He was already slowly on the path to an invincible state.

"Ah! These zombies have evolved quickly, they're all actually at Level 10."

In exchanging moves with these zombies, Yue Zhong discovered that they had actually evolved to Level 10. They were different from ordinary zombies, as their movements were no longer slow,

instead, they were on par with humans, and their bones were harder, more so than a normal person.

At the initial onset of the apocalypse, all the zombies had brittle bones due to the invasion of the virus. Even an ordinary person could smash their heads easily with a wooden bat. However, now that their bones have evolved to become tougher, if an ordinary person were to use the wooden bat to attack them, he or she would likely die.

Yue Zhong looked at those agile zombies and frowned, "This is going to be troublesome!"

In the past, their main weakness had been their slow movements. It was easy to exploit this to fight against them.

At their current level, if they were to gather into a horde, the threat level would be more than 10 times as dangerous than in the past.

Yue Zhong was extremely worried about his subordinates and women back in China.

Inside the city, although there were numerous evolved zombies hidden, to Yue Zhong, they were ant-like existences right now. He casually slaughtered them while checking out the surroundings.

"It seems like this is Korea!"

He looked around and noticed a few shops with Hangul. As Lu Wen's private tutor, he had watched some dramas together with her and seen such texts. However, he could not read them.

Yue Zhong continued to slaughter along the way, arriving in front of a supermarket.

There were 6 corpses strewn across the ground, and the blood had not even dried. 2 giant L3s were grabbing a body each to munch on them, with bloody meat spurting out of their mouths. It was a gruesome sight. Evidently, someone had set their sights on the supermarket earlier but were torn apart by these creatures.

The 2 L3s could sense the scent of a human in Yue Zhong and flung the corpses in their hands away, walking towards Yue Zhong in great strides. They reached out with their large claws to grab him.

These 2 L3s were over 3m-tall, each of them demon-like, after an entire year of evolution, their speed was already much faster than their past existences, reaching the level of an S2. It would be incredibly difficult for an ordinary Evolver to deal with them.

Yue Zhong waved the Black Tooth Blade casually, and sliced them up, before walking into the supermarket.

"Are these imported food? Let's take some back for Qing Wu and the rest."

When he entered, he began to look for those dried goods that had not expired yet.

Most of the convenience food in China was publicly known to be rubbish, unfit even for the mongrels on the street. Yue Zhong had long since wanted to try some of the food from overseas, and he knew that the ladies back in China would like it if he brought some back.

At a tall 4-storey bungalow about dozens of meters away from the market, 6 men and 2 women saw how Yue Zhong slaughtered his path through the zombies and entered the supermarket. They were filled with shock.

One of the men, of about 27 years, with dyed yellow hair, ear and nose piercings exclaimed, "So powerful! Those L3s were actually sliced apart by him in one move! He must be an Evolver!!"

Another young man with a sallow look and multiple bruises on him, asked timidly, "Hyo Kyung-hyung, shall we ask him for help?"

The moment those words fell, everyone turned silent. Their food reserves were already depleted. Those that had risked their lives to step out were already killed by the L3s. Even so, they were hesitant

about asking someone with unknown origins for help.

Since the apocalypse, morals and ethics had flown out the window. If not careful, they might end up as slaves, or worse, food.

2 years had passed, and with the invasion of nature, there was lesser food each day. Many factions had resorted to cannibalism in order to survive.

Choi Hyo Kyung shot a glance at the 2 women beside who were skinny, but still beautiful at a closer look, "Of course, we have to ask him for help. Get Young Eun and Chae Yeong to sleep with him for a few nights, in exchange for some food. He can kill his way through those zombies easily, he must be a powerful expert. Such an expert would not care about our valuables. Just like how those rich people do not care about the pennies in a beggar's bowl."

The 2 women beside Choi Hyo Kyung were called Jo Young Eun and Park Chae Yeong, and they were model-like beauties before the apocalypse.

During the 2 years since the apocalypse, those women that could stay with men were either beauties, strong, or they had some use to them. Those without use had died miserably.

When the 2 girls heard those words, there was no anger in their eyes, instead, there was a flicker of hope. They had grown used to selling their bodies for money, food and even shelter. As long as they could eat their fill, they did not mind selling their bodies.

Right at this time, the bald, middle-aged man in the group shot Jo Young Eun a lewd glance, speaking to another handsome, young man, "Wait a minute, Choi Jung Won, let me fuck Jo Young Eun once. I've not had her yet. Since you want to send her to that man anyway, let me have my way with her first. She's a slut anyway, there's no difference, right? When I get the rations, I'll give you half."

Choi Jung Won was Jo Young Eun's boyfriend. Before the

apocalypse, he had found out that his girlfriend had been soliciting sex for money, and when he found out, he beat her in a fit of rage. Both parties had not yet broken up when the apocalypse suddenly occurred. During then, he had saved her, but he bore the hatred for her shamelessness, and during their escape, he had been betrayed once by her. Since then, he had no qualms selling her body in exchange for food.

"You want to fuck this bitch?" Choi Jung Won grabbed Jo Young Eun's hair and pulled harshly. Her face contorted in pain, as tears threatened to fall. However, she did not dare to retaliate. It was a pitiful sight.

Choi Jung Won turned to the bald lecher, "Park Jung Yi, 1 jin of rice! If you can take it out, this bitch is yours to fuck. Do you have it?"

Park Jung Yi was enraged, "1 jin of rice?! That bitch is worth 1 jin of rice?! Do you think her pussy is made out of gold?! When I fucked Park Chae Yeong, I only had to pay half a packet of ramen!"

Jo Young Eun's expression was miserable, her tears kept falling. Before the apocalypse, she led a good life, and many officials wanted her, paying her a million won each time. Now, she was barely worth a jin of rice. It was truly a cruel twist of fate.

Choi Jung Won spoke coldly, "If you can't take it out, shut the hell up, damn baldy."

Park Jung Yi became enraged, his heart filled with venomous thoughts, but he suppressed them.

After that little squabble, Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest quickly pulled out a piece of a banner, writing SOS on it.

Yue Zhong swept the supermarket clean of items before exiting.

The moment he stepped out, the group of Koreans started to wave the banner frantically, looking at him with desperation.

Yue Zhong caught sight of the huge banner.

"Strip!!"

Seeing that they got his attention, Choi Hyo Kyung barked at the 2 girls.

Jo Young Eun and Park Chae Yeong quickly took off their clothes, trying their best to attract Yue Zhong's attention.

Yue Zhong smiled slightly and walked over. He had long since discovered their presence, after all, the senses of a Type 5 Divine Warrior could not be underestimated. He needed the human contact, and to gain some intel.

Chapter 933: Gathering Point!

Yue Zhong casually slaughtered the zombies along the way, arriving in front of the bungalow. With a light jump, he managed to leap up to the 4th storey, appearing in front of them.

Seeing how he managed such a feat, Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest were all wide-eyed with shock, "Amazing, he's practically superhuman!"

They were all frogs in a well and had not seen true experts in these 2 years. Yue Zhong's jump of over dozens of meters far surpassed what the record was before the apocalypse. They were naturally shocked.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze across them, "Who knows how to speak Chinese?"

"Chinese!!!"

The Koreans felt their hearts turn cold. There had been a longstanding dislike between both countries, and knowing that this Superman in front of them was Chinese, they felt despair.

"No? Then forget it, you guys can stay here."

Yue Zhong's gaze held a hint of disappointment. He did not know the Korean language, there was no possibility of communication like this. If he could not get any information from them, there was no point in rescuing them.

"Wait a minute!!"

Seeing Yue Zhong turn, Choi Hyo Kyung called out in halting Chinese, before grabbing Park Chae Young and barking gruffly, "Communicate with him quickly!!"

Park Chae Young was currently only in her underwear, and she came up to Yue Zhong, getting on her knees, "Wait a moment, esteemed sir, please wait! I'm Park Chae Young, I know Chinese. I

know Chinese. I also know that all Chinese people are nice and kind, please help us. Please listen to us!!"

Yue Zhong turned around and chuckled, "Not all Chinese people are nice and kind, however, even if your words were meant to compliment, I still feel good. I'm Yue Zhong. Fine, I shall listen to your requests."

Saving these Korean survivors was just a matter of raising his hand. Park Chae Young had put herself down, and spoke respectfully, thus, Yue Zhong did not mind listening.

Park Chae Young continued to maintain a subservient manner, "Sir Yue Zhong, we hope to purchase some food from you. We have not eaten for a week. As long as you give us a packet of ramen, I'm willing to spend a night with you. I know a variety of positions and postures, guaranteed to satisfy you. If you can take out 2 packets of ramen, both Jo Young Eun and I will sleep with you. Prior to the apocalypse, both of us were models. We will definitely satisfy you."

Park Chae Young had only wanted half a packet of ramen in exchange for a night with Park Jung Yi, but when it came to Yue Zhong, the price rose to a packet. It seemed that fleecing foreigners was a norm regardless of country or time period.

Yue Zhong swept Park Chae Young and Park Young Eun a glance, tossing a packet of ramen to her, "I'm not interested in you girls. This is for you. Answer some questions of mine, if I'm satisfied, I will give you more."

Seeing that packet of ramen, Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest went green with envy. They swallowed their saliva a few times. If it was not for Yue Zhong still being in front of them, they would forcefully grab that packet of ramen away from Park Chae Young.

"Damn it!! If only I know how to speak Chinese!! Park Chae Young, this bitch, she isn't even as pretty as me, yet she gained his favor?! If I knew Chinese, that packet of ramen would have been mine!!" Jo Young Eun's eyes flashed with a mad look of jealousy. In

the past, she had felt the same when she saw those rich businessmen throwing 10-carat diamonds to Park Chae Young as though they were nothing.

In the apocalypse, food was the most precious resource, a single packet of ramen could incite a bloodbath.

Park Chae Young smiled excitedly, grabbing the packet tightly. She kowtowed profusely, "Thank you, Sir Yue Zhong!! Thank you!! I will definitely tell you all I know!"

Yue Zhong asked, "Where is this place?"

Park Chae Young replied respectfully, "This is Na Jeon Town near Seoul*. Ah, no! This is Nada Town near Seoul*, about 50km away. If you walk north, you'll reach North Korea, while Seoul is south."

In order to gain Yue Zhong's favor, Park Chae Young actually referred to Seoul as Han City, at the same time, her speech was full of respect and honorifics.

During the apocalypse, in order to live, they did not even mind selling their bodies. As long as they could please the strong, then they would do anything. There were sure to be people even more shameless and thick-skinned than what Park Chae Young was doing now.

Yue Zhong flicked his hands, and another packet of ramen fell in her hands, "Are there any factions in Han City that you know of?"

There would be outstanding characters in every part of the world. Since Yue Zhong could develop his own power in China, it was definitely possible that Korea had their own powerhouses as well.

"My apologies, I do not know about that. Please wait a moment, our leader Choi Hyo Kyung should know about it."

Park Chae Young smiled apologetically and stood up, before coming to Choi Hyo Kyung side and passed the message.

Choi Hyo Kyung was extremely tyrannical when he was with other Koreans, but against this superhuman expert, he was extremely careful, "How do you do, Sir Yue Zhong. I'm Choi Hyo Kyung. Near Seoul, there's a large survivor base, led by the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly. I hope that you can take us there, in return, both Park Chae Young and Jo Young Eun will be gifted to you."

Yue Zhong swept Park Chae Young a glance, "Park Chae Young, Choi Hyo Kyung wants to give you to me, what are your thoughts?"

A glimmer of hope flashed across her eyes, as she quickly got on her knees, "It'll be an honor to serve as Sir Yue Zhong's woman. I'm willing to go with you. I know how to cook, wash, warm the bed, dance, drink, games, please accept me. I eat very little."

Park Chae Young had gotten around in the upper society for a few years, and she knew how to grab hold of opportunities. She was clear that by following this expert, she would not have to go hungry ever again. The threat of death would also be low.

Yue Zhong chuckled, "Alright, I need a translator anyway. Choi Kyo Hyung, I will take you guys to the base then."

Yue Zhong wanted to see for himself the talents of Korea, and know how much they had expanded by and the extent they recovered.

Since it was rare for him to be overseas, Yue Zhong was curious about the styles and development of foreign factions.

Choi Hyo Kyung was elated, and he bowed down, "Thank you, Sir!!"

Yue Zhong then slaughtered his way through town and found a bus that had not yet disintegrated.

The party of Koreans quickly scrambled onto the bus.

The group then proceeded to rumble along the way towards Seoul.

Choi Hyo Kyung looked at the shaking bus and had a look of worry, "Sir Yue Zhong, this bus might not be able to withstand the zombie hordes."

The rest of the group also looked towards Yue Zhong nervously.

In the midst of those zombie hordes, there were numerous L2s that could tear apart buses after their evolution. The moment this ordinary bus entered a horde of them, they would be defenseless.

"Don't worry, I've got it covered. White Bones, kill them all!"

Yue Zhong swept a gaze across the zombies, and with a thought, White Bones appeared out of thin air, its hands wielding a large bone ax, and it charged straight into the horde of zombies.

Soon, countless zombies parts splattered everywhere, clearing a path ahead for the bus.

"Fearsome!! This Chinese is really too powerful!!:

Once again, everybody in the bus was shocked upon seeing White Bones and its massacre of the zombies.

Park Chae Young and Jo Young Eun looked towards Yue Zhong with a bright gleam in their eyes. If they could stick to him, they would be able to survive better in this cruel world where there was no trust between humans.

On the road towards the survivor base, there were many L2s, S2s, L3s and S3s loitering everywhere. While it might be a road of doom to any other ordinary person, it was not a problem for White Bones to kill its way through, carving out a bloody path for the bus.

After 2 hours, the shaky bus finally made it to the largest survivor assembly point near Seoul.

"Halt!!!"

When the bus came rolling near Seoul, 4 fierce-looking militants with guns came out of nowhere to stop them in the middle of the road. They pointed their weapons at the bus.

Yue Zhong frowned and got the bus to come to a stop.

The entire party came down.

When the 4 militants caught sight of Park Chae Young and Jo Young Eun, their eyes flashed with perverse desire, "Women! These 2 aren't too bad!"

Park Chae Young and Jo Young Eun were considered models before the apocalypse. During the apocalypse, while they might have suffered, they were still a tad better than most ordinary ladies. It was easy to stir the lust in those militants.

One of them leered at Park Chae Young and said, "That one is mine!!"

Another pointed at Jo Young Eun and made to grab her, "I want her!! Once we're done with each, we can swap!!"

The remaining 2 militants chuckled and watched the ongoing with interest.

The 2 Korean ladies screamed out.

Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest were silent, watching it all silently. They had already given the 2 ladies to Yue Zhong, they would naturally not care about them.

Yue Zhong swept them a gaze and barked coldly, "Troublesome. White Bones, kill them."

White Bones shot forward, slashing out with its ax in a frenzy.

In an instant, the heads of the 4 militants flew into the sky, their blood splattered everywhere, as their lifeless bodies crumpled to the floor.

"Terrifying, we must not provoke him."

Witnessing this gory scene, the hearts of Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest ran cold, finally seeing for themselves how quick-tempered Yue Zhong was.

*The first Seoul she used is the modern way of calling Seoul. The 2nd was how the Chinese used to refer to Seoul (a more deferential attitude to the Chinese in her manner of speaking)

Chapter 934: Seok Wi Guk!

After killing the 4 militants, Yue Zhong did not seem ruffled by the events, as he continued walking towards the base with big strides.

Park Chae Young stirred, and chased after him swiftly. She needed to stay by his side closely, only then would she survive. Otherwise, based on the character of those militants, they would not have a promising future.

White Bones quietly retrieved the ammunition and weapons from those militants and returned to Yue Zhong's side.

Following Yue Zhong's constant growth, White Bones had been transforming as well. Its current intelligence was not far off from a normal person. While the bullets were useless to both Yue Zhong and itself, to the other humans, it was a precious resource.

Choi Hyo Kyung, spoke up, "What do we do? That Chinese is too ferocious. He actually killed without saying anything."

Yue Zhong had not hesitated in killing those 4 militants. Such measures caused these Koreans to be apprehensive.

Especially since they were not fellow countrymen, it was even more terrifying. After all, in this cruel apocalypse, there were cases of fathers, mothers, sons, and daughters even betraying or backstabbing one another.

Choi Seo Jin's eyes flashed with a glint, as he made a decision, "Follow after him. We'll act according to the situation."

If Choi Hyo Kyung and the rest were to stay outside, a single zombie could kill them all. Only by entering the base would they be able to band together with other humans and live on.

The rest exchanged helpless gazes, before following with wary hearts.

Yue Zhong came in front of the base and swept a glance, noticing that the city wall was about 9m high. There were 5 heavy machine guns installed atop the wall, with 8 soldiers standing guard.

Yue Zhong's slaughter of the 4 militants had been seen by those soldiers, and they raised their weapons to fire at him.

The bullets rained down on Yue Zhong.

The moment the gunshots rang out, Park Chae Young screamed and got down on the ground.

White Bones, who had been standing beside, waved the large bone ax in a whirlwind manner, deflecting all the bullets away. Not a single one managed to hit him.

"I've truly become strong!"

Yue Zhong stared at the incoming bullets and felt invigorated. With his current Type 5 Divine Warrior strength, he could grab the bullets with his bare hands. It was a realm he could not have imagined back when he was in the initial Type 3 realm.

"Evolver!! He's a super Evolver!! Quick, notify the boss!!"

"He's an Evolver, we're not his match!!"

"..."

Seeing White Bones easily deflecting the bullets, all the soldiers panicked and began to shout.

The concept of a super Evolver was basically invincible to these ordinary humans. Only other Enhancers, Evolvers, or armies with advanced technologies could face them.

Amidst the panicked shouts and screams, Yue Zhong pulled out a rifle and began to shoot in controlled bursts.

The heads of the 8 guards instantly burst apart.

The moment they died, the other guards panicked and began to run out of their covers, further into the base.

A super Evolver who could not be injured by bullets or blades was not an existence ordinary humans could deal with. They did not have a suicidal mindset nor willpower. These ordinary people were simply too weak in their combat strength.

Yue Zhong looked at the fleeing humans and frowned, "Strange, why is their combat strength so weak, how did they manage to recapture Seoul?"

He had to utilize a nuclear bomb back when he was trying to conquer China's capital. He had even deployed all his forces, pushing all logistics and support into the battle.

Seoul was a large capital, with a dense population. It should have been hard to conquer. Yue Zhong could not understand why these weak militants were able to capture Seoul.

A name suddenly popped up in his mind, "Don't tell me... The Kingdom of God?"

On Earth, only the Kingdom of God could possibly have lent their troops to help a weak faction take over their capitals. Even Yue Zhong had not been able to do it prior to entering the 2nd World.

When he stepped into the survivor base, he could see panicking people everywhere, hiding in their rooms and homes, assessing him cautiously.

At a street in the distance, a burly man full of muscles and a hideous expression was walking over in black suits. He was exuding an aura of an unshakeable tower, leading 30 other men in similar black suits as though they were in an underground triad. However, they were all wielding Mutant Beast Claws fashioned into blades as weapons.

This burly man stared fixedly at Yue Zhong, his muscles taut as he asked, "I'm Seok Wi Guk, who are you? Why did you come here and kill our men?"

Park Chae Young quickly translated the words to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong responded, "I'm Yue Zhong. It's getting late, I wanted to come in to rest for a night. Your men attacked me first. I retaliated in self-defense."

"Chinese!!"

Hearing Yue Zhong's Chinese, the faces of Seok Wi Guk and the 30 bodyguards fell. Some of them began to exude killing intent, pulling out their weapons.

Seok Wi Guk's eyes flashed and he barked, "Stop! Don't move! Keep your weapons."

The dozens of bodyguards kept their weapons unwillingly, staring at Yue Zhong coldly, as though there was some irreconcilable enmity.

Yue Zhong took note of these little details, but his face remained impassive, "Seems like they're not friendly to the Chinese."

Seok Wi Guk then put on a warm expression as he invited Yue Zhong with a smile, "So it's a friend from China. Please come with me. Let me host you properly, and feel the passion and hospitality of us Koreans."

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Fine."

"Please."

Under Seok Wi Guk's lead, Yue Zhong and his party came to a villa that had a single door and garden.

The moment they entered the living room, Seok Wi Guk clapped his hands lightly, and a number of serving maids dressed in light, see-through clothing entered.

He took one of the beautiful maids into his arms, running his hands all over her body, while he smiled at Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, feel free to choose any that you like. Their skills are decent, and beautiful as well. I can guarantee that you will be satisfied."

Yue Zhong swept a glance and noted that they were truly

beautiful and fair. They were clean and considered rare beauties in this apocalypse. Compared to Park Chae Young and Jo Young Eun, they were incredibly good-looking.

Park Chae Young looked at these girls with a hint of envy. Her beauty prior to the apocalypse was comparable to them, but her current situation was vastly different.

Yue Zhong waved his hands to dismiss the ladies that crowded around him and spoke directly, "I'm not interested. Seok Wi Guk, tomorrow, I'm intending to enter Han City. I want to know the situation within."

"Han City? Seoul?" Seok Wi Guk was taken aback but recovered quickly. A hint of fury flashed past his eyes, but he suppressed it and replied, "Seoul is currently in turmoil, without multiple factions fighting within. The 3 strongest factions are the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly, The Republic of Korea and the United Republic of Korea. The president of the 3 are Choi Won Wang, Kim Park Chan, and Ju Joon Ho respectively, and they are all super Evolvers. They are the future hope of our Korea."

When he finished, he then spoke passionately to Yue Zhong, "Come, let's dig in, these are specially made from the Type 2 Mutant Black-Scaled Fish. They're good when fresh. Eat more!"

Type 2 Mutant Beasts were difficult for ordinary humans to kill. It was truly not easy for Seok Wi Guk and his men to obtain such meat.

Yue Zhong reached out to take a few pieces into his mouth.

Seok Wi Guk watched this and his eyes flashed with a hint of glee, however, he continued to push, "Come, come, come! Yue Zhong, this is an '83 Lafite. It's a good wine. Let's cheers, and celebrate our friendship!"

Yue Zhong took up the glass wine when suddenly, his features contorted. His hands went limp, and the wine glass dropped to the

ground. His body crumpled over the table. There was a look of shock on his face, as he gritted his teeth to ask, "You've poisoned the food! Why?? Why??"

Seok Wi Guk saw Yue Zhong's state, and his expression finally became sinister, "Hahaha!! Yue Zhong, you pathetic fool. In your Chinese sayings, I believe there's one: There's a road to heaven that you did not choose, instead, you chose to come to hell. I, Seok Wi Guk, hate you Chinese dogs the most! If it wasn't for you guys, our Korea would have accomplished so much!! You folks dare to come onto our land and snatch our jobs, you deserve death!! Men, bring the women over!!"

When he finished speaking, 6 women were dragged into the hall. There were looks of fear on their faces.

Seok Wi Guk pointed at them and laughed savagely, "See this? Those 3 women are lowly bitches from your China! They dared to come over to seduce our Korean men, and pollute our pure Korean blood! Damnable bitches!"

Chapter 935: Killing Seok Wi Guk!

Seo Wi Guk laughed savagely, "These 6 women are mother and daughter pairs, polluting our pure Korean blood. Today, in front of you, a Chinese peak expert, I will fuck them!! Hahahaha!! Yoo Min Hee, crawl over with your daughter! This senior will fuck you to death!"

One of the mature ladies lost color in her face, getting on her knees as she pleaded, "Sir, Sir, I'm Korean, I've already been registered in the Korean Registry, I'm a Korean!! Please let us off!!"

Seok Wi Guk's eyebrows furrowed, as he lashed out with a vicious kick, sending her sprawling to the ground, "Bitch! I'm not interested anymore! You guys have your fun!!"

The guards erupted in cheers, laughing lewdly as they took off their pants, and held the Yoo Min Hee mother-daughter pair in place as they started to pound them.

As Yoo Min Hee was being raped, pain, despair, and anguish flashed past her face. Before the apocalypse, she was a beautiful woman, and her name was Liu Min Xi back in China. She even had plenty of suitors. However, she had married into Korea because of her dreams of having a Prince Charming from the dramas that she watched. When she came over, she realized that it was not all rainbows and flowers after all.

In Korea, while there were those who had no qualms against the Chinese, there were others who were antagonistic towards them. After the world changed, those who were originally from China began to face ostracization, and she had tasted her fair share of cruelty and unfairness.

"If only I didn't migrate. I'm sorry... if only I didn't give birth to you..."

In her despair, the already weakened Yoo Min Hee began to take

her last few breaths. As she passed, her eyes were still looking apologetically at her daughter who was also being raped.

"I'm a bitch. I'm a slut. Mi, come over, we are 2 shameless bitches. Let's crawl over to Master. Ruff, ruff, ruff!"

Another lady with an impressive chest and exquisite features got on the ground, revealing a coy expression, aiming to please. She brought her 17-year-old daughter as they crawled over towards Seok Wi Guk. As they crawled, they barked. She just wanted to live on, as for her dignity and pride, she was willing to throw it all away. She had already given up on all those when the apocalypse happened.

Seok Wi Guk laughed out maniacally, grabbing Gao Mei's hair, like tugging on a leash, "Hahaha!! See this? Yue Zhong? This is a shameless bitch of your China! They had come to our Korea and dirtied our precious blood!! Giving birth to such a slut!! Speak for yourself, are you a slut? Are you?!"

Gao Mei had a look of pain, with tears streaming down her face, "I'm a slut! I'm a bitch! Don't hit me! It hurts!!"

"Hahaha!!" Seok Wi Guk became even more excited. Humiliating the fellow countrymen of this Chinese expert was pleasurable to him. He wanted to savor Yue Zhong's despair and anguish.

Seok Wi Guk turned around and shot a look at the last mother-daughter pair who were huddled together in fear, and leered at them, "Zhao Xi, Jung Ri Soo, you 2 bitches better get over here as well!! This senior wants to fuck the 2 of you!!"

The beautiful Zhao Xi hugged her 16-year-old daughter Jung Ri Soo tightly, her face full of rage as she spat, "Peh! Seok Wi Guk, you damn beast. Ugly, nationalistic pig of Korea! Ri Soo and I are human beings, not some dogs! You will definitely die a wretched death!! Sang Jong will definitely come and save us!! When he does, it will be your death!!"

Seok Wi Guk's face twisted in a strange manner, as he laughed out excitedly, before clapping his hands, "Jung Sang Jong? Hehe, let's hear his opinion then. Bring him in!!"

One fashionably dressed man walked in under the escort of a soldier. He was tall and handsome.

"Sang Jong-gun!"

"Father!!"

Seeing the middle-aged man, Zhao Xi and Jung Ri Soo cried out.

Jung Sang Jong came up to Seok Wi Guk with a fawning expression, "Seok Wi Guk-nim, you were looking for me?"

Seok Wi Guk shot him a cold glance, "I want to fuck your wife and daughter, any opinions?"

Jung Sang Jong had a toady smile, his words sharp and cut the hearts of Zhao Xi and Jung Ri Soo, "Wife? That woman is just a greedy slut from China who's after my money. The daughter that she gave birth to also has that lowly Chinese blood, contaminating the noble Korean blood in my veins. I've already long since grown sick of them. Seok Wi Guk-nim, go ahead if you want to, I have no objections.

Seok Wi Guk laughed out maniacally, and sent Gao Mei aside with a kick, "Hahaha! Well said!! You can have fun with these 2 then!"

"Thank you, Sir!! Thank you for your generosity, Sir!!"

Jung Sang Jong was delighted, and his face wore a perverse smile as he took off his pants.

Zhao Xi felt as though something in her heart broke apart. She trembled uncontrollably, cursing Jung Sang Jong, "Jung Sang Jong you beast!! You're not human!!"

In response, his face turned ugly as he cursed back, "Damn Chinese bitch, I'm a noble Korean! Watch your mouth, otherwise,

I'll break your face, 2 shameless bitches!!"

Seeing his cruel outburst without regard for their familial ties, Zhao Xi and Jung Ri Soo started crying tears of despair. Their only family had abandoned them, there was no one left for them to rely on.

Seok Wi Guk roared with laughter as he enjoyed the scene, "Hahaha!! Hahaha!! Bitches, crawl over, otherwise, I'll throw you to those refugees and see how they toy with you till your death. Since they're lacking food, who knows, after your deaths, they will eat you up!! You can choose to be my bitches, I can feed you guys!! Still not crawling?! Seeking death?!"

His words were like a thunderbolt that struck the 2 of them, causing further despair and helplessness. They knew full well that he would do what he said. The moment they ended up at the hands of those hungry refugees, they would definitely be raped, killed, and eaten.

"Is it very funny? Seems like you like to raise humans as dogs. I, too, like that. You can be my dog then. Crawl over and lick my shoes, Seok Wi Guk!"

Right at this moment, a cold voice sounded out from behind him.

Seok Wi Guk felt his heart run cold, and he snapped his head back. When he saw who it was, he retreated a few steps uncontrollably, his face full of shock, "How is this possible?! I've administered the Spirit Confusion Grass. It can cause even super Evolvers to lose their strength! How is it that you're ok?!"

In front of his eyes, Yue Zhong, who should have been immobile and weak, had stood up.

"I've already known you guys were off. How the hell would I eat your food?"

Yue Zhong then spat out a piece of fish meat wrapped in Dark Dou Qi.

"Since you're not dead, let me send you on your way!! Everybody!! Attack!!"

Seok Wi Guk's eyes flashed with a savage glint, as he waved his hands, and a freezing energy enveloped Yue Zhong. He was a Spirit-based Evolver, his level 60. This freezing energy was enough to freeze an armored vehicle.

The soldiers who were toying with the women also swiftly got up, reaching for their weapons and activating their powers at Yue Zhong, without even wearing their pants.

"Bunch of trash, die!!"

There was a gleam in his eyes, as he took a step forward, disappearing from his position. He then slapped out at Seok Wi Guk.

There was a look of fear and despair in his eyes. Before he could speak, his head was already separated away from his body, smashing into a wall in a shower of blood and meat.

After killing Seok Wi Guk, Yue Zhong's fists shot out like meteors, blasting the bodies of the soldiers. His terrifying strength exploded out and the hearts of the soldiers burst open.

In barely a breath, all the experts within the hall had been slaughtered cleanly by Yue Zhong.

"Strong!! He's too strong!!"

Park Chae Young and the other women looked at Yue Zhong with fear and respect. In their eyes, Seok Wi Guk was like a demon, but he had barely lasted a moment in front of Yue Zhong. The might of Yue Zhong was thus etched deep in their heart.

"Don't kill me!! Don't kill me!! Please, I'm begging you, I'm a dog, spare me!! Spare me!!"

The arrogant Jung Sang Jong had been frightened to the point that he had pissed his pants. He kneeled on the floor and began

kowtowing.

This Jung Sang Jong was practically dogshit, in order to leave, he was willing to do anything.

Yue Zhong shot him a disdainful look and took a step forward. He did not mind killing this sort of trash.

At this moment, Zhao Xi suddenly spoke in Chinese, "Sir, please, show him mercy, and let him off."

Yue Zhong glanced at her with an incredulous look, "You're still begging on behalf of this animal?"

Zhao Xi's eyes flashed with hurt, as she gritted her teeth, "Sir, he might not be good, but I cannot go against my morals. He is the father of my daughter, and I don't want him to die in front of his child."

Chapter 936: Beautiful Jung Ri Soo!

"Foolish woman. Since you've asked for it, I shall spare his life. Just don't regret it in the future." He then swept a cold glance at Jung Sang Jong, "Still not scamming?"

The spineless coward quickly scrambled out, "Yes! Yes! Yes!! I'm running right now, right now!!"

Zhao Xi held her daughter's hands and came up to Yue Zhong, "Thank you, Sir. I have another presumptuous request to ask of you. I hope that you will agree."

Yue Zhong waved his hands and pulled out an assault rifle and 5 magazines out to throw to them, "Since you know it's presumptuous, don't ask. I won't promise you anything. Since you still have your backbone, take this gift."

Zhao Xi's performance had shown that she still held on to her pride and dignity. Although Yue Zhong was not exactly fond of those countrymen that married out, on account that she stood up for herself, he was willing to provide them with an insurance. A single rifle and 5 magazines were decent assets in this world. In terms of exchange, they could be used to change for rations that might last for a few months.

As for Yoo Min Hee, Gao Mei, and another one who barely survived, Yue Zhong did not even feel like looking at them.

If it had been within the country, in order to help his motherland thrive, Yue Zhong would be willing to lend them a hand. However, he had no such thoughts abroad.

Zhao Xi heard that tone, and her eyes dimmed slightly. She had wanted to ask him to protect her and her daughter on their way out. However, It seemed that he already knew what she wanted to ask, and her words were stuck in her throat.

Zhao Xi swiftly grabbed those weapons, and thanked him,

"Thank you, Sir. If there's a next life, I will repay your kindness."

"Next life?"

He did not believe in that, he only believed in the present. He did not place her words to heart and swept a glance outside.

Outside the hall, 20 gun-wielding militants had suddenly appeared. They let out ugly roars to suppress their fears and charged right for the hall while firing madly.

As the rain of bullets fell upon the hall, it shattered countless glass pieces.

Yoo Min Hee's daughter was caught in the fire and fell in a pool of her blood, moaning in agony.

The rest of the women screamed out shrilly, getting down on the floor while trembling.

"Since you guys have come seeking death, let me send you on your way!"

Yue Zhong sauntered through the rain of bullets, pulling out his Black Tooth Blade and slashed out. All the incoming bullets were immediately deflected away.

"Freak! He's a monster."

Seeing this, the militants all screamed out. A human's speed that was faster than bullets, and could deflect them, was way beyond their understanding.

"Don't be afraid!! Use our hand grenades!! Blast him to death!" One militant screamed out frantically as he pulled out a grenade.

In a flash of the blade, the militant's head soared through the sky, with fresh blood spurting everywhere.

Yue Zhong's figure had already appeared in place of the militant.

"Retreat!!"

"Ah!! Help!!"

"..."

When the militants saw how Yue Zhong disappeared and reappeared mysteriously, their eyes flashed with fear and despair, quickly turning around to flee for their lives.

Yue Zhong's gaze was cold. With a single step, he disappeared from his location.

In an instant, the various fleeing militants began to split apart mysteriously, fresh blood splattering everywhere. Over 20 militants had been dealt with by Yue Zhong within a second.

Type 5 Divine Warriors were tyrannical. On this Earth, it was hard for anyone to stand up to an existence like that.

After the slaughter, Yue Zhong sauntered through the town, killing anyone who tried to take advantage of the chaos.

However, many of them fled in fear towards Seoul, and few stayed behind.

"This is truly incomparable with the mainland. It's too inconvenient."

Yue Zhong frowned as he watched the Korean survivors flee. After killing those human scums like Seok Wi Guk and his men, it would be easy to recruit a few new management people to maintain peace and security. However, due to the language barrier, it was hard to recruit anybody.

After killing everyone, Yue Zhong went back into the villa.

Inside, Gao Mei and her daughter had already vanished, while Jo Young Eun had seized the opportunity to flee. Only Park Chae Young and the Zhao Xi mother-daughter pair were still there.

Yue Zhong turned to Zhao Xi and frowned, "Why haven't you guys left?"

Zhao Xi immediately got down on her knees, begging profusely, "Sir, please take us along! I can be your translator, and even warm

your bed if you need me to. I can cook, wash the bowls, anything. Anything at all. All I ask is that you protect us along the journey, please."

In this apocalypse, it was hard for beautiful women like them to survive on their own. Not to mention when they were overseas.

Zhao Xi was just an ordinary woman. Even if she had weapons, it was hard for her to protect herself and her daughter Jung Ri Soo. The moment they lacked Yue Zhong's protection, their fates would be worse than dogs. Zhao Xi could only beg to stay by Yue Zhong's side to protect her daughter.

When Park Chae Young heard those pleas, she became frantic. She knew her only value was being a translator. That was why Yue Zhong had kept her with him. If Yue Zhong accepted Zhao Xi, her position would be threatened.

"Translating eh?" Yue Zhong glanced at Park Chae Young, sighing deeply, "Alright fine, I can take the two of you. However, if your performance is not acceptable, don't blame me for chasing you away."

A look of joy flashed across Zhao Xi's eyes, and she quickly kowtowed together with Jung Ri Soo, "Thank you, sir!! Thank you!!"

"Grab a bite, settle your belongings. I'm going to take a rest."

With a wave of his hand, a few biscuits and a bottle of mineral water appeared in front of them.

"These are dried biscuits! He is really loaded, I've made the right choice."

Zhao Xi received the food and was filled with excitement. After the apocalypse, they had been gone without food for days. Dried biscuits were not something they could afford.

Jung Ri Soo tore open the packaging and began to wolf down the food. As she ate, her eyes gleamed with a strange glint.

Yue Zhong came to a room and immediately fell asleep. Even though he was a Type 5 Divine Warrior, able to battle 3 days and nights without sleeping, he wanted to maintain the habit of having a sleep, to keep his Spirit and Stamina at their peak condition.

A small figure quietly came to his room, burrowing into his blankets.

Yue Zhong felt the lithe body snuggling against his own, while a small hand was fumbling around with his pants.

He opened his eyes, only to discover the pretty Jung Ri Soo stark naked in front of him, giving off an alluring feel.

Jung Ri Soo was slightly embarrassed, however, she spoke with broken Chinese, "Uncle, I'm Jung Ri Soo. I like you, and I want to be your woman. Let's do it."

After that, she directly lowered her head to kiss him deeply on the lips, her tongue flicking around in his mouth.

He felt the youthful energy from this beautiful Korean teen and responded passionately.

Soon, when their lips parted, there was a deep flush on her face, as well as her fair skin.

Jung Ri Soo flicked her long, black hair back, smiling shyly, before lowering her head to Yue Zhong's ear and spoke in an incredibly charming voice, "Uncle, I know you Chinese men like virgins. I'm a virgin, furthermore, I was the school belle in the past, and many handsome men have tried chasing me, but I've ignored them. I only like you. I'm all natural too, never done any surgery before. Come and take me, I'll be your lovable slave and a little bitch."

Yue Zhong cupped her cheek gently and chuckled, "You little minx, you dare to try and seduce me? Let me see how charming you can get then."

Jung Ri Soo smiled back coyishly, before diving back under the

cover. Pulling her hair back, she lowered her head towards his member.

Inside the room, it was springtime for the two of them, accompanied by loud moans.

"That was Ri Soo." Outside the room, Zhao Xi heard the sounds, and her eyes flashed with a complicated look, "I guess it's fine then. Like this, our safety is assured. He doesn't seem to be an evil person. But what if he wants me to sleep with him too? What should I do?"

Soon, Park Chae Young also came to the room, and listened to the passionate moans inside with envy, "If only it were me inside. With him protecting me, I can live a better life."

Chapter 937: Mechanical Enhancement!

After the storm had passed, Jung Ri Soo laid in Yue Zhong's embrace like a docile lamb. She hugged him tightly as though he was her most precious lover.

She whispered in his ear, "I'm yours. If you were to abandon me, I'll die in front of you."

"I know."

Yue Zhong chuckled, and slapped her butt, causing it to bounce.

"Mm, so naughty." She laughed coquettishly, lightly throwing a fist at his chest. She then asked, "Uncle, how about getting my mum to serve you together with me?"

"What's in your head?!"

Yue Zhong's brows arched and slapped her butt once more. He truly did not understand what went on in the minds of teenage girls.

"Ah! Ah~~! Ah, stop, please, stop~!"

Her face flushed red, as she let out moans that could cause hearts to race, having an expression as though she enjoyed it.

After he stopped, she gasped a little for breath, before turning to Yue Zhong and giggling, "Uncle, I'll let you in on a little secret. Actually, I'm also an Evolver too, I have an ability."

Yue Zhong let his hands roam all over her body, asking casually, "Oh, what might that be?"

The mother-daughter pair had been unfortunate, captured by Seok Wi Guk and his bunch of cronies, it was likely that her ability was not anything spectacular.

As a Type 5 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong had seen his fair share of abilities. Other than Floxenia's mind-reading ability, or any of those mysterious skills, he did not really care about the other

skills.

Jung Ri Soo declared confidently, "My ability is called Mechanical Enhancement. It can help any current mechanical construct become stronger. A handgun, under my ability, can be evolved into a revolver, and bullets that have been evolved can destroy even a small vehicle."

"Oh, so powerful? Enhance something, let me see!"

Yue Zhong was excited when he heard it. With a flick of his hand, he pulled out a handgun and 2 bullets from the Storage Ring and handed it to Jung Ri Soo.

Jung Ri Soo took the gun, and her eyes focused while her hands glowed with a white light. When the handgun was enveloped by the light, it began to transform, and the muzzle actually changed into a 25mm revolver that could store 6 rounds.

After that enhancement, her body was slick with perspiration. It was apparent that the skill consumed a lot of her Stamina, and she was gasping for breath. She frowned slightly, as she did not want to disappoint Yue Zhong. Gritting her teeth, she continued to channel her ability onto the 2 bullets, transforming them.

After the evolution was complete, she handed them to Yue Zhong, "It's done!"

Yue Zhong loaded the bullets and fired once at the wall.

Hong!

When the enhanced bullet slammed into the wall, it directly caused a large hole.

He was filled with joy, and he lowered his head to kiss her pale face, "Ri Soo, well done!! Your ability is amazing!"

Jung Ri Soo's ability was extremely useful to Yue Zhong.

She was also excited, and smiled brightly, "Hehe!"

Yue Zhong then handed her an Evolving Liquid, "This is an

Evolving Liquid, upon consuming it, you can raise your strength."

She nodded gently, "En.", before consuming it in one gulp.

Jung Ri Soo was a smart girl that knew how to play her cards. She knew that right now, she and her mother could only rely on Yue Zhong. Should they be abandoned, their fates would be cruel. Therefore, she wanted to make Yue Zhong happy.

Inside Seoul, within a lavish nightclub, where the lights were bright and the music was loud, many beautiful women were dancing on poles, doing stripteases and other provocative dances.

Inside the nightclub, there was a VIP box, where a burly man in a suit, with a weathered face, held a glass of wine in his hands, while 2 sexy beauties sat on either side of him. Behind him were many other men in dark glasses and black suits as well.

This coarse-looking middle-aged man looked at Park Jung Yi kneeling in front of him, speaking coldly, "You said that there's a Chinese superhuman that can stop bullets?"

Park Jung Yi nodded profusely and stammered, "Yes! President, that man is called Yue Zhong. He can stop bullets, he also has a subordinate who could do the same!"

This man in front of Park Jung Yi was called Choi Won Wang, the president of the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly. He was also a triple-attribute Evolver, his level 83.

Choi Won Wang stared coldly and disdainfully at Park Jung Yi, before waving his hands, "Alright, you're dismissed."

He nodded and bowed before leaving, "Yes! Yes!!"

As he left, he cursed under his breath, "Hmph, damn Chinese dog, Yue Zhong. You dare to steal my woman and not give me food? I will not let you off easily!! Choi Won Wang hates Chinese people the most! This time, you're dead!"

After Park Jung Yi left, Choi Won Wang shook the wine glass in

his hands, before suddenly asking, "An In Pyo, are you able to stop bullets?"

Another burly man, whose hair was dyed red, fell silent, before replying with a fierce glint, "No, I can't stop bullets. But, I can kill those Evolvers who can stop bullets."

An In Pyo was one of the strongest Evolvers under Choi Won Wang, a super Evolver of Level 80, his combat ability terrifying beyond measure.

Choi Won Wang's eyes flashed with a powerful killing intent, "You go take the Black Wind Guards to kill that Chinese Evolver. They dare to saunter around our Korea, simply seeking death."

Choi Won Wang's father had died in the war, and thus, he had been an extremist of the right-wing. After the apocalypse, he had relied on his strength and nationalistic views to gather a bunch of people and formed the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly.

"Yes!"

An In Pyo quickly went away.

"All Chinese dogs are to die!"

A vicious glint passed in his eyes before he grabbed one of the beautiful ladies and tore off her clothes, biting down on her neck.

Early the next morning, Yue Zhong took out a Reaper on the field, and spoke to Jung Ri Soo, "Try enhancing this mech."

Jung Ri Soo took a look at that mysterious and powerful robot, her eyes filled with shock, "Amazing. What a beautiful set of armor. I've only ever seen such robots in the comics. Uncle, how did you get this?"

The Reaper technology was something that Earth's technology still could not match, thus, its appearance would naturally shock people.

Yue Zhong replied, "You don't have to care about that, try

enhancing it."

"Sure! Let me try, and test my new strength!"

After consuming the Evolving Liquid, as well as some Blood Honey from the 3rd World, while her level had only increased by one, under the nourishment of the Blood Honey, her physique and constitution had become incredibly powerful. In terms of endurance, she was like a Type 2 Divine Warrior, while her Spirit was equivalent to a Type 3 Divine Warrior. She had truly become strong.

Of course, using those treasures, her combat ability was still weak. An ordinary soldier with a rifle could still take her out.

She came in front of the Reaper, placing both hands on its frame, and a powerful white light enveloped the Reaper.

The Reaper then began to evolve, as countless parts change amidst cracking sounds. It became even more advanced and sci-fi looking. The energy converter was also upgraded as well, becoming even more streamlined. What used to be a fraction of energy being converted in a breath's time, became 10 parts. The entire mech was becoming stronger.

As Yue Zhong watched it evolve, his eyes shone with a heated gaze, "What a treasure, a true treasure! This time, I've picked up a treasure!! Once it finishes evolving, and I equip the Heart of Hope, I should be able to take on a Type 6 expert with it. I should be considered invincible on Earth by then!"

"Who's there?!"

Suddenly, with a thought, Yue Zhong turned around his gaze sweeping, and noticed 30 men in black suits running towards him with various weapons.

One of them was holding an RPG, which he aimed at Jung Ri Soo, and fired.

Taking a preemptive strike was not something only Yue Zhong

knew.

An In Pyo was an Evolver that had braved countless battles, his experience abundant and his methods vicious.

White Bones stood in front of Jung Ri Soo with an energy shield, raising it to protect them.

Chapter 938: Entering Seoul!

Hong!

Following a loud sound, the rocket that could obliterate a tank slammed into the energy shield and exploded, causing ripples all over the shield.

"All of you can fucking die!!"

Yue Zhong's killing intent instantly soared. If Jung Ri Soo had been killed, it would be a huge shame. A Type 5 expert that could not even protect his woman, was no different from trash.

With a tap of his foot, he instantly disappeared from his location.

"He's gone!! How did he do that?! How is that possible?"

An In Pyo and the rest of the Black Wind Guards were all taken aback. They were considered the strongest Evolvers of Korea, and no matter how fast their enemies were, they would not be able to escape their line of sight. However, what they did not know was that this was a peak Type 5 Divine Warrior, his physique had surpassed even some Dino-Warriors. The moment he went all out, even Type 4 Divine Warriors would only see a blur.

These Black Wind Guards were at most equivalent to Type 2 Divine Warriors. Even An In Pyo was at most a Type 3 Divine Warrior. It was impossible for him to catch Yue Zhong's movement.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

All of a sudden, a number of Black Wind Guards had their heads exploding like watermelons. It was extremely creepy.

Seeing this scene, one of the Guards even got so frightened that he peed his pants, directly kneeling on the floor and kowtowing, "Monster!! He's a monster, he's definitely not a human!! He's a ghost! He's a devil!! Please spare me!! Don't kill me!!"

An In Pyo suppressed the fear in his heart, barking out, "Don't panic, he's just a human, not a ghost! We can definitely kill him."

"Seems like you're the leader, it shall be you then, be my puppet."

Yue Zhong suddenly appeared behind him, slapping the back of his neck and knocking him unconscious. A Type 3 Puppet Rune then entered her head.

"Ghost!!"

"Flee!!"

"..."

The remaining Black Wind Guards felt shocked and despair, and started to flee while shouting.

With a tap of his foot, Yue Zhong darted about like a specter, appearing behind the Black Wind Guards. Each time, he would slap a Puppet Rune into their heads, turning them into his Puppets.

The dozens of Korean elites might have posed a threat to Yue Zhong before he entered the 2nd World, however, now, they could barely last more than a breath.

An In Pyo, who was the first to become a Puppet, came up to Yue Zhong and saluted, "Your slave An In Pyo greets Master!!"

Yue Zhong did not even glance at him. He shot back to Jung Ri Soo, grabbing her into his embrace and asked with concern, "Ri Soo, are you ok?"

Jung Ri Soo, whose body was covered in perspiration from the usage of her ability earlier, smiled brightly with joy and kissed him deeply. "Uncle, I'm ok! Thank you for protecting me. The machine is too powerful, my strength is insufficient. I could only do $\frac{1}{3}$ of it. In order for it to finish evolving, it would take another 2 days."

Yue Zhong planted a kiss on her forehead, "3 days it is. Don't worry, take your time."

Jung Ri Soo smiled brightly and hugged his right arm tightly

with her B-cup breasts pressed against. She wanted to use all she had to keep him firmly under her thumb.

Yue Zhong summoned An In Pyo, his face sinking, "Who sent you here?"

An In Pyo replied respectfully, "Master, it was the President Choi Won Wong of the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly. I was one of the 4 Vice-Commanders of the Black Wind Guards, in charge of 36 Black Wind Guards."

"Choi Won Wong, damn bastard, you dare to target me, don't blame me for being merciless!" A strong killing intent emitted from Yue Zhong, before he asked, "Why did Choi Won Wong want to kill me?"

Yue Zhong could not fathom why this random person with no vengeance against him, nor met him before, would want to send experts after him.

Normally speaking, when a mature leader was to meet experts, the first thing they would do is to try and pull them in, or cooperate and become allies. Only if those did not work, that annihilation would become the only choice.

An In Pyo replied, "Choi Won Wong's father had died in the war before. He was a right-wing extremist and is filled with hatred towards the Chinese. Even an ordinary Chinese would suffer the moment he entered Choi Won Wong's territory. Men would be killed, women would become slaves. When he heard that you were an expert from China, he immediately ordered your death."

After An In Pyo became Yue Zhong's Puppet, even if he was speaking in Korean, Yue Zhong could understand him. Likewise, even if Yue Zhong spoke Chinese, An In Pyo would understand.

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed with killing intent, "So it's this kind of beast. Seems like I need to wipe him out. He's just cancer to Earth."

Nationalists and extremists usually reared their heads during

times of chaos and crisis. In the past, Africa used to have frequent outbreaks of such cases.

During the 2 World Wars, there were a lot of racists and no shortage of murders.

It was because of these, that many people realized the problem with such chaos, and fought to progress in peace.

With such an extremist like Choi Won Wong, if Yue Zhong was helpless, then that would be it. Now that he had the strength, he would not sit by.

Yue Zhong spoke, "Ri Soo, you stay here with your mother and Park Chae Young. They will be your subordinates, and you may command them. I will head to Seoul and wipe out this Revival Assembly."

A single person leveling an entire faction, this was unheard of before Yue Zhong entered the 2nd World. He was a Type 3 expert then, a peak existence. Yet, he would not have dared to make such claims.

When Jung Ri Soo heard this, she started to tear as she pleaded, "Uncle, there are so many experts there, can you not go?"

The Revival Assembly was one of the 3 largest factions, their prestige having spread far and wide. Almost everyone in the region knew of their name.

Yue Zhong had actually wanted to wipe them out himself, this caused Jung Ri Soo to be filled with fear. She knew Yue Zhong was strong. However, she did not believe that he could single-handedly take on the Revival Assembly. If he were to fall in battle, then she and her mother would be thrust back to the lives they led previously.

At the same time, after that intense night, although she did not love Yue Zhong as much as she said, she was indeed reliant on him and had a favorable impression. She truly did not wish to see him

die.

Yue Zhong patted her shoulder, and pointed to White Bones, "Don't worry, they're not a match for me. Also, relax, I will leave this behind to protect you guys."

Her eyes were red, as she asked, "Must you go?"

Yue Zhong's voice turned steely, "I must!"

She then wrapped her arms around his shoulder and kissed him deeply. After their lips parted, she spoke, "Promise me that you'll come back alive."

"Fine, I promise."

Yue Zhong chuckled and ordered, "An In Pyo, take me to Seoul's Revival Assembly."

"Yes!"

An In Pyo responded respectfully, before following Yue Zhong behind and they headed for Seoul.

Inside Seoul, a high-tech motorcycle that had not been seen before on Earth was rolling along the road.

"Halt, who are you?"

At a gate, 8 soldiers suddenly came to obstruct the laser-enhanced motorcycle.

"Become my puppets!"

Yue Zhong got down from the motorcycle and suddenly disappeared. 8 shadows suddenly smacked the heads of the 8 militants, directly sending Puppet Runes into them.

After turning them into Puppets, Yue Zhong got past the checkpoint quickly and entered Seoul.

Along the way, Yue Zhong assessed his surroundings carefully.

Inside the city, there were many people, but the sight was the same. Most of them were in tattered clothes, their expressions

sallow, lying on the ground like beggars. There was another group that was living lavishly, their complexions ruddy, walking around as though they were shopping.

Inside a dark alley, there would be sounds of fear and obscene laughter ringing out from time to time.

Yue Zhong took a look at the ongoings and shook his head, "The governance of this Revival Assembly is too loose. How could such an organization take down the millions of zombies here?"

Choi Won Wong might have strength, but he was definitely not good at overseeing and managing. At the same time, he was unwilling to give up his authority, only using his trusted subordinates. Hence, the inner turmoil and degeneration of society.

Yue Zhong then asked An In Pyo, "How did you guys obtain Seoul?"

An In Pyo spoke, "It was roughly half a year ago when the zombies in Seoul suddenly moved to the south. That was how we moved in and occupied Seoul."

In order to defend against North Korea, South Korea had built numerous bunkers and secret hideouts, as well as underground cities.

Due to the existence of such crisis shelters, many managed to stay alive.

Yue Zhong frowned, suddenly feeling a sense of unease, "Disappeared? What's going on?"

Chapter 939: Massacre!

However, even if he felt a sense of unease, he had no intentions to delve further. After all, this was Korea, and he was not Korean. He would not stay long anyway.

Right at this time, there was a loud commotion some distance away, "Haha, everybody look, this Chinese bitch dared to bite me. Say, how should I deal with her?"

"Burn her!!"

"Burn that bitch!!"

"Burn her!!"

"..."

A number of Korean thugs were hollering in excitement.

Although Yue Zhong could not understand the language, he was attracted by the loud noises and turned to check out the source.

At a crossroad not far away, there was a pregnant woman hung on a cross, her hair disheveled and her face swollen.

Below the cross, there was a stack of firewood. A handsome man with dyed yellow hair and slightly tanned skin held a blazing torch, laughing maniacally as he tried to incite the emotions of the people.

All around him, there were many young men and women with manic expressions as well, calling out for the death and blood of the pregnant women.

Not far from the cross, another group of Koreans was standing, some of them had cold gazes, some of them excited, their eyes containing hints of pity, some hatred. However, no one stood out to stop the man with the yellow hair.

In this apocalypse, it was already exhausting for an ordinary person to fight for their own survival. Furthermore, even if the

person on the cross was a Korean, they would not stand out to speak for her. Not to mention that she was a Chinese.

While a husband and wife were supposed to stick through thick and thin, sometimes, in the face of crisis, they would go their separate ways. If even a man and wife could be like this, not to mention a country and foreigners.

Many Koreans did not have favorable impressions of the Chinese, however, it was not to the point of xenophobia either. However, there were definitely some extremists who were filled with hate and would love to make use of public trials to satisfy their cruel, savage, and dark desires.

The yellow-haired man laughed savagely, "Do you hear that, shameless Chinese woman. Everyone wants you burned! Even your son is calling for your blood, bitch!"

The pregnant woman stared at a youth of about 15 standing within the extremist cult, her eyes filled with despair as well.

A vicious look flashed past the eyes of the youth, as he stood out to curse violently, "I have no mother, this Chinese bitch is not my mum. She's a shameless and lowly bitch!"

"Well said!! Chang Hoon!"

"That's right!! Korea is our home! All Chinese bitches have to scram!!"

"Kill these Chinese bitches!! Don't let them share our food!!"

"..."

Those youths had been brainwashed and were calling out madly, as though they were demons in human clothing.

When the pregnant lady heard the cruel words of the youth, her face turned incredibly pale, as her eyes flashed with despair. She spat out a mouthful of blood, at the same time, her body trembled badly, as she started bleeding from her waist down. She had

actually suffered a miscarriage from her despair.

The yellow-haired man grabbed his nose and chuckled evilly, "This bitch miscarried!! It stinks!! Hahahaha!!"

"Hahaha!"

"..."

The rest of the brainwashed youths also revealed excited and twisted expressions.

"What a bunch of animals."

At this time, a cold voice rang out. Everyone present swiveled to look, noticing Yue Zhong walking over with an icy expression.

The yellow-haired man had a vicious look as he barked out, "Who the fuck are you? You dare to barge in our business, are you tired of living? You damn Chinese dog, everybody! Grab him and burn him with this Chinese bitch!"

The rest of the young Koreans also bellowed and took up their weapons, charging at Yue Zhong.

With a cold look, Yue Zhong waved his Black Tooth Blade, and the charging Korean youths were immediately sliced in pieces, blood and flesh splattering everywhere.

"Ah!!!"

"Ghost!!!"

"..."

Seeing this terrifying scene, the rest of the Koreans immediately turned tail to run.

The instigator was shocked, as he retreated hastily, screaming out in fear, "Don't come over, don't come over!! My uncle is the vice-president of the United Republic of Korea, Choi Jung Chul!! If you dare to harm even a single hair on me, the Revival Assembly and United Front will definitely chase you down and kill you!!

Don't come over!! Stop!!"

An In Pyo immediately translated beside Yue Zhong, conveying all the various words around.

Yue Zhong's killing intent billowed out, as he sliced out at him, "Choi Jung Chul?! A mere ant! Even the Jade Emperor would not be able to save you now, animal!"

In a flash, the yellow-haired man was sliced apart at the waist. However, he did not die immediately, screaming as he fell to the ground. "It hurts!! Help!! I don't want to die!! I don't want to die!! It hurts!!"

After killing him Yue Zhong's gaze fell upon the pregnant lady, whose gaze seemed dead.

The pregnant lady mustered all her strength to glance at Yue Zhong, her eyes full of hurt, regret, and despair. "You... are... Chinese? I want... to go home..."

As those words fell, her head hung limp, as she became devoid of all signs of life. She had suffered cruel torture, and even her Korean son had cursed at her. Her only shred of hope had been devastated, and she had no more will to leave. She passed away like that.

Yue Zhong looked at the corpse, sighing. With a wave of his hands, the Devil Flame enveloped her body and everything of her was turned to ashes.

"Choi Won Wong, you deserve death!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, grabbing An In Pyo, and shooting towards where Choi Won Wong was supposed to be.

"Kill him!!"

After killing those extremist youths, he raised quite the commotion. A troop of over 20 soldiers wielding assault rifles appeared in front of him, and the leader barked out.

His voice had just landed when a gust of wind swept past them, and all 20 soldiers had their heads decapitated.

The surrounding survivors screamed out when they saw that.

Yue Zhong did not seem to care about them, directly transforming into a flash as he charged towards Choi Won Wong's base.

The nearer he got, the more experts that came out to attack him. Many of them were at the Type 2 Divine Warrior realm.

However, in front of a Type 5 Yue Zhong, they were as weak as ants. A casual wave from him could turn them into minced meat or puppets. No one could withstand a single breath against him.

The Gold Tripod Nightclub was where Choi Won Wong would usually hang out. At this moment, it was filled with scantily-dressed women dancing provocatively.

Choi Won Wong's ripped body was half-naked from the waist up, and he admired the women dancing while sipping on his wine. One of his hands would roam all over the women by his side, as he laughed out audaciously, a look of bliss on his face.

Within the city, the 3 factions had already split the area up amongst themselves. Choi Won Wong had immediately immersed himself in wine and women, enjoying himself.

In this apocalypse, even a super Evolver would not be able to control what happened the next day. Many of the heads would thus indulge in the pleasures of life.

Even Yue Zhong, who was resolute and vicious enough, would need his women to help alleviate his stress from time to time. It was extremely normal for Choi Won Wong to be like that as well.

Hong!

All of a sudden, there was a huge sound, as an entire wall of the club blasted open.

Inside the dust, Yue Zhong and An In Pyo walked in slowly.

When they saw this, everyone in the club screamed and ran amok, trying to hide or flee.

Choi Won Wong glanced at Yue Zhong and threw the girl in his embrace aside, before clapping his hands and ordering coldly, "Men! Kill him! Whoever's the first to kill him would be given 10 beautiful virgins and a single Evolution Fruit."

Yue Zhong barged through the club, obviously without any good intentions. Since Choi Won Wong was in a position of authority, he decided to just order the death of this intruder.

The 10 Black Wind Guards within the room immediately attacked with their various ability.

Among them, 2 of them had speed at the Type 3 realm. 6 of them had the constitution of the initial-Type 3 realm. The remaining 2 controlled flames and wind blades to attack Yue Zhong.

"Bunch of ants." Yue Zhong sneered, and with a flash, he punched out 10 times instantaneously, sending Puppet Runes into their heads.

Seeing him take care of the 10 Black Wind Guards like it was nothing, Choi Won Wong's pupils narrowed, as he stood up and barked, "Strong, who are you?"

Yue Zhong glared coldly at him, "You're Choi Won Wong?"

"You're Chinese? Seems like there's nothing much to be said. I'll capture you now and break your limbs, raising you like the dog you are." The moment Choi Won Wong heard the Chinese language, his eyes flashed viciously and he snarled.

Chapter 940: Invincible Suppression!

Yue Zhong laughed condescendingly, "With just you?"

"You think that you're undefeatable just because you took care of 10 Black Wind Guards? Fool. I can form the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly because of my strength! I'll let you experience my strength, then I'll break your limbs and make you into a dog!"

Choi Won Wong's eyes flashed with a savage glint. In that instant, his body went taut, as countless veins popped out, and a powerful blood-red Dou Qi surrounded him. It caused his physique to be enhanced, looking extremely terrifying.

Yue Zhong stared as Choi Won Wong's strength rose to the Type 4 stage, his eyes flashing with shock, "Peak-Type 3, no! Type 4! His strength could actually raise to the Type 4 stage. Who knows what miracle he encountered?"

A Type 4 expert could be said to be an invincible existence before Yue Zhong went into the 2nd World. Even the 12 Apostles of the Kingdom of God were only at the most, initial-Type 4 Divine Warriors, according to his estimation.

This Choi Won Wong could actually evolve so quickly within this short year, it was evident that he must have met with a miracle, or swallowed some special Heavenly treasure. Otherwise, on this Earth, it was incredibly difficult to evolve by killing Mutant Beasts.

"Those Black Wind Guards are nothing but ants in front of me. There's nothing to be proud of by killing them. My body cannot be pierced by heavy caliber bullets! I can pummel an armored vehicle with one fist, it would be simple for me to kill you!!"

Choi Won Wong's eyes had a savage glint as he laughed out. He disappeared from his location and charged behind Yue Zhong with the speed of sound, his legs lashing out viciously towards Yue Zhong's legs. He intended to break them.

"With your trash-like abilities? You can't even touch me."

Twisting his body, Yue Zhong kicked out with an even faster speed, directly onto Choi Won Wong's legs.

The next moment, there was a loud crack, as both legs were broken and separated from his body. The bones were shattered and blood flowed everywhere.

Choi Won Wong squealed out like a pig being slaughtered, his entire body crumpling to the ground. He stared at Yue Zhong with a gaze filled with fear and despair, "Ah!! My legs!! My legs!!! Ah!! How is this possible!?! How could you be this strong?!"

"Just die, trash."

Yue Zhong muttered coldly as he stared at Choi Won Wong. He slashed out with his Black Tooth Blade, and Choi Won Wong's head was separated from his body, rolling across the floor with his face twisted in eternal pain and hate.

After killing him, all the women trembled as they stared at Yue Zhong, their eyes filled with fear.

"Master!"

The Black Wind Guards that been subdued by Yue Zhong stood up and saluted with respect.

He waved them away, "You guys remain here to maintain order."

After that, he charged out of the nightclub with An In Pyo in tow. He had many more scumbags to kill.

"Attack!! Attack him!! Kill him!!"

Yue Zhong had just charged out of the nightclub when there were the agitated shouts of a man.

The remaining Korean Army soldiers that had gathered after the apocalypse were right outside, firing madly at Yue Zhong.

There were grenade launchers, rockets as well as other heavy

firepower.

There were many super Evolvers that could stop bullets and heavy caliber bullets in the current state of Earth, however, few could use their bodies to block cannons and rockets.

The countless attacks enveloped Yue Zhong's position entirely, as the explosions rang out with deafening impact.

All of a sudden, a gust of wind blew past, and the militants were all beheaded in a strange manner, fresh blood splattering everywhere.

In a manner of seconds, over 100 soldiers of the Revival Assembly had died mysteriously.

After their headless corpses crumpled to the ground, Yue Zhong's figure reappeared in the center of the battlefield.

"Fearsome!! He's a devil!! He's definitely a devil!! How could a human be strong to this extent?"

When the various snipers at different hiding spots watched on, their bodies trembled, with fear in their eyes. They had seen their fair share of Evolvers, but someone like Yue Zhong, they had never encountered before.

Peng!

One sniper could not bear it any further and fired a shot at Yue Zhong's forehead.

Right before the bullet hit Yue Zhong, he struck out with a finger and caused the bullet to deflect off.

"How is that possible?! Is he still human? How come he's so terrifying?! Monster! He's a monster!!"

Seeing the bullet that could blast an armored vehicle knocked away by Yue Zhong, all the snipers felt despair. Some even directly abandoned their posts and fled, not willing to gamble their lives.

Yue Zhong swept a glance over at the snipers and raised his

Electromagnetic Cannon to fire out a few times.

The multiple electromagnetic beams fired out, blasting the heads of the snipers accurately. Only those who had taken the opportunity to flee at the first moment managed to escape with their lives.

Yue Zhong then sauntered through the area like a death god, taking out the members of the Revival Assembly, either killing them or turning them into his puppets.

As An In Pyo led him, Yue Zhong came to a prison cell.

Within this prison cell, were the Chinese and Koreans who were of part-Chinese descent, that had been living in Seoul.

The prison cell had previously been a school, and they remodeled it to have a huge electrical fence all around, with 2 heavy machine guns and 8 soldiers guarding the entrance.

Yue Zhong came to the cell and one of the soldiers immediately stepped forwards to bark, "Halt!"

With a flash, Yue Zhong arrived at the entrance, while the 8 soldiers fell apart in halves, sliced by his blade.

He then walked up to the huge iron gate and slashed a few times, shredding the gate in 4 or 5 parts.

"Enemy attack, enemy attack!"

There was the blare of alarms, and 30 armed guards came rushing out. Some had not even put on their pants.

Yue Zhong readied his assault rifle, firing as he walked. Each time a guard appeared, their heads would be blasted off.

After killing those armed guards, Yue Zhong opened up all the rooms, only to discover many women in different states of ruin. Most of them were just skin and bones, emitting a putrid stench. Some of them looked more dead than alive. There were no kids, nor men. Many pregnant ones had been tortured incessantly and

suffered miscarriages.

At one corner of the main warehouse, there were many bones, emitting a strong stench.

It was like hell.

Yue Zhong sighed and deployed a few Puppets to take care of these women. He then continued towards where the main faction was, killing any soldier he saw on sight.

Yue Zhong walked through the base, like an invincible devil. Any soldier that appeared in front of him would be cleaved in two. No one could take a single strike from him.

When he came to an open field, there was a sudden roar, "Kill!!"

At that instant, over a hundred militants appeared, firing their assault rifles, grenade launchers, rockets at Yue Zhong.

He was instantly bombarded by the rain of metal, as the explosions rocked the entire place he stood.

Inside a room, a middle-aged man that looked elegant eyed the center of the blast and thought anxiously, "Is he dead?"

This man was the vice-president of the Revival Assembly Seok In Ji. He had gathered the remaining manpower and firepower to throw them all at Yue Zhong.

However, the next moment, his wishes crumbled. The various militants began to lose their heads, turning into headless corpses.

"Ah!"

"Help!!"

"..."

After a hundred of the soldiers died mysteriously, the remaining soldiers lost all will to fight, as they threw their equipment and weapons aside. Some fled while others directly got on their knees to surrender.

Seok In Ji looked at this with a chill, as despair rose in his heart, "It's over! We're over!! How can there be such a monster?!"

At this moment, Yue Zhong swept a glance over at Seok In Ji's position and fired a single round from his Electromagnetic Cannon.

There was a bright flash, and the beam directly pierced through Seok In Ji's head, blasting it apart.

After killing him, there was no one else within the Revival Assembly that could muster any force to retaliate. Soon after, most of the soldiers either surrendered or were killed. Just like this, the entire Revival Assembly was leveled by Yue Zhong. A Type 5 Divine Warrior truly could take down an entire faction all by himself.

Inside another lavish mansion within Seoul, a handsome, young man of about 27 or 28 was currently practicing his marksmanship.

A middle-aged man in military uniform ran up to him in panic, "President, it's bad!! President!! Something bad has happened!"

Chapter 941: Conflict during the Banquet!

This young man practicing his marksmanship was the president of the United Republic of Korea, Chu Joon Ho. He was a super Evolver with strength and wits.

He placed his gun down, looking at the panicked middle-aged man and asked, "Lee Young Joon, what happened, for you to be this anxious?"

Lee Young Joon replied hastily, "President, Choi Won Wong has been killed! The Revival Assembly has also been obliterated!"

This news was too shocking and unbelievable, that was why Lee Young Joon was so frightened.

When Chu Joon Ho heard this, his face also fell as he exclaimed out in shock, "What?! Choi Won Wong was killed? He might be useless as a governor, but he has that elite troop made up of Evolvers, and a 3,000-strong army! He's also a super Evolver, how was he so easily killed? The Revival Assembly was obliterated? Tell me the details properly!"

What was the Republic of Korea Revival Assembly? They were one of the 3 largest factions in Seoul, with plenty of aspects. In terms of firepower, they were even one-up the United Republic of Korea. Such a faction was actually destroyed, it naturally caused Chu Joon Ho to be at a loss.

Lee Young Joon swallowed his saliva and began, "He's just one man. Everything was accomplished by one man. He's a Chinese from China, Yue Zhong!!!"

Chu Joon Ho's eyes lost their focus as he muttered with a look of disbelief, "A single person? How is that possible? Is that even possible? The Revival Assembly has so many experts, how can they be wiped out like that?"

He frowned and began to consider the possibilities, "Yue Zhong.

Who is this man?"

However, no matter how hard he thought, he had no clue who this person was.

Chu Joon Ho thought for a while more before jerking his head up, "Where is he now?"

Lee Young Joon replied, "After he killed most of the soldiers, he reorganized those who submitted to him, and there're no further actions. Instead, he sent men to go take care of those Chinese women that had been tortured by Choi Won Wong."

When Chu Joon Ho heard this, the fog in his eyes cleared, and his eyebrows relaxed. "So it was like this. That stupid extremist must have clashed with Yue Zhong over his sadistic tendencies. That was why Yue Zhong had dealt with him. That fool, relying on his strength to try and lord his way everywhere. Since he met someone stronger than him, he only had death awaiting."

Chu Joon Ho was also a man of talents. He quickly came to a decision, "With such strength, we must definitely not make an enemy out of Yue Zhong. We can only try to pull him in. Fortunately, there're no cases of xenophobia here. I can try to recruit him and become friends with him. Great. Lee Young Joon, go get a gold invitation letter. I want to invite Yue Zhong to be a guest."

Lee Young Joon's face fell, "President, that isn't too good eh? What if we invite him over and he harbors some evil intentions? Our United Republic of Korea would be in trouble then."

Chu Joon Ho flipped the question back, "With his strength, if he were to kill his way over, what can we do to stop him? My army is not even comparable to that fool Choi Won Wong. If he was a madman, then after taking down the Revival Assembly, he would have continued to kill us. We would not be able to stop him, only hiding or fleeing."

Lee Young Joon fell silent, he knew that Chu Joon Ho was speaking the truth.

Chu Joon Ho continued with a gleam in his eyes, "Since we cannot afford to have him as an enemy, we can only try to befriend him. This is Korea, after all, and Yue Zhong would definitely find it hard to hold his fort here. I'm guessing that he will return to China, and that's where he can fully exhibit his strength. If we can be on good terms, it will be good for our future."

Lee Young Joon's face had a tinge of respect, "That's right, as expected of President. I'll go and invite him over then."

During the evening, inside a villa within the territory of the United Republic of Korea, a number of vehicles had stopped outside, while well-dressed men and women entered.

Yue Zhong walked in, dressed in casual wear, while Jung Ri Soo was beside him, wearing a black nightgown, hugging his arm tightly.

One of the waiters came up to stop Yue Zhong, "Sir, please show your invitation card."

Jung Ri Soo withdrew slightly, her family had been ordinary, and she had never attended such a social function before, thus, she was slightly apprehensive.

Seeing her behavior, the waiter's eyes flashed with a hint of disdain.

Yue Zhong took out the gold invitation card and handed it, "You're talking about this."

When the waiter saw the gold card, his face changed. This gold invitation card represented the most honored guests. If they did not carry out their duties well, then even if the guests pardoned them, the upper echelon of the United Republic of Korea would not. His back broke out in cold sweat, silently celebrating that he did not automatically become rude due to his disdain.

The waiter bowed deeply, motioning for Yue Zhong to follow, "Sir, please come with me."

Yue Zhong thus followed his lead into the lavish mansion.

The mansion was well-decorated, with lights and exquisite items, while many good-looking waiters and waitresses were fanned out, attending to the guests.

When Jung Ri Soo came in, she could not help but gasp, "What a nice place!! It looks just like on T.V!"

She swept her gaze around and saw two tables full of fresh fruits and delicious desserts. Her eyes lit up in delight, and she pulled Yue Zhong along, "Ah, there're fresh fruits here. Uncle, I want to eat. Can you accompany me?"

In the apocalypse, eating was the most important to an ordinary person. In these 2 years, Jung Ri Soo had not eaten any fresh fruits at all.

"Fine!"

Yue Zhong nodded and followed Jung Ri Soo towards the spread and began to eat the fruits.

All of a sudden, there was a voice, "Aren't you Yue Zhong?! How come you're here?"

Yue Zhong lifted his head, only to see a handsome young man with a short hairdo in a suit, walking over with a glass of wine in his hands.

Yue Zhong asked with a little uncertainty, "Li Fei San? You're Li Fei San?"

Li Fei San was a fellow schoolmate in Yue Zhong's high school. His family had money and background, and he had long since gone abroad to study. Yue Zhong had never expected to see him here.

Li Fei San assessed Yue Zhong, laughing condescendingly, his words carrying a deep sense of superiority, "Yue Zhong, you're

really so poor, you can't even afford a suit? I wonder if there's anything wrong with the waiter's eyes, how could he let you in? Do you know the place you're in? This is a party for the upper echelon of the United Republic of Korea, the president Chu Joon Ho would be here later. Look at your appearance, truly embarrassing. On account that we were schoolmates before, scram the hell out. I won't expose you."

Li Fei San was rich and had the background to boot. Since he was spoiled by his family, he had become extremely arrogant and looked down on the poor. Yue Zhong's family had been ordinary, thus, a target of disdain for Li Fei San.

At this time, Jung Ri Soo walked over with a plate of desserts, her mouth stuffed full. She looked at Li Fei San curiously and asked, "Yue Zhong, who is he?"

Yue Zhong took a piece of cake from her plate and did not bother looking at Li Fei San anymore, "Just an arrogant fly. Ignore him."

Currently, in his eyes, Li Fei San was barely an ant. He was not interested in dealing with this small fry.

Li Fei San had been so spoiled that even if he were to rape a teacher, his family would have settled all issues. It resulted in his arrogance and despotic nature.

Hearing those disdainful words, Li Fei San's face changed, turning incredibly savage. He shot a lewd look at Jung Ri Soo, snarling, "Fly? You dare call me a fly?!! Good!! Good!! Yue Zhong, you truly don't want to appreciate me giving you face. Now I'm mad, hand over this female partner of yours. I can forget about today's matter. Otherwise, don't blame me for falling out with you and being merciless!!"

Yue Zhong frowned, and sent a slap across his face, "Li Fei San, I've already wanted to beat your face up since long ago! It was just that I lacked the strength to. I wanted to let you off since we went to the same school. If you don't know how to value your life, then

you're asking for a beating!"

That slap of Yue Zhong caused his face to swell and 2 pieces of teeth to fly out. He crumpled to the ground.

He screamed out immediately, "He's beating people!! He's beating people!! Security!! Ni Ni!! Come save me!!"

"Fei San-darling, who dares hit you?" At this point, a middle-aged woman of about 40 or 50 came over, her face full of thick makeup. She carried Li Fei San up, cooing over him, "Darling, that beast dared to hit you, I will not let him off."

Yue Zhong swept his gaze across and finally understood why Li Fei San was able to enter this banquet even with a Chinese identity.

Just like the rich men who loved to keep mistresses, there were rich women who liked to keep toyboys beside them. Li Fei San was basically a toyboy for this Korean lady.

Chapter 942: Negotiations!

Li Fei San laid in the embrace of the Korean lady, crying out loudly, "It's him! It's him! He's the one who hit me. He's a Chinese, not Korean. He doesn't have an invitation and just barged into the party. Ni Ni, you must stand up for me!"

The commotion managed to attract the people around. Those who had been just observing came closer, and upon hearing that Yue Zhong was a Chinese, their eyes were filled with disdain and enmity.

The Korean lady, Kim Da Ni, turned around immediately and stared daggers at Yue Zhong and Jung Ri Soo. She shrieked out, "So it was you two shameless Chinese?! Security, capture the both of them! Throw them in jail!"

"Apprehend them!"

"Damn Chinese, as expected, their bearing is so lowly, I wonder how they sneaked in."

"..."

In the room, everyone looked on with disdain, pointing and muttering at Yue Zhong.

Under their gazes filled with animosity, Jun Ri Soo started to feel nervous and scared, hiding behind Yue Zhong's back like a cat. She had never even been to such an event before, let alone being a troublemaker.

"What's going on?" At this moment, Lee Young Joon came over with 8 security guards.

Kim Da Ni came up to him, her eyes shooting suggestive glances, as she spoke coyly, "Young Joon-oppa, right on time. This Chinese sneaked into our party and hit someone. Quick, capture him and send him over to the Revival Assembly."

Yue Zhong turned to Lee Young Joon and laughed coldly, "Lee Young Jun, is this how the United Republic of Korea welcome guests?"

Lee Young Joon took a look and saw that it was Yue Zhong. His face fell and did not even pay attention to Kim Da Ni, quickly running over to Yue Zhong, putting on a fawning expression, "Sir Yue Zhong, I was just looking for you. So you were here. I deeply apologize for the lack of welcome, and I beg your forgiveness."

"Why is it like this?" Seeing this, Kim Da Ni's countenance turned extremely pale. Lee Young Joon was the trusted aide of the President of the United Republic of Korea, Chu Joon Ho, and in the region, his name was not without weight.

Kim Da Ni had also gotten close to him, that was how she threw her weight about in the faction and did whatever she liked. She did not expect that this high and mighty Lee Young Joon would actually be so subservient to this Chinese man.

When everyone saw this, their faces fell, turning silent immediately. Those who had been sarcastic with their remarks turned pale.

Things were different now compared to peace times. If they were to offend some big character accidentally, it was possible to become a corpse the next day. This was, after all, a cruel world.

Yue Zhong pointed at both Kim Da Ni and Li Fei San, speaking coldly, "These 2 are an eyesore. I don't wish to see them anymore."

Lee Young Joon bowed once more, "My apologies. Due to my oversight, I've caused you distress. I promise you that you will not see those 2 again."

He then turned to stare at the 2, his humility gone in a flash, replaced with an icy sternness, "Drag the two of them away into the Dead Prison."

"Yes!"

4 experts swiftly stepped up to restrain the 2 of them, dragging them out.

Li Fei San was frightened at this point, wetting his pants, and he cried out miserably, "No! Please! NO! Don't send me there! Yue Zhong, please, I'm begging you!! It was my fault. Save me!! Don't let them send me there!! On account that we're schoolmates, please!!"

Yue Zhong shot him a disdainful look, "Li Fei San, if you weren't a rapist, I would have still spared your dog life. However, your nature never changed, you despicable scumbag. I think your death will do the world some good."

When Li Fei San had flown abroad to study, one of the main reasons was that he had raped his own teacher. Although his family had used their money to keep the matter under wraps, they had no choice but to send this little devil overseas to evade further trouble.

Li Fei San's nose and eyes were streaming as he begged, "I know I'm wrong!! Please give me a chance!! Please!!"

Yue Zhong shot Lee Young Joon a cold glance, "It's getting really noisy!"

"Yes!"

Lee Young Joon then motioned at 2 experts, and one of them directly sent a fist towards the mouth of Li Fei San, making it bloody, before stuffing him with a piece of cloth. They then proceeded to drag him away.

"This way please." After all these, Lee Young Joon wore a smile and led Yue Zhong towards another box some distance away.

After entering the box, there were 4 extremely beautiful ladies with exquisite looks and charm seated on a sofa, with a young man sitting further back.

Jung Ri Soo caught sight of the 4 ladies and became excited,

"Jeon Yoon Ah, Kim Bo Ah, Shin Ji Hyeon, So Gyo Hye!! Oh my goodness, I'm so excited!! Uncle, these are the ultimate celebrities of our Korea! This is too cool!!"

Lee Young Joon's face had a warm smile as he introduced, "Sir Yue Zhong, these 4 are indeed our top celebrities of Korea. They have heard of your name and hope to become your women. We beseech you to grant them this wish, and keep them by your side."

One of them had long, chestnut hair, her figure tall and slender. When she smiled, it was extremely captivating. She came over and said, "Hello, Yue Zhong, I'm Jeon Yoon Ah."

Another one with an oval-shaped face and voluptuous body came and smiled, "Hi, I'm Kim Bo Ah!"

The third one looked slightly rebellious giggled, "Hi! I'm Shin Ji Hyeon!"

The last one was a silent but elegant beauty, who smiled slightly, "Hello, Sir Yue Zhong, I'm So Gyo Hye."

After the 4 idols introduced themselves, they brought with them a charm as they tried to compete and showcased their charms.

Even Jung Ri Soo, who had been excited when she saw them, became extremely depressed, and pounced into his embrace, hugging him tightly.

At this time, Chu Joon Ho stood up, smiling with charm as he welcomed Yue Zhong, "Yue Zhong, how do you do. I'm Chu Joon Ho, the President of the United Republic of Korea, I'm honored to finally meet you."

Yue Zhong smiled back, sitting on the sofa, "How do you do. I'm Yue Zhong."

Chu Joon Ho tried to suss him out, "Yue Zhong, you should have just arrived in Korea right? I've never heard of you before."

Yue Zhong spoke without missing a beat, "That's right, I've just

come to Korea."

He had a motive for coming to meet Chu Joon Ho as well. Without intending to play any more probing games, he spoke directly, "Chu Joon Ho, since you are the President of the United Republic of Korea, I need to tell you about some things. I've just come back from the 2nd World."

Chu Joon Ho was taken aback and frowned, "2nd World? What's that?"

He had never heard of this term before.

Yue Zhong continued solemnly, "It is a planet that has been devastated by a nuclear war, and it is filled with countless monsters. I've returned from the world and have gained some intel. The spatial tunnel between our worlds is about to open. At that time, there will be many monsters pouring out from the tunnel, attacking our human race. Those monsters are strong, and many of the current Evolved zombies are not their match. Please make your preparations as soon as possible."

"What?! Is this true?!"

Chu Joon Ho's face fell. If it were before the apocalypse, he would have laughed at Yue Zhong for being insane. However, since the world had changed, everything that they had known was flipped around. It seemed that everything was under the control of that entity calling itself God. There could be even more absurd and ludicrous things happening.

Yue Zhong continued solemnly, "It's true. I will leave here soon, heading back to China. Chu Joon Ho, I hope that you can treat the Chinese here with respect, and not let them suffer."

As the President of the United Republic of Korea, Chu Joon Ho did not have extremist views nor mistreat those of Chinese descent. That was why Yue Zhong decided to communicate with him. Otherwise, he would have just killed his way over, killing

him.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Chu Joon Ho was partly happy, partly worried. Happy because this huge threat was going to leave Korea, but worrisome because all the more his words were to be trusted.

He maintained a serious expression, "Yue Zhong, I hope that you can tell me more about this 2nd World."

"Sure!"

Yue Zhong thus began to reveal all that he knew about the 2nd World. The Saint Clan was strong beyond words, adding on to the various foreign species and Mutant Beasts, he had to gather as much power and strength as he could to deal with the imminent invasion. He definitely needed allies.

Hong! Hong!

Right as he was discussing with Chu Joon Ho, there was a loud explosion outside the living room, and one of the walls was blasted away.

The explosion caused a huge commotion, and all the participants of the dinner screamed out and fled.

3 men and 1 women stepped in through the hole in the living room.

One of the middle-aged men with normal looks and a crossed-eye look swept his gaze around, before landing on Chu Joon Ho. His face broke out into a smile, "Hahaha!! Chu Joon Ho, you're here as expected!"

Chapter 943: The First Divine Envoy!

Chu Joon Ho's face turned ashen, "Kim Park Chan, you dare intrude on my banquet. If you don't give me an explanation, don't even think about leaving here."

Kim Park Chan's eyes flashed with disdain as he laughed, "Explanation? What a joke. Chu Joon Ho, you had better kneel down now and surrender. Hand over the entire United Republic of Korea to me. I can still leave you your life, otherwise, today will be the day you die."

Chu Joon Ho laughed, and pressed a remote control button, "Good! Good! Good! Kim Park Chun, I want to see how you can kill me!"

Alarms started to ring throughout the entire villa.

Hearing the blaring sounds, all the experts hidden within the villa appeared, charging over to Chu Joon Ho's location.

One of the intruders, a burly European man, spoke out in English, "Why are you wasting your breath on him? Since he's not willing to surrender, let's just kill him. Beni, get rid of the riff-raff."

The European woman with long, blond hair and a sexy figure, but with a freckled face, flipped her hands, revealing 2 silver, sci-fi-looking guns.

When those 2 guns appeared, she began to shoot them out in a physic-defying manner. As she spun, she would fire out bullets accurately at the approaching experts.

Each bullet would land accurately on an elite, causing their bodies to explode. The blood and body parts would splatter everywhere in a gory manner.

Beni was slightly ugly, but she was capable. She completely suppressed the elites of the United Republic of Korea, exhibiting a

terrifying combat strength.

Chu Joon Ho saw how Beni was suppressing his elites and his face fell, exclaiming, "Strong! Who are you people?"

The tower-like burly man walked forward with a cold look, "I'm Burt, the 1st Divine Envoy of the Kingdom of God. Chu Joon Ho, you only have 2 choices now. Join our Kingdom of God, or die!"

Chu Joon Ho frowned, "Kingdom of God? What organization is that?"

"So you guys are from the Kingdom of God? Good timing, I wanted some information from you guys."

Just as Chu Joon Ho was pondering, Yue Zhong stood up. With a tap of his foot, he disappeared from his location, appearing beside Burt, and striking towards the back of his head.

"Strong! Who is this?"

Burt was the 1st Divine Envoy, with strength almost reaching the Apostles. And yet, he felt a huge sense of crisis and helplessness from this man. Even the Apostles did not give him this feeling.

At that moment in time, Burt suddenly disappeared from his location, appearing about 20m away from Yue Zhong. He then activated his life-saving skill, his face full of perspiration.

"Spread out!! Attack those women!!"

Burt roared out in rage, pulling out 2 flash grenades and throwing them, before fleeing madly.

Beni and the other Divine Envoy Mike had worked together with Burt for long, and they knew each other movements like the back of their hands.

Beni spun her silver revolvers, her bullets firing at the few Korean ladies.

Compared to Yue Zhong, those women were easier to deal with. Furthermore, such a tactic would force Yue Zhong to protect those

women, thus, elevating their chances of escape.

Mike's eyes gleamed, and he slapped his hands on to the ground. A powerful yellow light burst out, causing multiple spikes to shoot out from the ground, piercing towards Yue Zhong as well as the women.

"Fleeing? Pretty decent reaction."

With a wave of his hands, a huge shield appeared in front of him. He channeled his strength, and another energy shield appeared, enveloping himself and the ladies.

The flash grenades exploded, and the bright light covered the entire region.

When the grenades blasted out on the shields, they caused ripples, but not enough to shatter them. The sharp spikes also slammed into the large shield and shattered instead.

Lee Young Joon twisted his body, retreating backward. However, a single grenade managed to find his position as though it had an eye and blasted his right arm apart.

A sharp spike shot out from the ground, piercing Lee Young Joon's body, nailing him to the wall.

Jeon Yoon Ah and the other women saw how the expert Lee Young Joon had been reduced to a corpse within seconds, and their faces fell, hiding behind Yue Zhong in fear. Without his protection, they would have all become corpses.

At this time, Chu Joon Ho exhibited his strength as the President of the United Republic of Korea. His body was wrapped with a green Dou Qi, his strength reaching the initial-Type 4 realm, and he tunneled into the ground nimbly.

The arrogant Kim Park Chan saw how his backers had fled, and his face turned pale. However, his reaction was pretty swift, and he turned around, preparing to leap out.

"Trying to flee?"

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, and immediately channeled his Shadow Clone ability. 4 Clones shot out like specters, appearing right behind Burt, Beni, and Mike, chopping down on the back of their necks.

Although they were unable to utilize the skills, they had his physique. That single palm was equivalent to a Type 5 expert's attack.

No matter how strong those 3 Divine Envoys were, they were at most at the mid-Type 4 realm. In just a breath's time, Beni and Mike were knocked unconscious Kim Park Chan also failed to escape, falling unconscious.

As for Burt, he continued to flicker about, using his strongest escape skill. He managed to evade that attack from the clone and continued to flee. He had no capacity to concern himself about his comrades.

"Strong!! Too strong!! He actually used his clones to take out 3 experts in a second. His strength is too fearsome!! Fortunately, I chose to cooperate with him. I can't even take on a single clone of his!" Chu Joon Ho saw how Yue Zhong did not need to move and just sent out 4 clones to deal with his enemies. His eyes were filled with complicated emotions, his heart also filled with envy.

"Not bad. Truly the 1st Divine Envoy of the Kingdom of God. Chu Joon Ho, I'll leave things here to you."

Yue Zhong stared at Burt, his eyes flashing with self-deprecation. A Type 4 expert like him was actually able to slip through his fingers. This was a testimony to his strength and calm mind.

He grabbed Jung Ri Soo with one hand, and took a single leap, disappearing from his location.

Chu Joon Ho swept a glance across the Korean idols that Yue Zhong left behind, and came to the conclusion, "He did not even

place them in mind. Only that woman beside him is important."

Burt gasped for breath, desperately running through a few alleys. The Flash skill consumed a lot of Stamina and Spirit. Using it continuously caused his Stamina to deplete drastically.

"It's here!!"

When he came to a dark alley, he saw a window, and his eyes brightened. He channeled his energy once more and appeared within the room.

There were 2 survivors within, and when they saw Burt suddenly appearing in their flat, there was shock in their eyes, and they opened their mouths to shout.

Before they could do so, however, Burt waved his hands, and 2 daggers shot out, piercing the necks of those 2 survivors, slicing through.

"There should not be any problems like this."

After killing those 2 survivors, he heaved a sigh of relief and relaxed.

At this moment, a huge palm came down on his neck without any warning. Before he could react, Burt was already knocked unconscious.

Yue Zhong appeared in the room, while still carrying Jung Ri Soo.

Earlier, Burt had been able to evade the attacks because Yue Zhong had not gone all out. Now, he was sure not to make the same mistake twice. That was how he was able to knock him unconscious.

When Burt came to, he was already a Puppet, "Burt greets Master."

Yue Zhong asked, "Burt, the 12 Apostles, where have they been in this past year? Are they still on Earth?"

The 12 Apostles were all Heaven's favorites, geniuses of their eras. They had awakened multiple attributes naturally during their evolution, a one-in-hundreds of thousands chance. If they were to leave Earth, it was possible for them to come across other fortuitous encounters, and might even surpass Yue Zhong.

Burt replied, "I'm not entirely sure about their movements. I only know that half a year ago, because of some unknown reason, all 12 Apostles were recalled back to headquarters. In these past 6 months, it had been us Divine Envoys carrying out missions, expanding the Kingdom of GoOd. However, without the power of the Apostles, we had to withdraw our troops from various locations and give it up."

Yue Zhong frowned, "Then why appear in Korea?"

Burt replied, "We want to bring South Korea and North Korea into our control establishing a strong logistics location, using North Korea as the fortress and combining with our forces in Russia to attack China, the faction that you had established, Master."

Chapter 944: The Flesh-Eaters Appear!

Yue Zhong, who had been indifferent, finally lost his cool, "What? Join hands to attack China? What's with the Russian Empire? Has Russia finally been united?"

The Russians had always been one of the opponents of China. At the same time, their desire for territory was well-known. In this current apocalypse, once a greedy Russian manages to unify the country, they would not let go of China in the North.

"Russia does not have a leader. Their capital Moscow had already been completely conquered by zombies. It's rumored that there are appearances of powerful Evolved zombies with intelligence and terrifying combat abilities."

"Under the lead of these Evolved zombies, Russia's human factions were annihilated one by one. Their northern area had already belonged to the zombies."

"As for the southern side, due to the pressure of the zombies, many human factions had allied and formed a new Russian government. This is a strong alliance, with over a million survivors. They only have a 100,000-strong army, possessing the weapons of the Cold War period.

"Making use of those weapons, they managed to wipe out over a million zombies. However, the zombie army in the north marched on under the lead of the Evolved zombie, using their superior might and numbers to crush the main forces, forcing the human factions further south."

"Under such circumstances, Russia had finally chosen to work with the Kingdom of God, to attack the faction in China," Burt revealed everything he knew.

A dark look came over Yue Zhong's eyes, "In exchange, you guys would provide Russia with a large number of weapons and

ammunition, right?"

Burt nodded, "That's right, we have provided them with weapons, ammunition, and ration."

Yue Zhong chuckled bitterly, before sighing. He was filled with complicated emotions right now.

The Gates of Hell had already opened, and the Vampires and Flesh-Eaters of the 2nd World were about to invade Earth. Yet, the humans on Earth were still caught up in their own conflicts, slaughtering among themselves. This did not bode well for their future.

"Help!!"

"Ah!!"

"No, save me!"

"..."

All of a sudden, there were screams ringing out from the streets.

"What's going on?"

When Yue Zhong heard those screams, he darted and appeared outside swiftly.

Only to discover that the streets of Seoul were plunged into chaos, with numerous people running around amok, screaming at the top of their lungs.

A number of Flesh-Eaters that were 90% similar to humans in appearance were slaughtering the people on the street.

One Flesh-Eater charged forwards, directly pouncing and knocking a human to the ground. He then used his claws to tear through to the heart of the person, digging it out, before consuming it while laughing savagely.

A blond Vampire flickered, appearing in front of a woman. He grabbed her head and pulled down roughly, before bending down

to suck her blood voraciously.

Throughout Seoul, it was like Hell. Death was everywhere, and there were numerous cruel and savage Flesh-Eaters and Vampires slaughtering people on sight.

Yue Zhong looked at the chaos, and his face fell, "Flesh-Eaters!! They've already arrived!! It's too damn fast!"

He had originally assumed that they would only appear after some time. Who would have thought they had already arrived in Seoul.

The moment he came out to the street, 2 Flesh-Eaters covered in blood pounced towards him in a frenzy.

He pulled out his Black Tooth Blade and sliced them apart, their bodies sent flying.

After that, he quickly dashed forward, and in a manner of seconds, he appeared back at the banquet hall.

He threw a communicator to Chu Joon Ho, barking out solemnly, "Mobilize your troops immediately, the 2nd World's Flesh-Eaters have already appeared in Seoul. Hurry!"

Chu Joon Ho's face fell. He did not waste any time, however, and quickly made the decision, "What?! Alright, got it. I'll go mobilize them now, to wipe out those creatures!"

Immediately, he disappeared from his original location, heading towards his forces.

Yue Zhong then glanced at the unconscious Kim Park Chan and sent a Puppet Rune into his head.

Kim Park Chan stirred awake not long after, and greeted Yue Zhong with respect, "Greetings Master."

Yue Zhong ordered, "Go mobilize your troops now, eliminate all monsters you see."

Kim Park Chan was after the President of The Republic of Korea

faction, and he had a sizeable force. If he could muster them all, it would be possible to annihilate the monsters and save some people.

He bowed down and swiftly headed out, "Understood!"

Yue Zhong glanced at Jeon Yoon Ah and the rest and said indifferently, "The few of you, follow me."

When they heard that, they quickly ran forward.

In this current chaos, only Yue Zhong would be able to protect them.

At the entrance of the large hall, Yue Zhong led the women into a military truck and swiftly headed towards the Revival Assembly base.

Along the way, Flesh-Eaters could be seen everywhere, killing and pillaging, raping and destroying everything.

Seeing the military truck containing Yue Zhong and the rest, dozens of them quickly roared out and charged towards them.

The women were all frightened out of their wits, huddling together and trembling.

Yue Zhong pulled out his Stinger and fired out a few times.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Each continuous shot took out the Flesh-Eaters in succession, preventing them from even nearing the military truck.

Jung Ri Soo watched how calm Yue Zhong was, and her fear subsided, her gaze full of adoration, "So cool!! He really does give a sense of security."

Chapter 945: Breakthrough!

Yue Zhong continued to drive through, killing a dozen of Flesh-Eaters before arriving at the Revival Assembly base.

Currently, there were Flesh-Eaters and Vampires everywhere, slaughtering humans.

The soldiers had been cleaned out once by Yue Zhong, leaving only 200 Puppet soldiers.

These 200 Puppet soldiers could only defend a few key locations and were helpless to the rest.

One could see the slaughter of the Koreans at the hands of those Flesh-Eaters and Vampires, while screams rang throughout the air. It was like hell.

"Damn it!"

Yue Zhong blasted the heads of a few Flesh-Eaters as he cursed out. No matter how strong he was, it was impossible for him to save the thousands of people here. Defending was always tougher than offense.

Yue Zhong immediately went to the command center and held the fort, while deploying the 200 Puppet soldiers out.

They formed units and began to fight back, rescuing numerous survivors.

The weak point about these Puppet soldiers was that without an order, they would be rigid and stupid in their movements. Yue Zhong had to constantly give out orders for them to carry out.

"Warning! Warning! There is a large horde of zombies right outside Seoul, making their way towards this location. Based on estimations, they will completely surround Seoul in 30 minutes, and cutting off any retreat to North Korea."

All of a sudden, Bai Yi's image appeared in the corner of the

display, reporting the imminent disaster.

Intelligence and information were important in modern warfare. Yue Zhong knew the importance of it, that was why he had planted several electronic flies everywhere to be his eyes and ears.

His face fell, "What?! Pull up the image!"

"Yes!"

The display went fuzzy for a while before a dozen images were shown.

Under Bai Yi's control, the various displays were enlarged to reveal the terrifying scene outside of the city.

On the displays, a huge horde of zombies was currently running at a speed that surpassed humans, with an agility that had never been seen in them before, as they made their way towards Seoul.

Among the zombies, there were many L2s, L3s, S2s, S3s, S4s, H2s, Devourers, Hunters, and other Evolved zombies. After an entire year of evolution, these zombies had become stronger and faster, developing scales and horns.

The sea of zombies was enough to make even a Type 5 expert like Yue Zhong shudder.

With Yue Zhong's current strength, it would be easy for him to slaughter a thousand evolved Zombies. However, the zombies had a single, terrifying, advantage, which was their numbers. Their seemingly endless numbers. No matter how strong Yue Zhong was, throwing himself into the sea of zombies would just spell his doom.

"What is that? Flying zombies?! How the hell?! If there are hundred of thousands of them, how the hell can humans defend against that?!"

All of a sudden, Yue Zhong caught sight of an entire patch that covered the sky. Looking closer, he realized that these were Evolved zombies of about 1.3m in height, their limbs short, but

their backs had a pair of powerful, fleshy wings.

Seeing this, Yue Zhong's heart turned cold. The humans were already at a disadvantage. Relying on firepower and traps, they might be able to defend cities. However, with the appearance of these flight-based creatures, ground-based defenses were ineffective against them. It had become increasingly harder for the humans to defend.

When defending the 20 Xue Luo Forts back in the 3rd World, Yue Zhong had experienced it for himself. Defending against the aerial attacks was tougher by many times, more so than just when the Dino-Warriors and their vassal forces charged alone. Without the joint attack from the aerial units, the Xue Luo Forts would not have fallen so easily.

"Seoul can no longer be defended!" Yue Zhong saw the endless horde, and he sighed.

Yue Zhong had no direct subordinates in Seoul, just relying on commanding those Puppet soldiers took a lot of his mental capacity. In front of the huge sea of zombies, his current force was nothing.

He then steeled himself and threw away all emotions, "Immediately gather forces to retreat."

After hesitating a while, he ordered into his communicator once more, "Tell them, the person who wants to lead them away is Chinese, he's Yue Zhong, the murderer of Choi Won Wong. The chosen point to breach the siege would be at North Korea. They're free to choose if they want to follow or stay. However, those who want to follow must abide by our orders unconditionally."

When the Puppet soldiers disseminated the orders, there was a commotion among them. Many chose to slink away quietly. They were not comfortable with a foreigner being their leader. At the same time, most of the survivors here did not have favorable feelings about the Chinese. They were afraid that he would hold it

against them after.

Yue Zhong contacted Chu Joon Ho, "Chu Joon Ho, my men have discovered a huge horde of zombies currently surrounding the city. In about 30 minutes, the zombies would surround Seoul, cutting off retreat into North Korea. I'm preparing to breach through there. You should make your preparations too. I'm making a move first, am heading towards North Korea."

"What?" Chu Joon Ho exclaimed in shock, "Yue Zhong, come with me to Suwon City. If our armies work together, we definitely can breach the siege and reach Suwon City safely!"

Chu Joon Ho's base was in Korea, he was not willing to head to North Korea with Yue Zhong. Furthermore, if he were to tell his subordinates that he wanted to go to North Korea, it was likely that many would desert him.

Yue Zhong turned him down resolutely, "I'm heading back to China, I can't go with you. All the best, and goodbye. See you if fate allows it."

After cutting off the connection, Yue Zhong began to organize his troops and left immediately.

A number of buses drove off, and with the help of the Puppet soldiers, the survivors began to get aboard.

Not long after, a fleet of armored vehicles and heavy vehicles started to move swiftly towards the exit of Seoul City.

When the fleet reached about 5km away from Seoul, the howls and roars of the horde could be heard, as many zombies headed towards them.

"Ah!!"

Inside the vehicle fleet, the survivors saw the zombies running faster than humans and screamed out of fear.

The mechanized infantry vehicles began to extend their weapons

and fired at the zombies.

During the volley of fire, many zombies were pierced through, their bodies destroyed. However, many others fell to the ground and got back up almost immediately after, as though there was no effect.

Inside the car, Yue Zhong quickly made a decision, "No. If this goes on, everyone will be wiped out."

The zombies had evolved into a terrifying state, with the current firepower Yue Zhong had, it was not enough to carve a way out.

With a single thought, Yue Zhong leaped out of the car and channeled his Summon Tamed Beast technique. A void appeared out of mid-air, and Mount Tai appeared out of the hole, dashing towards the zombies.

The moment Mount Tai appeared and charged, with every swing of its tail, over hundreds and thousands of zombies would be instantly pulverized.

With the help of Mount Tai suppression, a huge part of the zombies was killed, revealing a path.

Yue Zhong's fleet continued to drive through, right through the mass of blood and flesh.

Right after they charged through, the dense horde suddenly split apart, revealing a number of H2s, with their mouths open, as they shot multiple flame balls towards the fleet.

Hong! Hong! Hong!!

Faced with those H2s, a number of armored vehicles and buses were blasted apart. In an instant, over 200 survivors were killed in the resulting explosions.

When they saw this, many other survivors screamed out in terror.

Yue Zhong waved his hands, and 2 Electromagnetic Cannons

appeared. He held them and began to fire at an incredible speed, blasting the heads of those H2s accurately as though the bullets had eyes.

The heads of the H2s exploded one by one, slumping to the floor lifelessly.

Over a dozen of them were killed in an instant by Yue Zhong, while the rest that had just revealed their heads would also be taken out instantly.

Due to Yue Zhong's timely decisions and actions, soon, with the help of Mount Tai, the entire group managed to break through the siege.

However, just as they had just exited the horde, a number of infantry vehicles rolled out from behind. To their horror, there were zombies controlling the heavy machine guns, firing at the various armored vehicles and buses.

When that barrage of heavy caliber bullets slammed into the buses, they pierced the buses easily, penetrating the bodies of the humans in them.

Chapter 946: Seoul Falls!

The survivors that were hit by the machine gun bullets screamed out in agony, as they fell and writhed about.

Seeing their plight, the rest of the survivors had eyes full of fear, but they were helpless, unable to do anything.

"What the hell?! Those zombies know how to use weapons? How the hell are humans supposed to survive? Yue Zhong stared at the zombies in shock.

Although the zombies could operate firearms, in truth, their damage could not compare to those H2s. However, it was a fact that was hard to swallow.

Humans could suppress zombies in the past because they could use tools and set traps, firing weapons with the weapons left behind during the apocalypse.

After all, the numbers of the zombies were at least 100 times that of humans. The territory that they covered was also at least 10 times. If they could already use weapons, it was a nightmare to all survivors.

If both sides could use weapons, then the zombies that were undying would hold a huge advantage.

"Damn it!!"

Yue Zhong turned around, firing the electromagnetic cannons in his hands at those incoming machine gun vehicles. They exploded when the beams of light blasted onto them.

Right at this time, the airborne dwarf zombies began to fly over.

"Airborne Mutated Infected Evolved Being Level 30 F1, possesses the ability of flight, sharp claws and high infection rate."

Yue Zhong glanced at the F1s, and with a glint in his eyes, he clapped his hands towards them, channeling his Devil Flames. The

flames shot out in 2 towering beams, blasting towards the F1s. The moment those F1s came in contact with the Devil Flames, they screamed out in agony, turning into ash.

However, their numbers were really too many. A lot of them managed to evade the Devil Flames as they pounced on the buses.

With their sharp claws, they easily tore the hull apart, before burrowing into the bus and began their attack on the humans.

The 3 buses were quickly surrounded by the F1s and swarmed. The screams within the buses spelled the doom of the 100-odd survivors as they became food.

With a thought, Yue Zhong caused the Devil Flames to spread out and envelop the area, turning even more F1s into ashes.

When over a thousand F1s had been consumed by the Devil Flames, there was a strange howl from the midst of the zombie horde. Upon hearing that signal, all the F1s quickly evacuated the area, not harassing Yue Zhong's group further.

Yue Zhong leaped high into the sky, over 20m, and he looked to the distance. He discovered that about 10 km away, there was a young man who looked similar to humans in appearance, of about 2m in height, covered in black scales and his eyes were bloodshot. He was staring fixedly at Yue Zhong with a violent and savage look.

Yue Zhong stared at him, and he could tell from the intelligence behind its gaze, "Super-intelligent Evolved Zombie lifeform."

Descending back, Yue Zhong came to the car and swept a glance towards the back.

By now, the zombie horde had already covered the hole that they had breached through.

Yue Zhong looked at the sealed route, his eyes flashing with a complicated gaze, "Seoul is finished!"

With over a million Evolved zombies surrounding the place, even if Yue Zhong were to utilize all his trump cards, he would not be able to save Seoul. One single person was still too small against an army.

In order to salvage the current situation, Yue Zhong estimated that he would have to be at the Type 8 or Type 9 Divine Warrior realm at least.

He had seen for himself how terrifying a Type 9 Divine Warrior was, back at the 3rd World. It was an entity that could transcend space, possessing the qualifications to challenge 'God'. If he could reach that level, he would be able to take on these millions of zombies without problems.

The moment Yue Zhong left, Seoul no longer had any faction strong enough to withstand the zombies.

On the streets, there were screams everywhere, as zombies chased down the Korean survivors, devouring them, leaving only bones behind.

Everywhere, screams rang out, with broken bodies and scattered organs strewn all over the ground.

As the zombies were consuming the humans, they quickly came across the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires of the 2nd World.

When those zombies saw these new entities, they did not let up their attack, instead, pouncing onto them, and tearing them to bits.

In retaliation, the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires went all out and tore the heads off the zombies.

Both sides engaged in a wanton slaughter of the humans and an intense clash between the both of them.

Soon, the battle was turning in the favor of the zombies.

While the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires were strong, the numbers

of the zombies were simply overwhelming. The moment they got careless, the zombies would overpower them, and tear them into pieces.

Although the infection and virus had no way of affecting the Saint Clan, they could still tear them apart.

As the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires were being forced back, a blond-haired, blue-eyed man walked out, dressed in a suit, looking like a knight from the Middle-Ages.

A strong pressure emitted from him, and when the zombies that were unafraid of death felt the pressure, even they began to tremble and lost the will to fight.

The man looked at the horde of zombies and spoke, "Commander of the Zombie Clan that had just come into being. I'm your kin, the Ancestor of the Zombie Clan from another world. My name is Ulrich, and I hope to speak to you. We are of the same kind, and we can work together. We have some information on your world and know things that you don't. Would you like to know the reason you've gained sentience? Would you want to know how to continue evolving? Would you want to survive? As long as you cooperate with us, we will tell you everything."

A Type 5 Ancestor was an entity that taken part in the Sacred War for many months and years in the 2nd World, till they achieved victory. Thus, they knew many things, as well as what the newly-sentient Evolved zombies of this world desired.

The zombie horde turned silent, before splitting apart. The 2m-tall Super-Evolved zombie covered in black scales that had crossed glares with Yue Zhong earlier, walked out, looking at Ulrich and spoke, "I'm Cao Min Long, I want to know some answers. If you can tell me, I'm willing to cooperate with you."

Ulrich gazed at him and sighed, "Peak of Type 4. You're already at the peak of Type 4 Divine Warrior realm. You have a powerful evolution potential and might even reach the Type 6 realm. I will

tell you all I know, you should evolve to the Type 5 realm soon."

As Cao Min Long and Ulrich came to an agreement and joined forces, the entire Seoul became hell for the humans, where their screams of agony rang out.

The screams and moans carried on for the entire night.

When the first ray of sunlight hit Seoul, all that could be seen were wandering zombies, and among them, many of their bodies were already in states of rotting, but their skin was not yet dried up, compared to the rest which was already emaciated for a long while.

Just yesterday, the boisterous city containing hundreds of thousands of people had already transformed into a ghost city, with countless blood spots everywhere.

The zombies continued to lumber around Seoul, mixed with the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires. From time to time, they would manage to sniff out a human, before tearing them into pieces.

On the other side, Yue Zhong's convoy continued to travel through the night, crossing over a hundred li. They had already passed into North Korea's territory.

Along the way, they did not come across too many zombies. Somehow, all of them had already been summoned by Cao Min Long in the past, gathered together within Seoul now.

Those intelligent evolved zombies had already learned to gather their forces. Even Yue Zhong did not dare to face their amassed force head-on.

When they entered North Korea, they were met with a scene entirely different from South Korea.

In South Korea, the buildings were tall, the cars aplenty, filled with signs of modern society. As for North Korea, there were plenty of old-fashioned houses, the roads were not level. Everywhere, the propaganda of their glorious leader could be seen.

Yue Zhong found a quiet and broad place to stop the fleet, before getting the survivors to alight and consume breakfast.

Those who were willing to leave with Yue Zhong did not number many, only about over a thousand, filling 20 different vehicles.

During the breach of the zombies, hundreds had died, and their buses were down to 11, leaving behind only slightly over 600. Half of the survivors had been lost in the journey.

Chapter 947: Departure and Death!

The faces of the survivors were filled with weariness, dread, and sorrow as they disembarked. Corpses were carried down and tossed to the side.

These survivors had experienced a night filled with horror and tension. The aftermath left them so exhausted that they had no energy to bury the bodies.

Jeon Yoon Ah and the other females came down and heard sounds of crying and wailing. The machine guns yesterday had hit a few unlucky survivors in their arms and legs. Without medical treatment, they could only groan and wail in agony.

"That was too terrifying. Thankfully I'm with him, otherwise, I would have already been dead." Jeon Yoon Ah stared at the survivors, a chill creeping up her heart.

The rest of the ladies were also celebrating inwardly.

Flames crackled, as the Puppet soldiers became chefs and waiters, serving bowls filled with cooked rice and flour to the survivors.

Yue Zhong's side was able to enjoy the pleasurable Type 4 Mutant Beast meat, as the smell of the delicious meat wafted in all directions.

Jeon Yoon Ah and the other ladies did not care much for their image, wolfing down the meat, as though they were about to swallow their own tongues.

Many survivors stared over hungrily, their eyes filled with expectations and hope. Many of them had not eaten meat in goodness knows how long. Even if they did, it had been rat meat, bugs, and for some, human flesh.

Choi Min Shik, a burly Korean man with a thick mustache finished his bowl in a few mouthfuls before a fierce glint appeared in his eyes. He stood up, shouting arrogantly, "I can't take this

anymore. We're eating garbage over here, while that Chinese is eating meat!"

He continued agitatedly, "Everybody, think about it, yesterday we listened to his command and left Seoul. How many died?! Over half!! If we had gone to Busan, we would not have lost so many people! This Chinese cannot be trusted. Everyone! Join me and resist!! We must get back our rights!! Leave this Chinese man!"

Under his incitement, many survivors began to show expressions of hatred. Due to the number of deaths the previous night, they have filled with some prejudice towards Yue Zhong already. It did not take much for them to be riled up. However, they did not dare act due to the Puppet soldiers standing guard around.

Choi Min Shik walked up to one of the soldiers and spoke loudly, "We Koreans would not bow to violence! If you want to open fire, just kill me! I don't want to live on in this godforsaken world!! I will tear off your mask and let everyone see your true colors!!"

"What are you shouting for?"

At this time, Yue Zhong walked over, with Jung Ri Soo beside him translating, conveying Yue Zhong's words, while translating the words of the Koreans for Yue Zhong.

Choi Min Shik saw Yue Zhong and took a few steps back involuntarily. He had seen how Yue Zhong was able to resist the sea of zombies last night. If Yue Zhong wanted to kill him, he would be dead in a heartbeat.

Yue Zhong shot them a cold look, "Those who want to leave, I won't stop. There's no problem if you want to go. I can give you 20 days' worth of rations. Please go quickly. Those who stay on, have to abide by my orders without complaints, regardless of how ridiculous it might be. If you can't do that, just go."

Yue Zhong had saved them due to the little humanitarianism he still had left in him. Since they were not appreciative, he would

not continue sticking his warm intentions on their cold backsides.

He then shot Choi Min Shik a cold look full of killing intent, "And you. If you want to leave, leave. Any more bullshit and I won't be merciful."

Being stared at by Yue Zhong, Choi Min Shik felt fear, and he retreated hastily, before turning around to speak to the rest, "Guys! Listen to me! Let's leave together and work together!! We can definitely make it out of this alive! Long live the Republic of Korea!!"

Choi Min Shik shouted and walked over to the Puppet soldiers, grabbing his share of 20 days rations, and began to wolf it down.

Most of the survivors were not happy having a foreigner like Yue Zhong lead them. Adding on to the death toll of the previous night, they were filled with distrust and dissatisfaction over his leadership. Most of them were also famished. Under these circumstances, almost all the Korean survivors stood up and went to take their rations, following after Choi Min Shik.

Apparently, they were not happy with Yue Zhong's dictatorship. Few were willing to hand their lives over to a foreigner.

At the same time, they had not seen any zombies, so they were beginning to think that it was possible to survive with their own strength.

Yue Zhong watched coldly as they left, not saying anything.

He then swept a glance at Jeon Yoon Ah and the rest, "You may leave as well. I won't stop you."

To him, these Korean survivors were a burden. The more that left him, the better. He would not have to be responsible for all their lives then.

Jeon Yoon Ah looked at him with teary eyes, "Sir Yue Zhong, I won't leave. I'm yours for life. Please don't chase me away."

She was smart, and she knew that even if she took her 20 days of rations, it would be snatched by those men in the survivors' group, and be treated as a toy, leading a life worse than a dog. Choosing to stay with Yue Zhong was a better choice.

"She snatched it!!"

The other 3 exchanged looks and quickly came forward to plead pitifully, "Yue Zhong, we are your people. Please don't leave abandon us, we're willing to listen to your orders.

Yue Zhong swept a glance and realized there were 20 other women of Chinese descent that did not leave. Evidently, having been tortured by those beasts in the Revival Assembly, they had lost trust in the Koreans.

After breakfast, Yue Zhong declared solemnly, "Alright, let's leave."

The huge convoy then began to make its way further into North Korea.

Not long after they left, there were screams and gunshots in the distance.

"Save me!! Help!!"

"Wait!! Wait for us!!"

"..."

At this time, those Koreans that had left came running back towards the breakfast point, screaming in fear.

Behind them, there were many zombies in tattered military clothes wielding rifles, chasing after them.

They leaped onto the Korean survivors whenever they could and bit down viciously.

"Ah!!!"

"Save us!!!"

"..."

They continued to scream loudly; at every second, a Korean survivor would fall under the grasp of the zombies, screaming out in despair and fear.

"Scram!! Out of my way!"

Choi Min Shik, who had tried to incite the Koreans, had thrown his rations to one side, shoving his fellow survivors, trying to make his way towards the breakfast point.

"No!! We shall all die together!!"

One of the men, who had been pushed to the ground by Choi Min Shik, had a sudden glint of desperation and madness. He burst forth with a sudden bout of strength, grabbing Choi Min Shik's right leg.

Choi Min Shik began to kick the man while shouting furiously, "Fuck off!! Fuck off!! Bastard!!!"

The man was kicked bloody, but he continued to grab Choi Min Shik's leg tightly.

2 zombies which ran faster than humans suddenly pounced over, grabbing Choi Min Shik and bit down on his neck.

"Ah!!!"

He screamed out like a wounded beast, struggling frantically. However, he could not get out of the zombie's grasp and was consumed alive soon after.

The zombies were already faster than humans. In their midst, there were even the Hunters. None of them managed to make it to the breakfast point, as they were already all killed.

A single Korean Evolver with decent skills and wielding a Level 3 Green Sharpsword hacked and slashed his way over, decapitating the low-level Evolved zombies.

All of a sudden, a Devourer leaped out from within the zombie

group and leaped at the Korean Evolver.

In a flash, the head of the Korean Evolver disappeared, reappearing in the mouth of the Devourer. It bit down with its sharp teeth, crushing the head of the Korean Evolver, as red and white matter splattered everywhere.

When Jeon Yoon Ah and the rest saw what happened to them, their hearts turned cold and they trembled uncontrollably. Had they chosen to leave earlier, they would have been among those who died.

Chapter 948: Pyongyang, Sea Beasts Come on Shore!

When the women of Chinese and mixed Korean-Chinese descent saw the scene, their backs were also filled with cold sweat. Being consumed alive by zombies was one of the cruelest ways to die.

Yue Zhong eyed the group of zombies and ordered coldly, "Kill them!"

White Bones flashed, with a speed surpassing the sound barrier, reaching their midst in a breath. Countless bone spike protruded out from its body, and it spun madly, turning into a fearsome meat grinder.

In an instant, many of the zombies were sliced apart as their limbs flew everywhere.

When the 3 Hunters discovered White Bones, they leaped with all their might towards it.

White Bones then channeled out even more sharp bone blades, slashing at the incoming 3 Hunters, slicing them up into multiple parts.

In just a few breaths, White Bones had obliterated the entire group of zombies.

After killing them, Yue Zhong ordered the Puppet soldiers to gather the survivors' corpses together. He then poured oil and lit them up, burning the dead bodies into ashes.

Once they were done, the convoy began to set off one more towards the North.

It was quiet along the way, without any signs of life. From time to time, they would come across small, scattered groups of zombies.

Before they got close, they would be sliced apart by White Bones.

As for the Type 5 Mount Tai who had acted as the meat grinder vanguard, it returned to the sea. Its consumption was too terrifying, only the vast sea could feed it.

"Stop!! Don't move!! Otherwise, we'll open fire."

When the convoy got closer to the capital Pyongyang, a number of North Korean soldiers appeared on one of the roads, barking out loudly.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly, waving his hands for the convoy to stop. Although he could get White Bones to kill them all, unless there was a special reason, he wanted to try and communicate.

As they came to a stop, Yue Zhong came down from the vehicle and saw a shocking sight on the sides of the road.

There were a number of men had sharp spikes pierced through their tibia (shin bones), tied to wooden stakes. Many of them were moaning in agony, while others had died, and were already dried up corpses.

The North Korean soldier barked out, "Get down on your knees and hand over your weapons!! Hands above your head!! Otherwise, I'll beat you to death, you damn Chinese."

The militant used his gun to point at Yue Zhong as he barked out, "On your knees!! On your knees!!"

Jung Ri Soo quickly translated for Yue Zhong.

A strong killing intent poured out of Yue Zhong as he commanded coldly, "Since you don't give face, you can all go to hell."

With that order, White Bones transformed into a flash, and charged right into their midst, slaughtering the few militants in a breath.

"Let's go!"

After dealing with those militants, the convoy continued towards

inner Pyongyang.

White Bones took the lead, using its terrifying speed to charge into the enemy ranks and slaughtering them whenever they appeared.

Yue Zhong would never show mercy to those who were unreasonable.

When those North Korean militants were killed, none of them could react fast enough to raise the alarm.

Soon, the convoy managed to enter Pyongyang successfully.

Pyongyang City was a pretty lavish city, with modern structures and construction. After all, it was the capital of North Korea.

After entering Pyongyang, Yue Zhong saw a large number of emaciated survivors, as though they were skeletons, their eyes dull and lifeless as they watched Yue Zhong's group.

In the first place, North Korea had already been lacking in resources, since most of it was imported. In fact, it was one of the countries with the highest death rate from famine.

The apocalypse was in its 2nd year, and all that the North Korean survivors could rely on were the rations left behind.

Most of these were taken up by the upper echelons, while the ordinary survivors suffered.

Seeing Yue Zhong's powerful armed convoy, the survivors did not dare to provoke him, allowing them to pass through the city smoothly.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Just as they were at the center of Pyongyang, the sounds of dense artillery fire resounded from afar.

"What's going on?"

Yue Zhong frowned and quickly sent out a large number of

robotic flies and dragonflies.

As the robotic critters flew out, Yue Zhong opened up the display inside the command vehicle. On it, he could see all that the robotic flies saw.

At the northern area of Pyongyang, there was a huge army camp set up, with numerous armored vehicles and soldiers being sent to the frontlines.

As the robotic flies continued forward, the reason for the artillery fire became clear.

There was currently a large horde of sea-based Mutant Beasts coming up on shore near the north side of Pyongyang.

Many North Korean militants were also stationed at the various defense lines, fighting hard to keep the Mutant Beasts at bay.

These militants had obtained the legacies of Pyongyang City, including cannons, infantry vehicles, tanks, rocket launchers, and many more.

With the support of the heavy fire, many Mutant Beasts were blasted to smithereens. However, their numbers seemed to be endless, continuously pushing up the shore. One after another, the defense posts fell.

The militants started to crumble and fell back quickly, while the North Korean soldiers behind collected after them.

Evidently, there were still capable soldiers in North Korea. Some of the soldiers suffered defeat but continued to maintain their ground, utilizing all sorts of combat styles and traps to injure and kill the Mutant Beasts.

When Yue Zhong caught sight of the horde, he frowned, "Are the sea-based Mutant Beasts coming up on shore?"

The Sea Mutant Beasts were an even more threatening force than the zombies. The seas were vast and could sustain countless

Mutant Beasts.

Their numbers were likely more than 10 times that of the zombies, at the same time, they had numerous Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

Once those Type 5 Mutant Beasts made their move, with Earth's current technology, other than the nuclear missiles, nothing else could destroy them.

At the same time, it had only been 2 years since the onset of the apocalypse, Yue Zhong was worried that there might already be a Type 6 Mutant Beast.

Every single movement of a Type 6 Mutant Beast was a disaster. A single Type 6 Sea Mutant Beast could easily level a human city.

On Earth, other than the Nuclear Bombs, super Evolvers also possess the small chance of killing a Type 6 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong's worry soon became reality.

From the midst of the horde, 4 monstrous behemoths over hundreds of meters tall broke out from the surface of the water.

Right behind them, there was even a Type 5 Sea Snake with a single horn, coiling over a thousand kilometers in length.

200 mermaids appeared, with nothing covering their top halves save for shells. Their looks were out of the world, and they were all at least 1.8m. These were the commanders of the Sea Mutant Beasts, the Sea Clan.

And finally among these mermaids, there was one absolute beauty that surpassed them all, with a crown on her blue hair, and a rhombic white-silver crystal embedded on her forehead. She exuded a cold and collected charm while possessing an extremely voluptuous body. This was the royalty of the Sea Clan, the controller of the Type 5 Mutant Beast.

These mermaids seemed to have evolved from some unknown

aquatic lifeform, however, they possessed the ability to control the Sea Mutant Beasts. Yue Zhong had caught for himself a little royal from the Sea Clan before, making use of her powers to send many Mutant Beasts to their deaths, empowering his own subordinates. However, that little mermaid's powers were far inferior to this royalty in front of him.

The moment those Type 4 and Type 5 Mutant Beasts appeared, they immediately charged forth towards the human camps.

One Type 4 Mutant Sea Snake opened its mouth to fire out shots of poison like cannonballs at the human camps. Everywhere the poison struck, the humans would be corroded into puddles.

At the same time, once the poison splattered, they would turn into gas, which enveloped an area of more than a dozen square meters. As the wind blew and the soldiers breathed in the gas, they would turn black and crumple to the floor, struggling in agony before they died.

One huge Mutant Electric Eel that was over hundreds of meters in length had evolved claws, looking like giant Chinese salamanders. It opened its mouth and fired out lightning bolts, frying numerous soldiers into charred corpses.

Chapter 949: Battle of Type 5 Mutant Beasts!

Another huge Type 4 Mutant Black Ice Turtle opened its huge mouth to spit freezing breath towards the human camps. Upon contact, the humans immediately froze into ice sculptures.

The moment these Type 4 Mutant Beasts entered the fray, the tides of the battle changed immediately. The human soldiers were defeated one after another and scattered like raindrops, forced to retreat.

The bombardment of the heavy artillery did not stop, nor did the cannons and heavy machine guns. They continued to fire at the incoming horde of Mutant Beasts.

It was true that the moment these sea-based creatures came on land, their abilities would suffer a drastic drop. Their speed would not be as fast as it was in the water, even the Type 4 Mutant Beasts would rarely reach the speed of sound.

However, even with that handicap, many of them still could surpass the human running speed. They charged forward and quickly used their claws and teeth to tear the human soldiers apart.

Under the lead of the Type 4 Mutant Beasts, the human defense lines started to crumble, while the soldiers retreated in droves.

Tanks and armored vehicles were stomped flat and destroyed, becoming useless piles of metal. A number of human soldiers were directly swallowed or ripped apart.

Once the army realized they were helpless, the soldiers of Pyongyang began to fall apart, forming a tide that surged back in retreat. Many soldiers threw aside their armor and fled for their lives.

As the number of fleeing soldiers increased, even the orders of

the commanders were no longer effective.

Almost every soldier was escaping right now, with only a rare few still putting up a brave fight, attacking the Mutant Beasts every now and then. However, such a resistance was deemed futile, and those courageous soldiers were met with a quick death as well.

The human resistance was being destroyed in multiple areas, before finally crumbling totally.

Various armored vehicles containing the high-ranking commanders began to flee back, as soldiers threw their weapons and equipment. In order to flee, they did not care about the others and caused some to be stampeded over. Injuries and the death toll quickly mounted.

"Shit, Pyongyang is going to be finished like this."

Yue Zhong glanced at the horde of Sea Mutant Beasts making their way over, and frowned, before making a decision, "Head to the northeast."

Although there were some Mutant Beasts over at the northeast side, it was also where they were the weakest. Only by breaking out of the siege would Yue Zhong be able to lead his convoy back into China.

The machine gun vehicles and cannons began to fire out madly at the Mutant Beasts as they charged for the northeast.

With the dense barrage of metal, many low-level Mutant Beasts were shredded apart.

At the same time, White Bones charged first as the vanguard, twisting around with its countless bone blades. It managed to tear many Mutant Beasts into slices in showers of blood and flesh. Not a single beast was its match.

Yue Zhong pulled out 2 Electromagnetic Cannons and fired out constantly, blasting the heads of those Type 3 Mutant Beasts that

got too close, fresh blood and brain matter splattering everywhere.

Yue Zhong and White Bones were handling the high-level Mutant Beasts, while the heavy firearms dealt with the low-level Mutant Beasts, easily clearing them.

Just like this, the convoy proceeded to slaughter their way through the Mutant Beast horde.

Just as they were about to break out of the siege successfully, a dozen huge Type 2 Profound Ice Fishes opened their mouths, firing out ice shards that fell like rain upon the convoy.

Under the bombardment of ice shards, a number of machine gun vehicles were slammed out of shape, some even nailed to the ground.

One of the fuel-carrying trucks was also struck by the ice shards, and fuel began to pour out of it.

Yue Zhong flipped his hands and a number of electromagnetic beams fired out onto the Type 2 Profound Ice Fishes, accurately slaughtering them.

After he dealt with them, he frowned and thought to himself, "Damn it, it's not enough. If we blindly charge through, I can barely save a few."

This time, the onslaught of the Mutant Beasts was not any less than that of the zombies in Seoul. Furthermore, they had countless abilities like ice, water, electricity, poison, bones, activating them could cause Yue Zhong greatly.

"We can only do it like this."

He made the decision and activated his Summon Tamed Beast, and the Type 5 Mount Tai that had left them not long ago reappeared through a void.

When Type 5 Mount Tai appeared, it became like a huge steamroller that squashed all the Mutant Beasts. With every single

step it took, an entire patch of Mutant Beasts would be squashed under it. As it swung its tail to and fro, a number of Pyongyang structures came crumbling down together with the Mutant Beasts.

When the ice shards, freezing breaths, lightning bolts, poison shots and bone spikes hit Mount Tai's body, only the lightning bolts managed to cause some superficial charred marks. The freezing breaths might be able to cause a layer of ice over the affected part of Mount Tai, but the moment it moved, the tremor was enough to shatter the ice. The ice shards were unable to penetrate its body, not even making it past the scales. It was the same for the bone spikes and the poison globs.

Unless it was an attack by a Type 3 Mutant Beast and above, all other attacks posed no danger whatsoever to Mount Tai. Even the attacks of a Type 3 or Type 4 would just injure it slightly before its freakish regeneration ability helped to recover.

All of a sudden, Mount Tai let out an earthshaking roar towards the skies, as a powerful pressure emitted from its body outwards.

Facing that overwhelming pressure, the low-level Mutant Beasts were all terrified, quickly fleeing in all directions, not daring to attack Mount Tai any longer.

There was a huge difference in their levels after all. Mount Tai was a Type 5, and a water-based Mutant Beast to boot, hence it could naturally suppress the rest of them.

With that single roar, the convoy managed to break out successfully.

When the North Korean convoy saw Yue Zhong killing a path out, they changed directions from random fleeing to chasing after him.

One of the fleets managed to follow after and broke through the siege.

Another fleet made its way south.

Among the invading Mutant Beasts, the beautiful Sea Clan Queen looked on as Yue Zhong's convoy broke through the siege, her eyes flashing with a strange glint. Her lips parted, and a strange whistle emitted.

Hearing that whistle, the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake finally could not repress its killing intent any longer and charge towards Mount Tai.

Within the vast seas, every single Type 5 Mutant Beast was an overlord, possessing their own territory. They would not encroach on other territories easily. The moment they saw another similar-rank Beast, both parties would go all out in a clash, consuming the other in order to advance and evolve. Only Type 6 and Type 7 Mutant Beasts were able to suppress that instinct.

When the Type 5 Sea Snake saw Type 5 Mount Tai, it was filled with killing intent, and an urge to consume. If it was not for the Sea Clan Queen holding it back, it would have pounced forward long ago.

Along the way, the Mutant Beasts all parted to one side, allowing the Type 5 Sea Snake a clear path.

Those that did not manage to get out of the way were squashed.

Mount Tai could also feel the killing intent locked on itself, and after it swung its tail to flatten a group of Mutant Beasts into meat paste, it turned around and charged right at the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake.

If it were a close-quarter combat, Mount Tai had a better chance of victory.

The Type 5 Sea Snake was obviously experienced, from far, it already opened its huge jaws to fire out its innate ability. A dense fog of poison shot out at Mount Tai like cannon balls.

When the balls of poison slammed into Mount Tai, they dispersed and started to corrode the scales of Mount Tai, giving off

a sizzling sound. A huge chunk of flesh was also corroded away, and the worst thing was that its powerful regeneration ability could not do a thing.

Numerous balls slammed into Mount Tai's body, and a number of smaller Mutant Beasts were unfortunate to be caught in the crossfire, instantly melting into puddles.

Facing the assault, Mount Tai roared out in agony, but it continued its charge at the Type 5 Sea Snake.

As it forcefully bore the attack and reached the Type 5 Sea Snake, its powerful tail slammed into the Sea Snake's body violently.

The Type 5 Sea Snake shuddered violently and spat out a huge amount of blood.

It then immediately twisted its body to pounce on Mount Tai, coiling around it and constricting it, intending to squeeze Mount Tai to death.

Mount Tai also bit down viciously on the body of the Sea Snake, biting out a huge bloody chunk, as fresh blood flowed everywhere.

Chapter 950: Killing the Type 5 Sea Snake!

The usual chosen method of combat of these gigantic beasts was melee. It was simple, violent, no need for flair, nor skill, only their innate ability to kill.

The Type 5 Sea Snake continued to coil around Mount Tai, its body constricting tightly. The pressure was starting to show, as Mount Tai's bones started to make some cracking noises.

As they were caught in this cruel exchange, a shadow charged over from the northern and southern side each.

The shadow from the north was precisely that absolutely beautiful Mermaid Queen with her voluptuous body. She rode the waves and came in front of the 2 entangled beasts.

She frowned, as a blue beam of light shot out from her forehead and landed on the head of Mount Tai.

Struck by the beam, Mount Tai's eyes glazed over, and it relaxed slightly, allowing the Type 5 Sea Snake to coil even tighter. It resulted in more bones of Mount Tai being fractured, as it spat out a mouth of blood, its body trembling and its life in danger.

At this critical juncture, Yue Zhong wielded his Electromagnetic Cannon to fire out at the head of the Mutant Sea Snake without stop.

The shots blasted through the scales of the Mutant Sea Snake accurately, drawing blood and causing it agony.

However, it was not enough to pierce through the brain to kill it.

At the same time, Yue Zhong adjusted his aim to fire at the head of the Mermaid Queen.

The electromagnetic blasts shot towards the head of the Mermaid Queen without mercy.

Her gaze turned cold as she waved her jade-like hands, causing

the wave beneath her to soar up, forming a powerful shield.

The electromagnetic beams that could pierce even the scales of the Type 5 Sea Snake were negated in front of the water shield, preventing any damage to the Mermaid Queen.

At the same time, there was a cold look on the face of the Mermaid Queen, as the waves beneath her surged up and after it disappeared, there were 9 bodies identical to her.

"I have to deal with her fast!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coolly and he activated his Shadow Steps, enhanced with the Dark Dou Qi. His speed instantly reached Mach-2, and with a wave of his hands, he sent out a blast of Devil Flames towards the Mermaid Queen.

The 9 mermaids waved their hands simultaneously, as a huge wave surged forth at the Devil Flames.

As the 2 abilities clashed, there was a strong surge of steam. The Devil Flames was actually smothered by the waves.

With the cover of the steam, Yue Zhong charged through the crowd, quickly slashing out 9 times at the Mermaid Queen.

As the 9 blade beams flashed by, all 9 bodies were cleaved in half.

"All fakes?"

A sudden sense of danger welled up, as a small hand burst out from beneath his feet, grabbing his right leg, and a sharp water arrow threatened to pierce his right foot.

When the sharp water arrow struck his foot, it was deflected and shattered immediately, blocked by the Type 5 Mutant Beast hide on him.

There was a sound of surprise, "Ah, your body defense is so strong. It doesn't seem human-like. I admire your talents. Be my slave. As long as you're willing, I can make you a king of men. Humans have gone on unbridled for far too long, polluting the

environment and air. You people have angered the gods, and will definitely be suppressed and wiped out. As long as you're my slave, you will be able to survive this."

If it had been any other human, even when protected by a Type 5 Beast Hide, the resulting force would be enough to shatter the leg. However, in Yue Zhong's case, it did not happen at all.

"Hmph! You want me to be your slave? I think it should be the other way round! Break for me!!"

Yue Zhong snorted coldly, and Devil Flames erupted from his right foot, burning the entire area into gas before he kicked out at the patch of seawater.

The patch of seawater churned suddenly, revealing the shape of the Mermaid Queen. The blue light between her brows shot out once more, hitting Yue Zhong's foot.

His entire foot seemed to have been enveloped in an incredible weight, and he could not finish his kick. Instead, it was dragged down, causing a deep foot imprint.

With a thought from Yue Zhong, a strong gravitational force enveloped the Mermaid Queen.

Her body sunk immediately, and she twisted, trying to flee towards the back. She had numerous subordinates, and an endless horde of Mutant Beasts, there was no need for her to engage Yue Zhong in a life-and-death combat.

After Yue Zhong forced her back, he did not chase after all. He was also wary of her methods.

At the same time, there were many Mutant Beasts and Sea Clan members making their way over. He had no confidence in taking her out while she was fleeing.

With a tap of his foot, he turned into a flash that made for the 2 Type 5 Mutant Beasts still engaged in combat.

In merely 2 breaths, Yue Zhong had run along Mount Tai's body and charged up to the head of the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake.

He wielded his Flame Blade, pushing his Dark Dou Qi, and slashed down viciously on its head, directly penetrating its scales and tore a huge gash.

Yue Zhong then leaped into the wound and began to burrow in.

When the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake took this blow, it felt the danger Yue Zhong posed to it. It was forced to let go of Mount Tai before it quickly trashed about against the surrounding buildings.

The recoil of the damage rippled through its flesh and muscles, squeezing Yue Zhong, and he felt his blood churn.

As he activated his Dark Dou Qi once more, the pressure was alleviated somewhat. If he only had the strength of a Type 4 Divine Warrior, he would have been half-dead, if not killed.

After regaining some breathing space, Yue Zhong started to use his Flame Blade to tear the insides up, shredding the Type 5 Mutant Sea Snake from within.

The Type 5 Sea Snake struggled frantically, trying to find another structure to smash itself against.

Mount Tai seized the opportunity to stomp on the Sea Snake while using its tail to slam into its body continuously. It also opened up its mouth to tear off chunks of flesh from the Sea Snake.

After swinging his blade for a long time, the head of the Sea Snake suddenly burst open, and Yue Zhong appeared, in his hands was a Type 5 Nucleus.

As he burrowed out, the Type 5 Sea Snake writhed for a while more before slumping to the ground lifelessly.

A huge amount of life force was absorbed into his God and Devil Imprint, nourishing and enhancing his body.

"Congratulations on reaching Level 91..."

"...."

"Congratulations on reaching Level 94, you have gained 2 attribute points to be allocated."

Back on Earth, with the system, Yue Zhong gained another 8 attribute points for him to allocate.

He thought for a while, before pouring it all into his Agility. He still had to raise his reaction speed. The faster it was, the quicker he could make a right decision in any situation.

Yue Zhong swept a pleased glance across the body of the Type 5 Sea Snake, "Type 5 Mutant Beast! It used to be something out of my reach, and now, I can actually take one down! I've truly become stronger."

Initially, when Yue Zhong saw any Type 5 Mutant Beast, any one of them could easily crush him to death. Even if it allowed him to hack and slash, it would be hard to accomplish anything. Yet not, he could kill one without fear, it was proof of his increase in strength.

When the horde of Sea Clan saw the Type 5 Sea Snake's death, their eyes flashed with disbelief.

A Type 5 Mutant Beast was usually an undefeatable existence within the sea. On land, other than nuclear weapons, most other military weapons would only be able to injure it. With its terrifying regenerative ability, even if it was heavily injured from cannons and heavy artillery, it would be fine after 2 minutes.

However, such an entity was actually slaughtered by Yue Zhong; this caused them to feel a tinge of fear and shock.

Yue Zhong saw how the Sea Clan soldiers had separated from the Mutant Beast horde in order to assist the Mermaid Queen, and ordered out, "Good! It's our chance!! Mount Tai!! Let's go!!"

The heavily injured Mount Tai turned to face the Sea Clan, disregarding its heavy injuries.

While Mount Tai's speed was not much among the Type 5 Mutant Beasts, it was still faster than those ordinary Sea Clan soldiers. In barely a moment, it had already rushed through the ranks of the army, stomping and rampaging around, while swinging its tail, causing hundreds and thousands of them to be flattened into meat paste.

Chapter 951: Fall of Pyongyang!

Regardless if they were the 7m-tall Whale Warriors, or the small Prawn Warriors, under Mount Tai's rampage, every single one of them was turned into meat paste. Not a single one of them could pose a danger to Mount Tai.

The Type 5 Mount Tai rampaged forward, its aim the Type 5 Mermaid Queen.

The Sea Clan guards of the Mermaid Queen came forward to attack Mount Tai, as numerous sharp ice shards, arrows, bone spikes and other abilities blasted towards its body. However, they were mostly blocked by the Type 5 scales.

As the experts continued to attack Mount Tai's scales, they only served to injure it slightly, which healed extremely quickly.

There was no way of stopping it at all. The huge army of Sea Clan soldiers was like ants as they got stomped on. There was no way of stopping the advance of Mount Tai.

However, they continued to do their best, firing at Mount Tai and leaving little injuries.

After all, Type 5 Mutant Beasts were not entirely invincible, there was a limit to their regenerative powers as well. However, the stamina of the behemoths was seemingly endless, thus it was difficult to erode away.

200 beautiful mermaids came up to the frontline, opening their mouths and firing out blue beams that blasted towards Mount Tai.

Mount Tai's body turned heavier and sluggish when those beams brushed past it, its movements turning slow. The wounds that it suffered from the assault of the Type 5 Sea Snake also started to rot, releasing a putrid stench.

On Mount Tai's back, Yue Zhong wielded 2 electromagnetic cannons and fired them at the mermaids, blasting their heads

away.

With the deaths of a dozen of them, the effect they had on Mount Tai was lessened considerably. Mount Tai then bellowed in rage, its huge tail swinging at those beautiful mermaids.

With a single sweep, a large number of mermaids, as well as their guards, were all flattened into meat paste.

Right at this moment, there was an enchanting and mysterious song, as it traveled throughout Pyongyang, all the Type 4 Mutant Beasts threw aside their prey and quickly swarmed over.

At the same time, over a dozen kilometers away, there was a Type 5 Mutant Beast which had the head of a crocodile, the body of a snake, the claws of a lizard, its body reaching a kilometer in length, and covered with a layer of green scales. The beast howled at the sky.

Yue Zhong stared at the swarming Type 4 Mutant Beasts and his eyes flashed with reluctance, "What a pity, seems like we'll have to stop for today."

At this time, Mount Tai had already suffered grievous injuries, and there was still poison not yet absolved within it. Its fighting strength was severely undermined. If it were up against another healthy Type 5 Mutant Beast, it would likely become food.

Other than that, there was the swarm of Type 4 Mutant Beasts that could pose a headache.

The might and pressure of Mount Tai could affect beasts of Type 3 and below, preventing them from acting against it. Even if they dared to act, it would only be at 70%. However, it was different for Type 4 Mutant Beasts.

If over a hundred Type 4 Mutant Beasts came at once, then it was not possible for Mount Tai to hold its own fort against them.

Yue Zhong patted Mount Tai's head and ordered, "Let's go!"

Mount Tai quickly turned and left for the distance, stampeding over the low-level enemies.

Its body was over 2km, and while its movements were not exactly when it ran with all its strength, it was able to slaughter a path.

Yue Zhong was sprawled on Mount Tai's back, using the System's Electromagnetic Cannon to fire out, killing the Mutant Beasts.

After some tests, Yue Zhong discovered that when using the System's equipment to kill enemies, the amount of life force absorbed from them would be greater than any other weapons. Hence, he liked to use the system equipment to kill.

One of the mermaids came up to the Mermaid Queen, asking respectfully, "Your Highness, should we chase?"

The eyes of the Mermaid Queen turned cold, as she spoke coldly, "No need, we can't kill him anyway. He's too strong, his power is above mine. I still need to undergo 2 more evolutions in order to kill him. Let him leave for today. Our mission today is to kill all the humans in this city, turning into a base for our Sea Clan. Our Clan should be the Overlord of this world, and we need to control both the land and seas."

There was a look of yearning in the eyes of the young mermaid, as she retreated, "Yes!"

Without Yue Zhong's obstruction, a huge number of Sea Clan members and Mutant Beasts managed to invade Pyongyang.

All the experts within Pyongyang had already left. There was no one left to obstruct these Mutant Beasts. They swarmed in and began their massacre of the humans.

The number of Sea Clan members continued to come on land, other than the Type 5 Crocodile-head, Snake-head strange entity, there was another Type 5 Crab Overlord that had a huge red shell, its size like a mountain, as well as a Type 5 Snapping Turtle that entered Pyongyang.

This time, the Sea Clan had activated a huge force to invade Pyongyang. A total of 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts, with such a force, even North Korea before the apocalypse could not possibly hope to defend without the use of nuclear weapons.

Yue Zhong rode on Mount Tai's back as they fled, and he discovered something wrong with Mount Tai. The infected wounds on Mount Tai were not healing, instead, they were turning worse. Black pus continued to leak out, dripping onto the ground, emitting a stench.

He frowned, "The innate ability of a Type 5 Mutant Beast is truly terrifying!"

Such abilities were vastly superior to most other Mutant Beasts. Especially those poison-types, should they land on the body of a Type 4 Mutant Beast, it would be enough to poison it to death. If used against same realm opponents, it would not be easy to get rid of the poison either.

Yue Zhong pondered a moment, before pulling out the nucleus he got from the Type 5 Sea Snake and threw it into Mount Tai's mouth.

After gobbling it up, there were obvious changes after a while. The muscles that were rotting began to shudder, and those poisoned parts started to molt themselves, as new scales grew out to replace and protect the body. Its dimming and exhausted gaze also regained clarity.

Sitting atop Mount Tai, Yue Zhong managed to chase up to the convoy.

Currently, the convoy had become huge. There were many armored jeeps, tanks, infantry vehicles and other military vehicles following Yue Zhong's convoy tightly.

Seeing Yue Zhong riding Mount Tai towards them, the North Korean troops were all wary and aimed their weapons at him, with

expressions of animosity.

Yue Zhong stood on Mount Tai's head as he eyed them coldly, barking out, "I'm Yue Zhong, the leader of this convoy. Who are you people? Why are you following us?"

As long as he made the thought, Mount Tai could easily flatten the military convoy.

The moment his words came out, Jung Ri Soo made use of a loudspeaker to translate his words.

From within the command vehicle, a young and beautiful woman of about 23 or 24 stepped out, she had a single ponytail, her face and features exquisite. There was also a valiant aura seen from between her brows. She smiled at Yue Zhong, "Hello, Mr. Yue Zhong, I'm the current highest commanding officer of the North Korean Army, Kim Ji Yeon, I'm pleased to meet you.'

At the same time, another 8 military men stepped out, on either side of her, staring at Yue Zhong warily.

"North Korean Army? Seems like this woman is pretty capable? She should be the daughter of another official." Yue Zhong assessed her carefully and thought.

North Korea was a shut-off and backward society, and the women were not likely to have high status. It was incredibly difficult for a woman to have her own troops if she did not have some form of royal blood.

Yue Zhong spoke coldly, "Hello."

Kim Ji Yeon continued to smile warmly, "We're thankful for your help, allowing us to survive that ordeal. I, Kim Ji Yeon, will remember this favor. In the future, if there's a chance, I will repay this favor."

Yue Zhong nodded but did not pay it much heed.

Right now, North Korea was in the same situation as South

Korea, both of them had their territories invaded. All Kim Ji Yeon could rely on were the people beside her, which was not much to Yue Zhong.

Chapter 952: Lee Won Myung!

Kim Ji Yeong asked, "Mr. Yue Zhong, where are you planning to go from here?"

Yue Zhong did not bother to hide anything, directly replying, "Well, I'm intending to head to China's capital."

Kim Ji Yeon chuckled and asked, "The capital eh? That's quite coincidental, I'm intending to head to Amnok River (Yalu River), how about going together? We can get to know each other better."

Yue Zhong sighed and nodded after a while, "Alright."

Kim Ji Yeon eyed the Type 5 Mount Tai, "Is this your Tamed Beast? It's pretty powerful! May I ask how you came to summoning such a strong monster?"

A large number of North Korean soldiers also looked towards Yue Zhong with curiosity.

Such an entity was practically something from myths and legends, and these ordinary humans were naturally awed by it.

If it were in ancient times, Mount Tai would almost definitely be revered as a Godly Beast or Divine Spirit.

Even in this apocalypse where Mutant Beasts were rampant, Type 5 Mutant Beasts were pretty terrifying existences. Just by relying on it, Yue Zhong had managed to bring the survivors under him through 2 sieges, one by the Mutant Beasts, one by the zombie horde.

Yue Zhong laughed indifferently, "That's my secret. Everyone has one, after all, right?"

Kim Ji Yeon laughed and did not pursue it, "Yes, it was rude of me."

Since they had reached an agreement, Yue Zhong patted Mount Tai's head gently, and it began to lumber towards the direction of

the oceans.

Mount Tai was a water-based creature, on earth, other than a few large lakes, only the vast seas could possibly house it.

On the ground, Mount Tai's ability was definitely not on par as it could be in the water. However, due to its massive size, it was the best mower and in battle, it could charge and rampage through hordes of enemies.

Kim Ji Yeon watched it move off and did not say anything further. Instead, she suppressed her curiosity and went back into her command vehicle.

The convoy continued towards the China-North Korea Border.

They traveled for another 4 hours, on the way, Yue Zhong's team came across a few Evolved zombies. Their numbers were in the hundreds but were easily slaughtered by White Bones.

The entire group managed to enter a small town, clearing it of the zombies, before they settled down to rest for the night.

Yue Zhong's own group had traveled an entire day and night without rest, while Kim Ji Yeon's forces had been fighting and had not gotten much of a break.

The vehicle came to a stop, and many just fell asleep in their vehicles.

As they set up camp, Yue Zhong's convoy had a clear separation from Kim Ji Yeon's forces.

During the night, while most of them were resting, in a forest outside the town, a number of eyes lit up. Swift and nimble figures darted out, using blow darts and firing poisoned darts at the North Korean soldiers.

There was a fast-acting agent within the darts, and before the North Korean soldiers could react, those who were shot died almost instantly.

Some militants then charged out swiftly from the forest, decked in Mutant Beast hide, their movements agile and smooth as they made for the tanks and vehicles of the North Korean forces.

"Enemy attack!! Enemy attack!!"

When those North Korean soldiers were just killed, bright alarms blared through suddenly throughout the camp. The soldiers quickly stirred and rushed out.

Kim Ji Yeon also reacted quickly, appearing outside under the protection of 16 Type 3 experts.

"Enemy attack, the North Korean forces that I'd trained actually termed me as an enemy. What an irony."

Following an icy-cold tone, an ordinary-looking man of about 1.65m and a bald head, wearing a grey uniform walked out. He seemed about 27 or 28, and he was staring at the North Korean forces coldly and with disdain.

"It's you!"

"Lee Won Myung!"

"Leader!"

"Lee Won Myung!!"

"..."

Seeing the man, all the soldiers other than the commanders immediately froze in shock, revealing complicated expressions.

Kim Ji Yeon was also frightened that her face turned pale, her voice trembling slightly, "Lee Won Myung, weren't you supposed to be dead?! How come you're still alive?!"

"Kim Ji Yeon, as long as I have not seen you through Hell, I will not die!" Lee Won Myung was staring at her insidiously, before sweeping a cold and cruel gaze across the soldiers present, declaring, "All those who betrayed me, shall die as well."

Kim Ji Yeon was the favorite woman under Lee Won Myung in the past. However, she had colluded with his subordinates and stabbed him in the back at his moment of need, almost killing him. For some reason, he managed to survive the encounter through some miraculous means. He was filled with a hatred towards those who betrayed him, and he crawled back from the depths of his near-death to vow vengeance.

As he spoke, his eyes were filled with an intense, maniacal light. He suddenly bellowed out with rage, and his muscles turned taut. He suddenly grew into a 3m-tall monster, with veins bulging through his skin, his hands and legs turning into powerful claws, while his visage turned into a green demon with fangs.

What was most striking, was that on his right hand, there was a faint gold God and Devil Imprint as well. Apparently, he was one of those chosen to be the God's Chosen.

The moment he transformed, his body began to emit a terrifying aura, reaching the Type 5 realm. His overwhelming pressure caused helplessness and despair in the hearts of those facing him.

The 16 Type 3 experts were also filled with the same sense of fear and despair when faced with that pressure.

A Type 3 expert versus a Type 5 expert, it was a difference of 2 tiers. They were basically ants in front of him and could be easily smacked to death.

Kim Ji Yeon let out a sharp shriek, "Everybody!! Kill him!! It will either be his death, or ours!! He will not let us off!! We have to kill him, only then we can have a chance of survival!!"

"Kill!! Kill him and we can live!!"

"..."

A number of North Korean experts reacted quickly and began to fire at Lee Won Myung.

Chapter 953: Killing Lee Won Myung!

"It's useless, all you traitorous trash, today, you shall die!"

Lee Won Myung revealed a savage smile, as the bullets bounced off his body as though hitting some diamond alloy with loud clanking noises.

With a tap of his foot, he directly charged right into the midst of the soldiers, slapping out at the head of a soldier, directly smashing it like an egg, as blood and brain matter splattered onto the ground.

"Haha!! Die!! All of you!! Die!!"

After killing one soldier, he let out an unbridled laughter, before continuing his rampage, destroying the heads of various soldiers with casual slaps.

He was in no hurry to take out the commanders, instead, slaughtering the ordinary soldiers, intending to savor their despair.

"Kill! Everybody!! Attack!! Kill this demon!! If we could take him down him then, we can kill him now!!"

One particularly handsome man roared out, his eyes flashing with despair, as he shot out 2 beams of ice energy at Lee Won Myung.

The 2 beams that could freeze even a tank, came into contact with Lee Won Myung's body. In an instant, he seemed to turn into an ice sculpture.

Witnessing this, everyone suddenly felt excited.

"Choi Myung Ho, your ice control isn't too bad! If it were in the past, truly, it would have been a problem for me. However, you're just an ant now! No matter how strong the ant, it's still an ant!"

Shatter!

Following a loud crash, the sculpture broke apart, and Lee Won Myung stepped out, unfazed and demonic, his cold laughter ringing out.

He pointed with his index, and an ice shard shot out like a bullet, directly piercing through Choi Myung Ho's brain, instantly killing this Type 3 expert.

As the blood splattered, there was a look of disbelief on Choi Myung Ho's face, as he slumped lifelessly to the ground.

All of a sudden, a dagger-wielding middle-aged man appeared noiselessly behind Lee Won Myung, sending a lethal strike towards his heart.

"Kim Ho Wi, your assassination skill has improved quite a bit eh. Still, it's nothing to me. Go to hell."

Lee Won Myung did not even turn around, as though there were eyes on his back, and he sent a back-hand smash towards Kim Ho Wi's face, directly turning his head into pulp.

The headless corpse of Kim Ho Wi then fell down to the ground miserably.

Seeing how Lee Won Myung slaughtered 2 Type 3 experts so easily, the rest of the North Korean soldiers were filled with despair.

Choi Myung Ho and Kim Ho Wi were 2 talented Evolvers that had naturally awakened. After killing goodness knows how many zombies and Mutant Beasts, they had passed the Level 80 threshold. In the past, they were on par with Lee Won Myung, but now, they were crushed like ants, this caused everyone to be filled with despair and fear.

This was the might of a Type 5 Evolver. In front of one, Type 3 experts were just like ants. Unless there were over hundreds and thousands of Type 3 experts fighting a life-and-death battle with one, relying on their numbers to triumph over one, it was

impossible to win otherwise.

Lee Won Myung laughed coldly, walking towards the commanders of the North Korean forces slowly. As he walked out, he would slap out casually at the soldiers that got in his way, killing them.

With his Type 5 strength, he could definitely slaughter all the commanders within a few breaths. However, he did not do so, instead, using his killing intent to pressure them as he walked slowly.

Through his murderous and vicious means, the North Korean soldiers had already abandoned their equipment and started to flee.

The North Korean soldiers were not powerful nor well-trained soldiers in the first place, crumbling at the first sign of defeat. Those soldiers loyal to Lee Won Myung had already surrounded those fleeing soldiers and were slaughtering them, not leaving a single one alive.

One Type 3 expert had eyes filled with tears, his body trembling as he kneeled on the floor. He began to beg, "Won Myung!! I was forced to!! I swear!! I was forced to!! Don't kill me!! I'm willing to surrender, I'm willing to work for you!! Spare my life!!"

"Leader!! I was forced by this woman! Don't kill me!! I know my mistake now!! I was wrong!!"

"..."

Under the threat of death, the commanders began to get down on their knees, crying and pushing the blame towards Kim Ji Yeon.

"A bunch of fools!! What use is there to beg?!" Kim Ji Yeon saw this scene with a pale face and laughed out coldly, she knew that with what they had done, Lee Won Myung would not spare them.

"Even if you regret now, isn't it too late? Soo Mi, Sung Yeon, and Mi Sook can never revive!! You bastards can go and accompany

them in death!!"

Lee Won Myung flashed past and came up to one of the sniveling commanders. There was a savage glint in his eyes, as he grabbed out with force, directly tearing the head and spine off from the body.

Seeing how cruel and merciless he was, the rest of the commanders let go of any reservations they had and roared out, "Kill!! Kill him!! Otherwise, we'll all die!!"

The rest of the commanders who had got down to beg had desperate expressions as they charged out at Lee Won Myung. Ice shards, fire arrows, and gravity skills began to blast at him, as they used their strongest skills, which could cause even a Type 4 expert to fall.

"It's useless! It's useless!! Hahaha!!"

Lee Won Myung laughed out savagely, continuing to flash through the crowd. Each time he slapped out casually, the attacks would amount to nothing, while a traitor's head would explode.

He finally went ahead and tore through all of them, coming up in front of Kim Ji Yeon with a bloody visage, speaking in an insidious manner, "Why betray me?"

Kim Ji Yeon knew she was about to die and lifted her head to laugh coldly, her eyes filled with a resolute gaze, "Do it! I want you to live with regret and doubt your whole life!"

A furious scarlet light flashed past Lee Won Myung's eyes, as he chuckled, 'It's useless, these cheap tricks won't shake my mind. Go to hell, bitch.'

After that, his fist exploded out mercilessly towards her head.

With a loud burst, her brain exploded and the matter and blood splattered everywhere behind, her headless corpse slumped to the floor.

After killing her, he gazed at her body, complicated emotions filling up with him.

All of a sudden, there was a strong sense of danger, and he twisted his body to the side abruptly.

A few electronic beams shot out from afar towards him.

Lee Won Myung twisted and dodged, however, he was still struck by 2 of the blasts, suffering 2 grievous wounds.

He lifted his head, only to discover Yue Zhong holding an electromagnetic cannon in his hand, rushing towards him with a speed of Mach 2, firing at him.

"Type 5 Divine Warrior!! How could humans evolve to such a stage within such a short time?! You must also be a God's Chosen! Someone with the God and Devil Imprint! Are you attacking me in order to obtain my God and Devil Imprint? I'm Lee Won Myung, who are you?"

There was no doubt that Lee Won Myung had fought long and survived, surmising Yue Zhong's background and intention within just a few clashes.

"I'm Yue Zhong, that's right, my aim is the God and Devil Imprint on your right hand."

When Yue Zhong got close enough, he activated his Shadow Steps, his speed raising to its maximum, revealing multiple afterimages as he appeared noiselessly behind Lee Won Myung and threw a punch enhanced by his Dark Dou Qi.

Yue Zhong's speed had been enhanced countless times, reaching a terrifying stage. That fist was almost like a shooting star. There was no way that Lee Won Myung could dodge that move, as he raised his enhanced, mutated hand to block.

Peng!

With a loud collision, the demonic Lee Won Myung was sent

flying back a few meters, even his enhanced right hand was destroyed in that clash, as it swung uselessly by his side.

After his right arm was destroyed, Lee Won Myung finally revealed some shock and fear, "Even after my Demonic Transformation, he was able to destroy my arm. My body's impervious to bullets! This guy is too dangerous! I'm not his match."

"I must flee!!"

Having made that judgment, the veins in his leg suddenly turned tense, and he kicked out at the ground. His entire body then transformed into a flash that made for the distance.

"You want to escape?"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly as he tapped his feet, chasing right after.

This time, Yue Zhong's continuous enhancing of his Agility showcased fruits. Within 2 breaths, he had already caught up, his entire fist enveloped with the Devil Flames as he punched out viciously as Lee Won Myung's back. The fist tore through Lee Won Myung's body, and the Devil Flames burst forth to envelop Lee Won Myung.

Chapter 954: The Russian Empire's Torrent of Steel!

Amidst his miserable screams, Lee Won Myung's entire body turned into a pile of ash, leaving behind only the right arm containing the God and Devil Imprint.

After transforming into a monster, Lee Won Myung's strength was only at the Type 5 realm. Facing Yue Zhong who was at the peak of Type 5 realm, there was no way of resisting.

Yue Zhong came up to the monstrous right arm and picked it up, his brows furrowing, "What's this?"

It was unlike any other monster limb that he had come across. As for Lee Won Myung's form after transformation, it was also alien to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong looked at the pile of ash and pondered, "This fellow has likely gone to another world. Yet, how come he doesn't have a God-Devil Nucleus?"

The God-Devil Nucleus was a gold nucleus in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge and he could sense its power. He could faintly tell that it was the source of his strength, and should it disappear, all his powers would be gone as well.

Since he did not understand it, he could only hazard a guess, "Maybe he didn't get to the other world through normal means, hence he could not form a God-Devil Nucleus. Or maybe he could only reach the Type 5 realm after transforming."

He shook his head and threw all thoughts of Lee Won Myung away, before placing the monstrous right arm to his own God and Devil Imprint.

Instantly, a bright glow radiated and enveloped Lee Won Myung's imprint.

In the glow, Lee Won Myung's God and Devil Imprint disappeared, swallowed entirely by Yue Zhong's.

After Yue Zhong's Imprint swallowed Lee Won Myung's, a powerful energy swarmed into his body, directly pouring into his Gold Nucleus, which absorbed it greedily.

A number of profound and mysterious runes appeared on his Nucleus, bringing it to a higher state of abstractness and perfection.

Having absorbed the energy, the Gold Nucleus shot out a number of runes that congealed in Yue Zhong's sea of knowledge, forming 3 silverish-white runes.

"Congratulations, you have learned the skill: Fourth Order Radiance of Life Control."

"Congratulations, you have learned the skill: Fourth Order Devil Transformation."

"Congratulations, you have learned the skill: Fourth Order Flight."

The moment those 3 runes appeared, the notifications rang out one after another.

When Yue Zhong heard those notifications, his eyes flashed with joy, "Flight!! This is great! With this ability, my survivability has improved again."

Flight was a rare skill. When Yue Zhong had initially grown his survivor base to a million, he had not even seen one with Flight. Its rarity was apparent.

He regained his composure, and surveyed the surroundings, noting that the soldiers Lee Won Myung brought had already been killed by White Bones.

At the time when Yue Zhong made his move, he had already ordered White Bones to attack. With its strength, it was as easy as

killing an ant.

After that messy conflict, the North Korean forces were only left with a few family members of those commanders. They were all pale, filled with fear as they eyed Yue Zhong, not daring to move.

Yue Zhong swept a gaze across those people, summoning Jung Ri Soo, "Go take care of them. If they want to leave, give them 20 days of rations and send them on their way. If they want to stay, make sure they understand the rules here."

Jung Ri Soo replied swiftly, "Understood! Uncle!"

Those family members obviously did not trust Yue Zhong who was a foreigner, and amongst them, many chose to take the rations and leave. However, many others lacked the ability to survive on their own, thus they chose to stay, and handed their fates to Yue Zhong.

After resting for a while, Yue Zhong led everyone onwards to the border.

At the China-Mongolian border, across the vast plains, there were many tanks, IFVs, rocket launchers, cannons, armored vehicles, etc, forming a terrifying torrent of steel, making its way towards Hu Hot City.

The northeastern area of China was scarce of humans, instead, infested with zombies. It formed a natural barrier between the 2 countries. Thus, Russia could only attack through this border.

On the plains, within a secret hill, 4 soldiers dressed in military uniforms looked on at the convoy, their expression ugly.

One particular burly man looked through his binoculars, his countenance downcast, "It's those fucking Russians!! Damn it, they dare to come again."

During the 2nd World War, when the Russians had attacked China, they did everything possible. Many of the older generations actually bore more resentment towards the Russians than the

Japanese. This muscular Northeastern Han had people in his hometown that had suffered under those Russians back then, thus he was also brought up with the same resentment.

One soldier asked worriedly, "Captain, what do we do?"

Gong Yang Sheng, the burly captain, shot the small soldier a look, before turning to another soldier with a radio set, "What to do? Old Black, hurry and inform the higher-ups."

Old Black chuckled and reported the intelligence.

Gong Yang Sheng then took up a heavy rifle and beckoned to the 3 soldiers, "The 3 of you, disperse first, let me go teach these bastards a lesson, and let them know that our China is not a place where they can come and go as they please."

"Captain, please take care."

The 3 soldiers left behind words of concern, before leaving. They knew that they could not do much if they stayed.

Gong Yang Sheng waved his hands, "I got it."

They then swiftly rode their Black-scaled Stallions and left.

After they had gone, Gong Yang Sheng laid prone on the ground, readying his sniper rifle and aimed.

Two minutes passed before he suddenly pulled the trigger and activated his Enhanced Bullet skill.

A bright burst of light shot out towards one of the IFVs, and it exploded with a loud blast, killing some soldiers within and injuring the rest.

With that one strike, Gong Yang Sheng quickly got to his feet, his expression pale, as he rode his mount out into the plains.

Although he had such a powerful skill, faced with the massive Russian troops, he would be seeking death if he stayed.

The Russians reacted swiftly on their part as well when faced

with the sudden assault. The convoy came to a stop as 12 IFVs, 4 tanks, and 200 soldiers quickly combed the area for the enemy.

At the same time, the unmanned flying drones in the air flew over.

Gong Yang Sheng was quickly discovered by the drones.

"Just one man? These Chinese soldiers are truly gutsy. However, victory belongs to our glorious Russian Empire."

Inside the command center, a wizened middle-aged man dressed in military wear held a glass of wine in his hand as he gazed at the displays, sipping his drink and laughing lightly.

Another commander, who had short blue hair and was extremely young, frowned and spoke, "Commander Gief, I feel that we're not prepared for this mission. Our rations and fuel can only last 15 days. Should the battle last beyond that, our forces will be in a perilous position. China has already been unified under Yue Zhong's rule, and they're basically an iron plate now. With our current might, it's truly hard to take them down within 15 days."

Fights after the apocalypse had grown incredibly tough. It was because of this that the Kingdom of God, that had managed to amass strength, could still suffer some setbacks against Yue Zhong's forces early on.

This time, the Russian Empire had deployed 20,000 elite forces to attack China. It was the limit of their mobile infantry deployment. Due to this, they had only brought along 15 days' worth of rations and fuel.

The young lieutenant was thus not confident that their current might could invade China successfully.

Gief smiled mysteriously, "Lieutenant Yevgeny, you're right. If Yue Zhong were still in China, then our forces would definitely not be a match for him. However, he had already been missing for close to a year. The northern area is also fraught with complicated

power struggles. No one has hope there, nor is there anyone that could lead their forces. Under such circumstances, if we throw all our forces into the assault, it's not impossible to defeat them. Furthermore, it's not just us eyeing them. We have other allies and reinforcements. Even if Yue Zhong were to make it back, there's no way that he could stand against all of us!"

Yevgeny frowned and asked, "Reinforcements, you mean the Kingdom of God's forces? Weren't they already defeated by Yue Zhong?"

Gief chuckled, "Lieutenant Yevgeny, this is something you're not required to know. Your current mission is to prepare well and to take down Hu Hot City. Once we have it, China's capital and the Central Plains would be separated. Our mission would be halfway completed by then."

Yevgeny replied in a solemn tone, "Yes General!"

Chapter 955: Position of Commander!

In the capital, within a meeting hall, the commanders of Yue Zhong's Northern forces were all gathered.

Due to Yue Zhong taking down the capital and moving on to the 2nd World within a short period of time, most of those in the capital were Yue Zhong's Northern subordinates.

Guang Xi and Hu Nan, on the other hand, had considerably lesser subordinates, only a few that had followed Yue Zhong early on had been left there to oversee things.

Inside the meeting hall, there was Chen Yan, Chen Yao, Ji Qing Wu, Li Shi Min, Lian Da Zhong, Cha Bi Lai, Hu-er Ran, Li Guang, Lie Ming Yi, Bai Xiao Sheng, Yu Wen Ying, as well as many others.

Each of them held considerable authority, while their forces had nothing much to do with each other, thus it was hard to command.

Ji Qing Wu swept a gaze over everybody and spoke solemnly, "I'm sure that everyone knows this by now. Russia has sent out a 20,000-strong force towards Hu Hot City. We have to stop them."

Her words had just landed, Lie Ming Yi interrupted somewhat rudely, "Wait a minute, before the meeting commences, I have some questions. Miss Ji Qing Wu, you're the standin commander assigned by Leader Yue Zhong, with the authority to call for meetings. However, I feel that with your strength, it's not enough."

Bai Xiao Sheng eyed Lie Ming Yi coldly, his voice turning incredibly icy, "Lie Ming Yi, are you intending to go against Leader Yue Zhong's words, and betray him?"

Lie Ming Yi's brows arched, as he turned to look at everybody, "Of course not. However, I feel that we shouldn't be commanded by a lady. Haven't we had enough of problems caused by women throughout history? Jiang Xi, Empress Dowager Cixi, Empress Lü,

it was because of these women that past dynasties had fallen. I just don't want to see Leader Yue Zhong's hard work wrecked at the hands of a woman when he gets back. What do you guys think?"

Hearing his words, everyone maintained silent, their eyes flashing with strange glints.

Within this meeting, there were more men than women. When Yue Zhong had left, and appointed Ji Qing Wu as his substitute, many were not happy with the decision inwardly.

Lian Da Zhong, Cha Bi Lai, Hu-er Ran, Li Guang, Lie Ming Yi, Yu Wen Ying, these prideful men were dissatisfied with Ji Qing Wu holding the reins.

If it was not for Yue Zhong appearing in the Evolving Temple through his hologram every once in awhile, and notified every one of his status, these prideful riders would have long since staged an uprising to chase Ji Qing Wu away.

Ji Qing Wu glanced at these men, and could not help but frown as well. In her position, it had truly been difficult.

In Hunan, Guang Xi and Mongolia, Ji Qing Wu had the most support in Hunan and Mongolia because she had followed Yue Zhong all the way in growing and expanding his power.

However, in Guang Xi, it was a lot lesser, instead, Chen Yao was more popular.

Under such circumstances, it had been difficult for her to carry out instructions to grow and expand Yue Zhong's faction during his absence. When she had taken over the reins, she had felt his headache and stress for the first time. Especially since she did not have his outlook, it was harder to command his forces.

At this time, Chen Yao piped in directly, "Lie Ming Yi, Ji Qing Wu's position had been assigned by Yue Zhong. During this year, she had grown our faction considerably. Everyone had seen this for themselves. On what grounds do you have to accuse her of

insufficient ability?"

Lie Ming Yi's face remained unchanged, "Miss Ji Qing Wu truly had performed exceptionally this year. I'm not questioning that. However, this is with regards to governance. In terms of war, our expansion had truly been small. Furthermore, she had not led any large armies before. Thus, the upcoming battle between the 2 countries should not be left to her. It's not right."

In the year of Yue Zhong's absence, Ji Qing Wu had focused all her attention on the internal aspects, expanding capabilities and manufacturing. They had also managed to wipe out over 4 million zombies.

This was also due to the difference in their mindset, Yue Zhong liked to take risks, charging on the frontlines, storming new grounds and expanding his power. Whereas Ji Qing Wu was more introverted, preferring to stabilize the foundations from within. She continued to firm up the government and restarted industrialism, improving the lives of the commoners. However, the reclamation of land was not as rapid as Yue Zhong's.

Hearing his words, many of the commanders kept silent. They were not able to put their lives under the authority of a lady on the battlefield.

Ji Qing Wu's brows furrowed as she asked, "Since it's like this, Lie Ming Yi, who do you think should command the upcoming battle?"

Lie Ming Yi laughed out confidently, "It should be me, of course. I have the experience. Our 2nd Regiment has outstanding achievements, following Leader through the countless battles from south to north. We had established much and been through much. As the commander of the 2nd Regiment, I would definitely have no problems leading the battle to come."

This time, China's opponent was the Russian army, if one could take the command and lead the army to victory, they would

receive accolades and merits of the highest order. It was the dream of any commander. Lie Ming Yi was naturally not willing to give it up.

Li Guang could not help himself as well, "No. In terms of achievements, it should be our 1st Regiment. We had been loyal from day one and been through more than your 2nd Regiment. As the commander of the 1st Regiment, it should be me to command the troops."

Leading an entire country's forces, facing the forces of another country, it was truly an honor to behold. Li Guang would not let it pass to someone else. Even if it was a friendly force.

Seeing how they both would not let up, Hu-er Ran's eyes flashed with envy. He was the commander of the 3rd Regiment, but due to his past, he knew he had no right in contending for the main commander position. As long as Yue Zhong was not dead, he would have no chance.

By now, the 3rd Regiment was already integrated with the main forces and had slowly grown more important. However, if they were to rebel, their forces would still be wiped out without a moment's hesitation.

Suddenly, an indifferent voice sounded from outside the hall, "I shall assume the position of commander."

Chapter 956: The Battle at Hu Hot City!

"Who is it?!" Lie Ming Yi was slightly irritated at being interrupted, and snapped towards the direction of the voice. However, when the figure came into clear view, he could not help but tremble, "Leader, you're back?"

After they had left the small town, Yue Zhong had arranged for the people in his party to be hidden within a small hill, leaving behind White Bones to protect them, while he swiftly flew over back into the capital.

With the appearance of the Flesh-Eaters and Vampires, the ascent of the Sea Clan, the strange movements of the zombies, everything was forcing Yue Zhong to be on his toes. He felt a strong sense of danger.

When they saw it was Yue Zhong, everyone got to their feet at once, "Leader!"

Yue Zhong came to the main seat, turning to Ji Qing Wu and spoke gently, "It's been hard on you."

Yue Zhong was clear, that when he had left, Ji Qing Wu's presence was definitely not enough, and she would face tremendous difficulties in handling the 5 factions under him.

When she heard Yue Zhong's sincere words, it felt like all the exhaustion and pressure was worth it. She broke out into a dazzling smile, "As long as you're back."

After that, she stood to the side and sat down.

Yue Zhong assumed his position at the head of the meeting, surveying the meeting room full of the subordinates that had followed him and could not help but sigh.

In truth, he had already reached earlier, and was observing everyone's reactions in the dark, and saw what he would not be able to see if he was in the limelight.

Although those who stood out earlier were definitely loyal to him on the surface, there was no doubt that they had their own aspirations. It was not something strange after all, they were human, not puppets.

"I finally understood why those emperors of the past would clean their courts whenever they start up a new dynasty."

When Yue Zhong was around, he could naturally instill fear and control his subordinates. However, when he was not around, no one else could rein them in.

When those prideful ones that had stood out were swept by his gaze, their hearts could not help but tighten with a little fear.

Hu-er Ran eyed Yue Zhong, and with his beastly instincts, he could tell that Yue Zhong was now harboring a dangerous aura even much more than before. His ambitions were repressed even further, "He's now much more powerful than before! I've been killing so many Evolved zombies and Mutant Beasts this past year, yet how come I can't keep up with him? How did he evolve?"

At this time, a soldier suddenly came to the door, "Reporting! Leader!! There's an urgent update from the frontlines!"

Yue Zhong replied, "Come in!"

The soldier quickly rushed in and handed some documents to Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong took a look at the stack of papers, and his frown became deeper, "India, Vietnam, Hebei, Guizhou, as well as Russia. 5 different armies attacking from 5 different directions. The Kingdom of God has truly deployed all they have this time."

This time, the Kingdom of God was determined to take down the capital of China, thus, sending out most of their pawns.

A strong, unified China was obviously something the Kingdom of God could not tolerate. Under the pressure of survival and vengeance, they had declared war on China. At the same time, they

had ordered for their forces around China to act at the same time.

Other than the direction of Vietnam, the rest of the 4 armies were already invading into China. Even if China were to utilize a nuclear bomb to wipe them out, it would affect their own backyard.

Yue Zhong scanned the documents and spoke, "Open up your computers."

Everyone immediately turned their computers on, only to discover the urgent report that the soldier had brought back displayed in front of them.

"5 armies!"

Seeing this report, everyone's countenances turned ugly.

With Yue Zhong' current military might, there were about 100,000 elite soldiers. Of them, 20,000 had to maintain security and order within the cities, preventing the uprising of any ambitious people. The numbers that could truly be deployed numbered only 80,000.

Of the 80,000, there were 25,000 over at Guang Xi, 10,000 at Hunan, 45,000 in the capital. There was no particular advantage in the distribution of the forces.

If Yue Zhong were not around, the moment the 5 armies attacked, under the problem of a fractured command, it would be tough to face the invasion. Even now, it was still difficult. After all, there was no concrete numbers of the enemies right now, or their equipment.

After the world changed, there were zombies, Mutant Beasts and other various forms of obstacles. It became a problem for the subordinates under him to communicate or travel to and fro.

Lie Ming Yi took the first stand to proclaim his loyalty, "Leader, our 2nd Regiment is willing to take the vanguard position to wipe out all your enemies!"

When he thought of his earlier position on trying to make things difficult for Ji Qing Wu, he was naturally flustered.

Li Guang also stood up and spoke loudly, "Our 1st Regiment is willing to be the vanguard to wipe out those damn Russians."

"..."

The atmosphere immediately became lively, with the various subordinates stepping forward to volunteer.

Of the various forces he had, even Hu-er Ran had racked up merits from contributing so much, Yue Zhong could not touch him easily. It was natural for everyone to volunteer after the ugly episode earlier, in order to make up for their behavior.

Yue Zhong saw them scrambling to lead the fight, and his eyes flashed with appreciation, "Very good."

With such an attitude, the forces would be motivated to fight. If his generals were those only knew to play games, fool around with women, and partake in luxury, it would be hard for them to lead their troops.

Over at Hu Hot City, there were already various simple fortifications done up, as various Chinese soldiers took up their positions and weapons, standing guard.

One commander then let out a low howl like a beast, "They're here!!"

From afar, tanks, IFVs, cannons, rocket launchers and a whole wave of steel appeared on the horizon.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

When the enemy appeared, the Russian forces began to fire towards the defenses of the Chinese troops.

As the mighty rain of metal came pouring down, the structures were blasted apart, together with the soldiers within.

The explosions rang out continuously, raining hell upon the

soldiers at the frontlines, and the earth quaked beneath them.

After the volley of fire, a number of Red Arrows appeared, launching another round of missiles, causing a sea of flames to erupt all over the Chinese defense lines.

Although this Russian Army had 20,000 soldiers, and their fuels and rations limited, they had brought a large amount of ammunition and firepower. They intended to crush the enemy by force. Once they succeed, they would be able to gain the rich resources of China. However, it was a huge risk as well, should they fail, they would have lost a huge part of their reserves.

"Scatter!"

After about 80 soldiers died, the frontline commander gave the order to retreat unwillingly, and they were forced to abandon their posts.

If they continued to stay stubbornly, the firepower of the Russian forces would be able to consume everything.

Seeing the frontline soldiers retreating, the Russian forces then sent out 3 infantry battalions as well as 2 armored battalions to charge into Hu Hot City.

The various Russian soldiers followed behind the tanks, launching a fierce assault on Hu Hot City. Their main objective was to occupy the city, and not use their firepower to crush everything.

Furthermore, although they had brought a large amount of ammunition, it was hard for them to gain anymore logistics from within their country. In order to prepare for a retaliation, they could only send their troopers over.

Inside the command vehicle, Gief spoke out in regret, "A pity, the situation within the country prevents us from utilizing more of our weapons, otherwise, the chances of victory would be increased by another 30%."

If they could utilize more of their heavy weapons, it would make occupying Hu Hot City so much easier.

The 5 battalions of the Russian forces charged ahead like a sharp sword, breaking through the various defenses, and invaded Hu Hot City easily.

Gief watched all these with a hint of appreciation, and smiled, "Seems like we will be drinking vodka this time tomorrow within the city."

At the moment he was gloating, an immense floating fortress suddenly appeared on one of the monitors, causing his face to turn pale, "WHAT?! What is that?!"

The Russian forces eyed the floating fortress, their eyes filled with shock.

Gief quickly spied the multiple cannons on the floating fortress through his various drones, and he screamed out somewhat in despair, "Damn Germans! They actually withheld this piece of information!! Convey my orders!! Utilize all we have, we must bring that thing down!!"

This time, the Russians had brought out a lot of their firepower, with over 130 assault helicopters. At the same time, there was the support of 36 Thunder Fighters from the Kingdom of God.

Under Gief's orders, the various aircraft quickly soared and made for the Sky Fortress.

Chapter 957: The Russian Army Surrenders!

Other than the 166 assault helicopters, on the ground, there were another 140-odd machine gun-mounted vehicles as well as rocket launchers. The anti-air missile launchers also moved out, firing out madly at the Sky Fortress in the air.

When the assault helicopters flew, their weapons fired off as well, aiming right for the fortress in the air.

At that instant, the Sky Fortress also fired out with countless guided missiles, every single round of theirs hitting the projectiles fired at them, causing them to explode.

However, the bullets and some cannons managed to get past, which slammed into the Sky Fortress, causing parts of the hull to fall off. Many cannons were also damaged, their alloy parts breaking off.

The captain of the Sky Fortress, Chen Yan, let out an excited roar, "Damn bastards, go to hell!! Attack!!"

The massive Sky Fortress had suffered a round of attacks, when the automatic weapons began to deploy under the control of Bai Yi, firing at the enemies in the air.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Enveloped by the countless projectiles, the assault helicopters were punctured full of holes, exploding in powerful fireworks, before descending towards the ground in balls of flame.

The Sky Fortress was a technologically advanced weapon, way ahead of current technology. Combined with the capabilities of Bai Yi, it was practically invincible in its ability to cause damage.

At the same time, a number of laser guns deployed out and beams shot out like knives.

The white laser beams found their targets below accurately, slicing through the various guided missile launchers, causing them to burst into flames.

Another volley of anti-air rockets also shot out from the Sky Fortress, targeting those assault helicopters still left over.

Other than those pilots who managed to evade those missiles with their superb piloting skills, the remaining ones were all shot down, exploding in a magnificent display of fireworks.

In the sky, the various assault helicopters exploded one after another, falling down like rain, before crashing into the ground.

Seeing such a devastating scene, the Russian soldiers watched with pale expressions, their eyes filled with despair.

Once the air was controlled by the Chinese forces, it would spell the end for the Russian forces.

Gief ordered out with an ugly countenance, "Retreat!! Retreat immediately!!"

As his order passed, those armored vehicles that had yet to enter the fray quickly fell back.

Meanwhile, the foot troops that entered Hu Hot City also tried frantically to retreat.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Right at this time, the Chinese artillery hiding within cover began their counterattack, firing their heavy cannons at the retreating Russian soldiers, cutting off their retreat, and blowing a huge number of them into pieces.

The various tanks were also either destroyed or partially torn apart under the rain of armageddon.

The Chinese soldiers that had not made their move also poured out like a flood, wielding advanced laser weapons as they fired at the Russian forces. The laser beams tore through the armored

vehicles, IFVs, destroying them as well as the soldiers within.

When the Russian soldiers received the order to retreat, many lost their combat will, trying to flee. Thus, no one thought to fight back, as they were hunted down by the Chinese forces.

As the main Russian forces were retreating, the Sky Fortress opened up their flaps, releasing assault helicopters that flew down and chased after them.

The normal assault helicopters might not be able to compare to the Thunder Fighters in terms of flight capabilities and firepower, but could still deal damage in the chase.

The 24 of them chased after the retreating Russian forces, their machine guns roared out mercilessly, pumping holes into the various armored vehicles below. Their bullets also tore through the Russian soldiers, raining hell upon them.

The anti-air forces of the Russian side had been annihilated by Bai Yi at the first instance, thus, all that remained could only attempt using their machine guns to fire at the Sky Fortress and assault helicopters in weak attempts.

However, no matter how hard they tried, they were culled like weeds being mowed down, dying miserably.

In the air, the thrusters of the Sky Fortress roared to life, pushing its speed to fly above the retreating Russian forces.

Machine guns and other weapons then extended out of flaps, releasing another bout of bullets down below, causing more carnage. The dying screams of the Russian soldiers rang throughout the battlefield.

Gief watched in horror as his subordinates were culled down, his eyes turning red in grief as he roared out in fury, "Retreat in any manner you can!! Disperse!! Damn Germans!! They lied!! They lied to us those damn bastards!!"

The Kingdom of God had pushed for the newly established

Russian Empire to attack China, not only providing resources but valuable intelligence as well. However, inside the reports they gave, there was no indication of the presence of this terrifying Sky Fortress.

Had the Russian Empire known about the Sky Fortress that could rival a Type 5 Mutant Beast in destruction, they would have made more preparations. At the very least, they would not be beaten back so pitifully, nor throw their forces in such an attempt.

Under Gief's orders, the soldiers separated into two forces, trying their best to break out of the nightmare.

At this time, on the vast plains, a force of 3,000 riders on Black Stallions and equipped with laser guns came chasing over. It was the 1st Regiment 3rd Brigade, meant to cut off the retreat of the Russian forces.

The Sky Fortress continued to fire out laser beams, tearing through the tanks of the Russian forces, turning them into a heap of useless metal.

One intelligence officer turned to Gief in anxiety, "General, what do we do now?"

Currently, the Russian forces were being cut down incessantly. At every second, there would be tanks destroyed as well as soldiers being killed. The entire Russian force was on the brink of annihilation, and they required Gief to make a decision.

Gief ordered through gritted teeth, "Surrender."

Receiving Gief's orders, white flags were raised in the air.

All the Russian soldiers heaved a sigh of relief, as they laid their weapons in trepidation, their hands hugging their heads and kneeled.

Within the Sky Fortress, Chen Yan saw the Russian soldiers surrender, and he heaved a sigh of relief as well, celebrating inwardly, "These bunch of Russians finally surrendered."

They were generally considered to be tough opponents due to their tenacious nature.

Before the apocalypse, their technology was way ahead of China. After the apocalypse, a leader came out much later than Yue Zhong. They had not obtained any advanced technology. At the same time, they were suppressed by the super intelligent evolved zombies within the country, unable to expand. In terms of strength, they were definitely not a match for China. Furthermore, they had sent out a desperate expeditionary force, while fighting on China's land. The terrain advantage was not on their side, thus, they had lost badly.

Within the command center in Hu Hot City, Ji Qing Wu relaxed after seeing the Russian forces surrender. However, her pretty brows furrowed once again, "The Russians were easy to deal with, but I wonder about the other areas?"

In order to deal with Russia, Yue Zhong had sent out one of his trump cards, the Sky Fortress, as well as 10 assault helicopters. The other battlefields did not have the luxury of the Sky Fortress, thus, Ji Qing Wu was extremely worried about the other battlefields.

At the Vietnam battlefield.

In front of Thai Nguyen, Yao Li Hua, the leader of the VPDC, was trying to motivate his subordinates, "Kill!! Kill them all!! Kill those who dare invade us!! We must gain back our countries!! For our country, our people, our future, we must definitely win this fight!!"

"Exterminate them!!"

"Annihilate the invaders!!"

"..."

Under Yao Li Hua's words, the VPDC forces were all pumped up, and let out excited roars.

Initially, the VPDC had lacked clothes and rations, their considerably lesser numbers were supported by the Kingdom of

God, and every one of them was wielding rifles, with resolute gazes in their eyes.

The VPDC managed to gain the support of the Kingdom of God and conquered a few cities of Vietnam. Thus, they rescued many survivors as well. Their numbers currently numbered about 300,000, while their soldiers were about 40,000. It was with such numbers that Yao Li Hua finally had the guts to challenge Yue Zhong.

"Attack!! Destroy these damn invaders."

With his speech, 4 infantry battalions that had undergone training from the Kingdom of God started to charge towards Thai Nguyen.

Soon, the 4 infantry battalions came to clashes with the Chinese soldiers stationed within.

Chapter 958: Defeating the Heaven Sect!

"Damn dogs!! You guys finally can't hold on? Go to hell!!"

Within Thai Nguyen, Gan Tao was firing at the swarming Vietnamese soldiers, his eyes filled with joy and excitement. He was wielding only an assault rifle, walking through the battlefield like a death god, accurately taking headshots out of the incoming soldiers.

Gan Tao's brother and comrades had all perished at the hands of the Vietnamese, thus he was filled with a deep hatred for them. Due to the stop in fighting between both countries, he had vented his frustration and killing intent on Mutant Beasts and zombies, fighting crazily on the frontlines, thus his combat abilities rose quickly. Combing with the support of the Evolving Liquid, he had already become a Type 3 expert.

After he joined the fray, the experts of the VPDC also joined, clashing with him.

The battle reached a stalemate, with both sides suffering casualties, and at every inch of the battlefield, there was no sign of advance of either party.

After VPDC had gained the support of the Kingdom of God, their equipment and training had been heightened. Without the support of the Sky Fortress, Yue Zhong's forces in Vietnam was thus in a tough battle.

However, under the control of Ming Jia Jia, Thai Nguyen City was impregnable and full of military forts. The advance of the VPDC was thus hindered, as they tried their hardest to take out the defenses one by one.

On a highway from Hebei leading towards the capital, a convoy of machine-gun vehicles, IFVs, and cannon launchers were moving at high speeds. Together with some fuel trucks and resource

carriers behind, the entire fleet stretched for about a few kilometers.

Inside a long, luxurious Rolls Royce vehicle, a middle-aged man with a medium built, nose with rosacea and pimpled face was currently enjoying himself with 4 beauties.

Another younger man, dressed like a hooligan with blond, spiky hair spoke out with doubt, "Boss, are we really going to attack Yue Zhong? He was the conqueror of the capital after all, not some riff-raff."

The middle-aged man was called Li Tian Ming, the current Sect Leader of the Heaven Sect in Hebei. His subordinate, the hooligan, was called Zhang Zi Zhen, one of the higher-ups within the Sect, and a trusted aide of Li Tian Ming.

Li Tian Ming laughed out loud, speaking dismissively, "Zi Zhen, don't worry. Yue Zhong disappeared for a year already. This time, 5 armies are attacking his faction. Furthermore, the Russians have the most lethal weapons, they will definitely focus on that side. Once both sides have suffered great losses, our 20,000-strong army will take the chance to conquer the capital. By that time, the whole of China will be our playground!! Hahaha!!"

Li Tian Ming threw a bottle of wine over to Zhang Zi Zhen, laughing, "Come, drink up! With our current speed, it would take about 10 days to reach the capital. By that time, there should be a victor. If the Russians won, we will take the chance to stab Yue Zhong in the back. If Yue Zhong's forces won, they should have suffered as well. We can then fight them, or negotiate. We can choose to invade or retreat, there would not be any problems."

Li Tian Ming never had the intention to contend with Yue Zhong's forces. Instead, he wanted to play the fisherman, waiting for his chance. With his forces, it was possible to reach the capital within a single day. However, they chose to proceed slowly.

As long as Li Tian Ming's forces took their time, it would pose a

pressure on Yue Zhong's forces. Thus, Li Tian Ming only intended to draw out the forces, not fighting to the death with them.

Zhang Zi Zhen took the bottle, his heart relaxing slightly, as he hurried to fawn, "Boss is wise!"

"Haha!!" Li Tian Ming laughed out happily, before running his hands all over the beauties beside him, trying to kiss them. He was extremely unbridled and lewd, without any air of a commander at all.

Right at this time, a Thunder Fighter flew overhead, and the flaps opened, before Yue Zhong leaped down.

The moment he jumped out, he activated his Fourth Order Flight ability. Air began to surround him, and he seemed to merge with the sky, as long as he willed it, the air would push him towards the direction he desired. He was as free as the birds.

As he soared about for a while, he was extremely moved in his heart, "I can finally fly!!"

Flying freely in the sky had always been a dream of humankind. It was because of it that airplanes were invented. However, it was still impossible to fly without the use of some sort of mechanism or equipment. Currently, Yue Zhong was flying with his own strength, and it was enough to cause him to be overjoyed.

He quickly regained his calm and caught sight of the convoy below him. Eyeing the luxurious Rolls Royce, "These fellows are truly taking their time, causing me to wait for so long. That vehicle is pretty eye-catching, saves me the trouble of finding my target then."

Those who obtained some lucky windfall would usually flaunt their wealth, afraid that everyone else did not know about their status and wealth. In the apocalypse, many leaders had also come by their wealth accidentally and would start to lead degenerate lifestyles.

With a thought, Yue Zhong shot downwards in a beam of light.

The Fourth Order Flight ability was reliant on Yue Zhong's own constitution for its speed. With his peak-Type 5 physiques, pushing the Flight ability, he could reach speeds of Mach-2 as well.

In just 2 seconds, he had crossed the 600m distance, directly landing on the top of the Rolls Royce. He then grabbed out with his might, and tore off the roof in two, throwing the halves away casually.

Li Tian Ming was also an expert that had crawled through his fair share of zombies and Mutant Beasts. The moment the roof was torn off, his face changed, and he quickly tossed 2 of the women in his embrace at Yue Zhong, while roaring out, "Enemy attack!!"

Yue Zhong stretched out and casually negated the force from Li Tian Ming's throw, before casually pushing the 2 ladies to one side.

Zhang Zi Zhen's eyes turned bloodshot as he howled and activated his Third Order Werewolf Transformation, turning into a 3m-tall werewolf with rippling muscles and a ferocious glint in his eyes.

The moment he finished transforming, he directly pounced towards Yue Zhong, reaching out with his claws that could tear through tanks.

Zhang Zi Zhen had also come across a few miraculous encounters, obtaining such an ability after countless slaughter. The moment he transformed, he could even block heavy caliber bullets, his speed reaching the sound barrier, and his strength immense. Among other Type 3 experts, he was hard to deal with, and many experts had fallen at his hands.

Yue Zhong swept a bored glance at the vicious attack of Zhang Zi Zhen, and slapped out casually, his palm smacking against his forehead, directly knocking him out and sending a Type 3 Puppet Rune into his forehead.

Li Tian Ming saw how easily Yue Zhong subdued Zhang Zi Zhen, and his face fell as he exclaimed, "Brother!! Who are you?!! I, Li Tian Ming, haven't offended you, have I?"

"I'm Yue Zhong."

His words had just fallen when the next instant, he disappeared from his position.

"Fast!!"

Li Tian Ming felt a sense of danger arise, and he quickly tried to activate his life-saving treasure, as a bright green light radiated from him, turning into a protection.

At that instant, Yue Zhong appeared right behind him and slapped out at the green shield.

With a loud crack, the green shield that could defend against even rockets shattered, while Yue Zhong's palm continued towards Li Tian Ming's forehead, and sent him unconscious.

"How is this possible?! How could there be such a strong person on this Earth?!"

At that moment before he blacked out, this last thought flashed past Li Tian Ming's mind. He was also a Super Evolver, at the peak of the Type 3 realm. However, he had never seen someone able to destroy his green shield with a single smack. This exceeded his imagination.

A Type 5 expert was basically unrivaled on Earth. Only Type 4 and Type 5 Mutant Beasts could possibly injure or kill one. A Type 3 expert was unable to last even a single move against Yue Zhong.

After Li Tian Ming fainted, Yue Zhong swiftly sent another Type 3 Puppet Rune into his head.

Seeing how Yue Zhong took care of the top 2 experts of the Heaven Sect, the girls in the car all revealed expressions of fear, unsure how Yue Zhong would deal with them.

The Puppet Rune-controlled Zhang Zi Zhen came up to Yue Zhong and saluted respectfully, "Zhang Zi Zhen greets Master."

Yue Zhong asked, "Zhang Zi Zhen, take me to the Leader of this convoy."

Yue Zhong had intended to take out the leader of the Hebei forces, and crush this motley crew.

Zhang Zi Zhen pointed at the fainted Li Tian Ming and spoke, "Master, that is the leader of the Hebei forces, Li Tian Ming."

Li Tian Ming roused from his unconscious state and also came up to Yue Zhong, greeting, "Li Tian Ming greets Master."

Chapter 959: Catastrophe!

"I actually managed to catch the leader, what luck." Yue Zhong looked at Li Tian Ming and chuckled lightly. He originally intended to use his overwhelming strength to steamroll, turning all the commanders into puppets. After all, at least one would know where the leader was.

After Yue Zhong became a peak-Type 5 expert, he had the strength and confidence to take the head of the leader of a ten-thousand army. If it had been when he was at Type 3, without any preparations, he could possibly send himself on a suicide mission.

Right at this time, there were enraged shouts from outside, "The person inside!! Listen up!! You've been surrounded!! Surrender immediately with your hands above your head and kneel!! Otherwise, we'll open fire!!"

Yue Zhong looked outside, noting that the Rolls Royce was already surrounded by a dozen IFVs, tanks, and many soldiers.

He chuckled and swept Li Tian Ming a look.

Li Tian Ming nodded and stepped forward, "All of you stand down, this is an important guest of our Heaven Sect. Luo Gan, dismiss your men, otherwise, they will be dealt with according to the rules."

Li Tian Ming was, after all, a peak existence within the Heaven Sect and his words were worth its weight. Under his orders, the soldiers all exchanged looks before retreating helplessly.

Right at this time, there was a strangled voice of a person with broken Chinese, "NO! NO! No retreat!! No retreat!! Your Sect Master under control!! No retreat!! Kill!! Save your Sect Master!!"

The foreigner outside using broken Chinese was precisely an envoy sent by the Kingdom of God to help train the soldiers of Heaven Sect.

After the countless setbacks facing Yue Zhong, the Kingdom of God had changed their direction. Instead of sending elites, they made use of their forces to train their vassal forces and split up their attacks so as to cause problems for Yue Zhong.

Li Tian Ming laughed savagely, before ordering cruelly, "Convey my orders, kill those white pigs!! Leave not a single one alive!"

"Yes!!"

All the subjects knew that Li Tian Ming only intended to make use of the Kingdom of God. After things were done, they would fall out with them.

The moment they received his order, many of the subordinates immediately opened fire on the officers from the Kingdom of God.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

Following the sounds of gunfire, many of the personnel sent by the Kingdom of God were laying in pools of blood.

"Damn it!! Li Tian Ming!! You will pay for your actions today!! Our Kingdom of God would definitely not let you off!!" As the men from the Kingdom of God were being killed, one of them activated his own ability, transforming into a huge werewolf. He let out an enraged howl, before flashing away, killing the Heaven Sect members around him, and fled towards the distance.

After he transformed, he was at the peak of the Type 3 realm, and no ordinary human could stop his advance. Soon, he managed to slaughter a path for himself.

As he reached a hundred meters away, Yue Zhong flipped his hand casually, and the Electromagnetic Cannon appeared. He took aim before firing coldly.

A bright beam burst out and shot through the head of the werewolf, blasting it apart.

After seeing how such a powerful entity was taken out in one

shot by Yue Zhong, the Heaven Sect members all stared at him with fear and wariness.

Li Tian Ming ordered out, "Convey my orders!! We shall take a rest here!! Once there's a result of the clash between Yue Zhong's forces and the Russians, we will make our move then!"

Many of the commanders within the Heaven Sect had their doubts towards the assault on the capital. After hearing the new command, many of them heaved a sigh of relief and stopped.

If the top brass was corrupt, the bottom would not be clean either. Since Li Tian Ming brought his women during his expeditions, his subordinates were the same, indulging in their own pleasures.

Soon, the 20,000-strong troop came to a stop by the road.

After passing the order, the sounds of laughter and pleasure rang out from the various tents.

Zhang Zi Zhen came to a tent, and told the people inside having fun, "The Sect Master has orders for your guys to head to the command center."

One drunk commander asked, albeit with some dissatisfaction, "Ole Zhang, what does the Sect Master need us for? Asking for us at this time?"

These subordinates were naturally unhappy when they were interrupted in the middle of their fun.

Zhang Zi Zhen frowned and spoke coldly, "The Sect Master's ways are mysterious and he has his intentions. Go make your preparations and head over quickly."

After that, he turned to leave and head for another tent.

Another commander who had too much to drink could not bear it and curse, "Hmph! What mysterious ways?! That boot-licking asshole! If it wasn't for Sect Master's support, that fellow isn't

worth shit!! Everyday hanging around the Sect Master, what an eyesore."

His friend stood up, "Forget it, Ole Wang. Enough, otherwise, if Sect Master heard you, we'll be in trouble. Let's go."

Under curses and mutterings, the various subordinates came out from their tents and headed for the command center.

The moment Ole Wang entered the center before he could react, he felt a pain at the back of his head and fell unconscious.

Yue Zhong stood at the side and waved his hand, sending a Puppet Rune into Old Wang's head, turning him into a puppet.

The stream of commanders entered the command center, only to be turned into puppets by Yue Zhong.

Once all of them were turned into Puppets, Yue Zhong then used his Flight ability to leave this Hebei force, heading up towards the Thunder Fighter waiting in the air, before making for the distance.

At the border of Guizhou and Guang Xi, there was a troop of over 20,000 people seated in tanks, IFVs, armored vehicles, etc, headed for the direction of Guang Xi.

This army of 20,000 men was vastly different from the Heaven Sect. Among them, there were a thousand of them who were pure Aryan Germans, other than that, there were another 5,000 Chinese who had undergone the Kingdom of God training from a very early stage.

After 2 years of intensive training, these 5,000 Chinese were all elite soldiers and the pillar of this particular force. The remaining 14,000 were all elites that had been trained up in this past year, and their combat strength was not too far off from the main 5,000.

This particular force was one of the trump cards of the Kingdom of God. Their speed was extremely fast, their objective the heavy industrialization capital Yan City of Guang Xi.

At this time, Yan City was already the 2nd largest industrialized city, producing all sorts of ammunition for the various troops.

The ushering of the new-age weapons like the laser guns and cannons, ray guns, electromagnetic cannons as well as research into enhanced armor had also started here. This was because most of the brilliant scientists from Japan had been brought over here by Yue Zhong. With their help, they had quickly produced a few different advanced weaponry.

There were already 2 research centers in China, one in the capital, the other in Guang Xi. The capital relied on the various forerunners among the civilians and survivors to head, while Guang Xi relied on the influx of scientists brought by Yue Zhong at an early stage, thus forming the 2 centers.

At the start of the apocalypse, scientists and researchers were of not much use. They were weak, and could not fight the zombies, thus, their value was lower than that of farmers and manual laborers. However, once society settled down, their value outstripped those farmers.

The Kingdom of God intended to destroy the research center of Guang Xi. As long as they could impede the expansion of China, their objective would be met.

Compared to the lazy Heaven Sect, this expedition force from Guizhou was extremely vigilant throughout the journey.

A number of sentry and recon teams set out in all directions, constantly monitoring for enemies, while unmanned drones flew in the air, keep watch over the skies.

Inside one of the command vehicles, a blond middle-aged man was staring at the displays with a stern expression.

This stern-looking man was General Randy, the leader of the current expedition force. He was a lieutenant colonel before the apocalypse and had gone through rigorous military training

before. After the apocalypse happened, he worked hard for the Kingdom of God, contributing a lot, and became a well-respected general.

"Zombie horde!! A huge zombie horde had been discovered in front!!!.... AHHH!!"

All of a sudden, there was a scream from the recon team ahead, ringing through the communications systems.

Randy's face changed as he ordered swiftly, "Zombie horde? Switch to the displays of the KF43 team now!"

The images on the display quickly switched, revealing a horrific scene

Right in front of this expedition force, there was a sea of zombies surging toward them. At one glance, there seemed to be no end to their numbers.

What was even more terrifying was above the horde, there were other winged-type Evolved zombies. These aerial monsters were currently flying towards the unmanned drones.

Chapter 960: Obliteration!

On the various displays, the last images were the sight of those winged Evolved zombies pouncing onto them, before the feed got cut off.

The hearts of the various commanders sank. They were very clear that their unmanned drones were already destroyed.

Randy swiftly made the decision and passed the order, "Notify the entire army, retreat immediately. 1st Regiment cover our flanks."

There were over 20,000 armored troops under Randy, and their equipment was decent. They had ample ammunition as well, on top of their tanks and vehicles. If they were up against any zombies at the early onset of the apocalypse, they would definitely be able to wipe out a million zombies with ease.

However, after 2 years of evolution, the zombies had become even more monstrous, developing into various frightening creatures. If these 20,000 soldiers were to face against a million zombies in a frontal clash, the only result would be their deaths after merely wiping out a few tens of thousands of zombies.

Under Randy's orders, the armored troops quickly turned around and went back the direction they came from.

"The back!! There are zombies at the back!! There're so many of them!!"

Just as they retreated, the recon teams behind reported a spine-chilling fact.

At the same time, the unmanned drones behind also discovered another dense horde of zombies behind surging towards them.

Sha! Sha!! Sha!!!

Barely seconds after displaying those images, the unmanned

drones were immediately destroyed by the aerial Evolved zombies, leaving behind static images on the display.

By this time, Randy was pale, and he could not help but curse, "Shit!! Those zombies have become crafty! Fuck!!"

In the past, they were assumed to be stupid and brainless. Even a simple trap could hold back many ordinary zombies.

In these 2 years, Randy had made use of his forces to wipe out over millions of zombies. Even the Z2s and Z3s were merely fools to him. He had never placed them high on his priority list.

To think that these brainless monsters were able to route his forces today, causing him to be furious and at the same time, filled with despair.

Once they were surrounded, these 20,000 elites would become food for the zombies.

At this time, an intelligence officer piped in, "General, headquarters wants to speak to you."

"Receive it." Randy's face turned dark as he muttered, "Those fat fucks, are they trying to pick a fight with me now? What the fuck are their intelligence units doing?! How come they didn't see so many zombies? Or are the satellites already useless? Shit."

As he was cursing, one of the displays brightened, revealing a wizened old man in military wear, exuding a strict military charm.

The moment Randy saw this old man, his face turned serious, "General."

This old man in front of him was one of the upper echelons of the Kingdom of God, Judel. Prior to the apocalypse, he had been a major general of the German forces. After the apocalypse, he had commanded the Kingdom of God's forces to wipe out countless zombies and enemy factions. His prestige within the army was incredibly high.

The Apostles were all special and talented individuals, powerful Evolvers that were revered among the ordinary people of the Kingdom of God. However, they had no experience nor talent in command, after all, they were focused on their individual strength.

Thus, in terms of military matters, the authority still laid with those from a military background.

Judel's face was exhausted as he spoke, "Randy, the Elders have given their orders. Call back the troops, and bring our Aryan boys back to India."

When Randy heard this, he exclaimed in spite of himself, "WHAT?! Sir, do you know what you're asking?! If we were to retreat now, our 15th Battalion in Asia would perish at the hands of those zombies!! 20,000 outstanding soldiers would be sacrificed because of this decision!!"

Judel snapped coldly, "I know that it's hard for you to accept this decision. Look around you!! You're already surrounded by countless zombies!! If you fight on, your entire army will be wiped out! Our Aryan boys cannot be lost out there. Bring them home. As for the 15th Battalion, they're just a bunch of Chinese people. If they die, so be it. We saved them and groomed them. It's time for them to use their lives to repay our efforts."

In Judel's eyes, the 15th Battalion was collateral that could be sacrificed for the sake of the pure-blooded Aryan soldiers.

In fact, to the Kingdom of God, the Aryans were the superior race. Everyone else was of a lower status, and tools to be used. Within their forces, all the commanders were Aryans, while only the lower-ranking officers consisted of other races. It was also not as easy for these people to rise in rank.

Most of the upper management in Taiwanese companies were comprised of Taiwanese people. Even Japanese MNCs had their own people installed in the upper echelons. Such treatment was

common everywhere even before the apocalypse, not to mention after.

Beyond Judel, Yue Zhong himself would choose to sacrifice the other races and people from other countries if he was forced to choose. Under the direst of circumstances would he then sacrifice his fellow Chinese people.

Randy fell into silence, he had been working with the 15th Battalion these 2 years and watched them grow. He had already grown attached to them. After all, he was human, and not unfeeling. Making him abandon his own loyal troops, even if they were Chinese, was a hard decision for him to make.

Judel frowned before he barked out sternly. "General Randy! This is an order! A military order!! You are commanded to carry this out without further delay!!"

Randy was startled, and he quickly saluted, "Understood, Sir!"

After that, he regained his composure, and issued a flurry of orders, "All troops are to gather at the mountain, begin fortification. Contact all Aryan soldiers to board the aircraft swiftly."

Under his orders, the 15th Battalion swiftly got to work, gathering at a nearby mountain and started preparing their defenses.

Having undergone strict military training, they were adept at using the various vehicles to form a central command post and built defensive structures around.

However, just as they finished their preparations, a few aircraft carriers flew out from the central vehicles, flanked by Thunder Fighters as they soared away.

"What was that?!"

"They fled!! They fled!!"

"Fuck!! Those damn Germans abandoned us and fled!!"

"Aren't we comrades?! Why abandon us?! WHY?!!"

"Bastards!!! Beasts!!"

"..."

Seeing the various large carriers flying away, escorted by the Thunder Fighters, the 15th Battalion of the Kingdom of God fell into despair.

"Damn bastards! Go to hell!!"

Amidst their grief and rage, who knew who started it, but a few soldiers began to fire their weapons at the aircraft in the sky.

The various other soldiers began utilizing their machine guns and fired crazily as well.

In a second, comrades had turned to enemies.

Hong!!

One slow aircraft had been punctured full of holes by the enraged shooting below, and blew up in a huge ball of flames, descending towards the ground.

"Damn Chinese dogs."

There were 65 Aryans within that aircraft, and seeing their fellow countrymen die, a few Thunder Fighter pilots were enraged. They immediately turned around and fired napalm grenades at the 15th Battalion below.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the napalm grenades landed, they exploded into seas of flames that enveloped the entire area, immediately causing screams of agony and misery to ring.

At the same time, the Thunder Fighters fired out rockets at the tanks and armored vehicles, turning them into blazing heaps, tearing a huge hole in the defense line.

"Fuck!!! Those white pigs are despicable!! Bunch of bastards!!"

Those who were enraged but had kept their cool instantly exploded with fury, quickly firing out their anti-air weapons. These had been kept in preparation to face off against Yue Zhong's forces but were now used on their own comrades.

The fierce volley of attacks began to buffet towards the sky.

Under the relentless assault, one of the Thunder Fighters was struck, and exploded resoundingly, falling to the ground.

The rest quickly pulled away, ascending higher and joining the rest of the fleeing troops. They had already broken the defense line of the 15th Battalion, dooming them. They were not willing to waste any more time.

Chapter 961: Obliteration (2)!

After they had abandoned the main force of the 15th Battalion, Randy and his team flew swiftly towards the direction of India.

Prior to the apocalypse, India was also a huge country. However, other than their population and nuclear capability, it was a country of a huge wealth divide, serious corruption, lawless rapes, and these were some of the impressions that other people usually have.

After the apocalypse, the Kingdom of God quickly occupied the place and began expansion, gaining their human population, while crushing any rising factions. India had thus become one of their largest bases outside of Europe.

As long as they could return there, Randy could rally some troops and swiftly form another elite Aryan team.

In the sky, amidst the horde of aerial Evolved zombies, there was one with a muscular physique, his features good-looking and his skin a wheat color. He had 2 pairs of extremely evil-looking wings formed out of flesh, and it was apparent that he was one of the intelligent Evolved beings.

His eyes flashed with a glint, and as he turned to gaze at Randy's team fleeing 20km away, he let out a loud and powerful howl.

At that instant, the 70,000 aerial Evolved zombies flapped their wings and changed directions, flying towards Randy's group.

Their speed was insane, easily surpassing what the heavy aircraft were capable of, and soon caught up with them.

Randy shouted frantically, "Increase the altitude!!"

With his shout, the pilots quickly controlled the fleet to soar higher.

The higher the altitude, the colder the temperatures, making it

difficult for biological organisms to survive. Flight would definitely be affected.

If these aerial Evolved zombies were to chase after them, they would likely be frozen by the cold temperatures.

Unfortunately, while Randy's order was the right one, it came too late.

By then, the horde of zombies had already swarmed over their fleet.

The Thunder Fighters on either side acting as escorts immediately opened fire, spewing bullets into the horde of zombies.

In a bright burst of light, many of the aerial Evolved zombies were ripped and shredded apart, their blood and flesh splattering throughout the sky.

There were a total of 35 Thunder Fighters and 68 Eurocopters in the fleet. The moment these 100-odd aircraft opened fire, the rain of bullets was enough to slaughter hundreds and thousands of these zombies.

However, the horde continued to surge forward, lunging towards the fleet without fear. After paying the price of almost ten thousands of their numbers, they finally reached the aircraft.

They slammed into the bodies of the aircraft viciously, some charging headlong into the rotating blades, jamming them at the expense of their own bodies.

Shatter!!

Some of the aerial Evolved zombies were flying at high speeds and they slammed into the windshields, shattering them as easily as glass, before pouncing into the cockpits.

The zombies behind also charged forth into the vehicle, tearing into the human soldiers within.

Under such an assault, the various Eurocopters lost control, descending from the skies as they exploded in balls of flames.

The powerful hulls of the Thunder Fighters were barely able to hold off the clashes of the zombies. Those that tried to smash into the windshields became torn apart while leaving only slight cracks. As for those who tried to jam the rotating blades, they were only sliced up helplessly.

When the fleet was being buffeted, many of them quickly crawled into the various Eurocopters through whatever openings they found.

At the same time, while the zombies continued to charge at the rotating blades, even if they got sliced up, there was still damage done. Some of the blades became dented, and the aircrafts started to wobble before descending towards the ground.

More zombies then pounced on those that were dropping, use their sharp claws to tear open holes in the weaker parts of the hull, crawling in.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

As they burrowed in, they would be fired upon by the Aryan soldiers, turning into sieves before their lifeless bodies fell out.

However, before long, one such heavy carrier was ripped apart by the growing number of zombies, and when they swarmed in, the screams of the soldiers soon rang out. The entire helicopter then smashed into the ground and exploded in flames.

More zombies succeeded in tearing up the aircraft carriers and burrowing in, swiftly killing the Aryan soldiers within as the various helicopters started to crash and burst into flames.

Within one of the Thunder Fighters, Randy stared in horror as his fleet was being destroyed all around him, his eyes flashing with a hint of pain as he roared out, "Break through! Break through!!"

Right now, the only ones capable of breaking out of the

encirclement were the Thunder Fighters. The rest were too vulnerable to the attacks of the aerial Evolved zombies and were basically doomed.

Since the Thunder Fighters could not protect the rest of the carriers anymore, they rose swiftly into the air. At the same time, their multiple weapons all extended out, before firing wildly into the horde of zombies.

Many of them were torn apart and shredded under the relentless fire.

The Thunder Fighters continued to climb, while their exterior parts were still crawling with zombies.

As the zombies crawled about, they used their sharp claws to slash at the hull, causing multiple scratch marks, chipping off the alloy. However, it was impossible for them to breach the Thunder Fighters within a short time.

The Thunder Fighters were made out of parts after the apocalypse, utilizing advanced technology. Thus, their defenses were terrifying. While the material was so much thinner compared to those used for tanks, their durability was so much stronger. Even a huge cannon round might not be able to penetrate through, thus, it would not be easy for the ordinary zombies to tear through.

Once the Thunder Fighters gave up on protecting the aircraft carriers, the pilots began to focus on maneuvering and controlling the fighters, pushing the damage capabilities to the utmost to tear the zombies into pieces.

At this time, the intelligence Evolved zombie with 2 pairs of wings flapped them and shot over in a bright flash. He appeared in front of a Thunder Fighter and sent out a powerful fist towards the windshield.

Crack!

Following the cracking sounds, the windshield that was capable of blocking even the 14.5mm rounds finally shattered, breaking apart.

"Help!!"

The pilots of that Thunder Fighter were horrified by the scene, and let out screams of despair.

The intelligent zombie grinned savagely before he suddenly disappeared from his location.

At the next instant, the heads of the 2 of them rolled off and dropped to the ground. Another elite soldier further inside was also decapitated.

Soon after, the intelligent Evolved zombie came flying out of the Thunder Fighter, in his claws were the heads of the various soldiers. He took a bite out of one of them as though eating an apple, looking extremely gruesome.

The Thunder Fighter that lost its soldiers started to descend towards the ground.

After wiping out one of the Thunder Fighters, the intelligent zombie then flashed through the skies, directly tearing into the remaining Thunder Fighters, killing everyone within.

Under the assault of this half-step Type 5 existence, the Thunder Fighters fell out of the skies one by one. In the end, only Randy's Thunder Fighter, as well as 6 others, were left, due to them climbing about 4km high, dodging the chase through the clouds.

The intelligent zombie knew that the cold would be a threat to him, thus, before he had fully evolved to the Type 5 stage, he could not soar further up without being frozen or suffering a decrease in speed. At that point, he might even be killed in retaliation.

"Damn beast!! The intelligence department is fucking useless!! What the fuck have they been doing?! How come such a huge horde was able to escape their detection?!" Onboard the Thunder

Fighter, Randy took count of the Thunder Fighters that had managed to flee. He slammed the table in his rage and sorrow, cursing out viciously. He could not understand how the zombies had evaded the surveillance of the satellites. After all, in preparation for this war, all the satellites should have been utilized to keep watch.

Hidden within another cloud, Yue Zhong swept a cold look over Randy's direction, before his gaze landed on the 15th Battalion below, "7 managed to escape... Forget it. What about those fellows below? Do I save them or not?"

It was precisely because Yue Zhong had gotten Bai Yi to hack and control the satellites, that the Kingdom of God was successfully hoodwinked. He was thus caught in their encirclement. Otherwise, it would have been impossible for them to surround Randy's forces.

Chapter 962: The 15th Battalion!

Beneath Yue Zhong, the 18,000 soldiers of the 15th Battalion were thrown into panic and despair. Many of them had resorted to taking their own lives by blowing their brains out. Compared to being eaten alive by the zombies, they would rather commit suicide.

Being consumed by the zombies was the cruelest way to die in the apocalypse.

Even so, many soldiers took up their arms and hid behind covers, eyeing their surroundings warily.

In the distance, a black line loomed over, representing the approaching sea of zombies. Once they reach, the only fate of these 18,000 soldiers was death.

The 15th Battalion stared out at the incoming zombies, their eyes filled with dread. They knew there were no reinforcements, their leader had chosen to flee, and against these zombies, there was practically nothing they could do.

"I'm Xiao Jian, commander of the 2nd Company, 1st Platoon, 1st Squad. That damn white pig Randy had abandoned us! They're no longer our comrades. However, we cannot give up on ourselves!! Let us fight to the death, and wipe out as many damned zombies as we can! If we kill one, it's a break even! If we can kill 2, we have earned 1! At the very least, let's help those still alive in China!"

"Furthermore, our rations and ammunition are enough to last more than half a month! As long as we hold out, and secure this location, it's not as if we don't have a way out! If we give up now, we'll definitely die!! Everybody! We must hang on! We will have a way out of this! From now on, everybody, listen to my command. We must stick together, and fight through this together!!" Xiao Jian, a male of about 31 or 32 shouted among the soldiers left behind within the command center.

"That's right!"

"We still have hope!"

"Fight it out!!"

"..."

Hearing Xiao Jian's words, those despairing soldiers immediately felt a rush of hope, and they hurried to heed his orders and got to their positions.

Seeing that the rest of the soldiers had gone back to their posts, Xiao Jian heaved a sigh of relief. However, his expression turned downcast, as he knew that there was only death awaiting them.

Soon, the huge sea of zombies came swarming like ants over.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

When the zombie horde came to within 200m of their defense location, the heavy machinery and artillery began to open fire.

The explosions rang out and blasted many zombies into pieces.

At the same time, the soldiers from behind opened fire, raining bullets all over the zombie hordes, tearing the zombies into hole-filled bodies.

Under the relentless fire of the human army, many of the zombies continued to crawl over their fallen comrades and charged for the defense point.

The zombies were starting to evolve in a frightening manner. If the bullets did not hit their spines or skulls, they would basically still be unstoppable. Only those heavy-caliber bullets, as well as stronger ammunition capable of mass destruction, would be able to annihilate them or stop them from getting back on their feet.

At the same time, in the skies, there were numerous aerial zombies swooping down towards the 15th Battalion.

There were plenty of anti-air weapons within the 15th Battalion's

arsenal, thus they began to fire out crazily, shooting the aerial zombies down.

Even so, there were too many of them, and they managed to pounce into the midst of the soldiers, attacking them wildly.

The sounds of screams and miserable wails resounded among the soldiers.

One particular elite warrior unit dashed into the midst of the aerial beasts within their ranks and began to utilize their abilities to decapitate them.

Among the rest of the 15th Battalion, there were 15 Type 3 experts wielding guns as they fired out at those aerial zombies as well.

Inside the base, countless ordinary soldiers were firing their rifles at the skies.

Other than their flight ability, those aerial zombies had claws that were sharp enough to tear through tanks, but their defenses were weak, thus ordinary rifles were lethal to them.

As the soldiers gathered together and fired, many aerial zombies fell down. The moment they landed, they were met with a rain of bullets, turning them into sieves.

At this moment when the soldiers were faced with danger, they exhibited their powerful combat strength and resolute wills. They were able to hold out with their simple fortifications while fighting back the 2-pronged attacks of the zombies.

If it had been the motley crew from the Heaven Sect in Hebei, by the time the first wave came, they would have collapsed entirely, fleeing for their lives before being consumed by the zombies.

In the clouds, Yue Zhong saw the outstanding reaction of the 15th Battalion to the situation caused by him, and his eyes brightened, "Not bad, this troop is really decent. Their fighting strength is also high, and they're Chinese! Worthy of saving."

Yue Zhong had not yet left because he wanted to observe this troop. If they had crumbled at the first sign of attack, even if Yue Zhong was a Type 6 expert and displayed all his trump cards, he would not be able to save them, might as well let them die.

Within the command post, Xiao Jian's face was full of worry as he stared at the display, while he issued out commands one after another.

All of a sudden, the display flashed, and Yue Zhong appeared on the screen.

The moment Xiao Jian saw him, he exclaimed in shock, "You're Yue Zhong!"

By now, Yue Zhong had become the number one enemy of the Kingdom of God, thus, every soldier knew about his face. Whoever was the first to defeat him would be able to instantly soar to the top echelons of the organization, enjoying all that life had to offer. Xiao Jian had seen his photograph and memorized his information.

Yue Zhong directly offered, "I'm Yue Zhong, do you guys want to live on?"

Xiao Jian's eyes flashed with a ray of hope, as he quickly replied, "I'm Xiao Jian, the temporary commander of the 15th Battalion. We want to live on, please save us!"

Yue Zhong immediately stated his conditions, "I can make my move. However, you will have to surrender unconditionally after this, and accept reorganization of your forces. You'll have to fight for China, and if any of you were to reconnect with the Kingdom of God, don't blame me for being merciless."

Xiao Jian did not even hesitate as he made his promise, "Fine! I'll promise you!!"

Currently, the 15th Battalion was barely holding out, if Yue Zhong did not act, they would not last long. Furthermore, the

Kingdom of God had already abandoned them, causing most of the soldiers to be filled with betrayal and hatred towards them.

In the sky, the half-step Type 5 intelligent zombie saw his troops being killed, and a look of anger flashed past his face. He flapped his wings, calling out a strong gust of tornado, and appeared right above a Type 3 human expert, slashing out with his claws.

The Type 3 human expert, whose name was Zhang Jin, had just killed 2 aerial zombies when he was caught by surprise, and his face turned pale, a look of despair on his face.

At this moment, an electromagnetic beam shot through the sky, directly blasting the head of the half-step Type 5 intelligent zombie.

Zhang Jin heaved a sigh of relief, as he looked to the sky, "That was powerful, who was he?"

He discovered a huge dragon made out of flames tearing through all the aerial zombies, and in an instant, all of them were caught in flames, giving out crackling sounds of burning. Their charred bodies fell out of the skies while being incinerated away.

After wiping out hundreds of those aerial zombies in a single move, Yue Zhong flew to the ground, directly activating his Summon Tamed Beast technique, and the Type 5 Mount Tai reappeared, charging towards the sea of zombies as per Yue Zhong's will.

Under Mount Tai's charge, the hundreds and thousands of zombies were flattened into meat paste, as it created a bloody path in its wake.

"What is that monster??"

"That's too fearsome!! Are there still such beasts in the world?"

"It can practically wipe us out in an instant!"

"..."

When the soldiers caught sight of Mount Tai, their eyes were filled with shock and fear. Its massive size had exceeded their imagination. They were basically ants in front of such a monstrous entity.

After all, not many people could see a Type 5 Mutant Beast so easily.

"Breakthrough!"

Seeing Mount Tai break out, Xiao Jian's heart shook, as he ordered out swiftly.

Under his orders, the elite soldiers of the 15th Battalion swiftly boarded their vehicles and in the midst of their attacking, they followed after Mount Tai in a bid to break out of the siege.

The zombies continued to pour towards the army like a sea wave, while the elite soldiers were still firing frantically.

Chapter 963: Arriving at Vietnam!

The zombies continued to surge forwards, as a number of H2s were suddenly hoisted by the larger L2s, and began firing out fireballs at the fleet.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Under the attacks of the fireballs, the armored vehicles were blasted apart, with the soldiers within losing their lives.

Other than those H2s, within the zombie horde, there were still evolved zombies wielding weapons as they fired as well. This caused many of the elite soldiers to fall.

The number of zombies laying siege to the 15th Battalion reached roughly 1.5 million, under the command of the intelligent zombie, each wave was more terrifying than the next.

If it was not for Mount Tai absorbing most of the damage and fire, causing a bloody path, the soldiers would have fallen long ago. Even so, many still perished.

Due to the existence of those aerial zombies, the soldiers had no choice but to keep an eye out for the skies. If they were not careful, some of those monsters would swoop down to take a bite out of them.

Any soldier that suffered a scratch or bite wound would be quickly tied up and executed. Everyone had to be vigilant, otherwise, they would be killed.

Yue Zhong took out a dozen H2s casually, when he saw the increasing death count of the soldiers, and frowned. He sighed, and waved his hands, revealing 8 Reapers.

The 8 metal behemoths quickly came to life, their eyes flashed red under Bai Yi's control.

When they appeared, they swiftly revealed their cannons and

began unleashing carnage all over their surroundings.

A number of electromagnetic beams tore through the evolved zombies with unbelievable accuracy, tearing them apart.

There was a strange movement within the horde, as a huge number of H1s, H2s, H3s were lifted up by L2s and L3s. The next moment, a volley of fireballs began raining down upon those Reapers.

The bodies of the Reapers glowed brightly, as their energy shields appeared. When the fireballs slammed into those shields, ripples could be seen, but there was no damage to them.

At the next instant, the electromagnetic beams fired out once more, slamming into those H-Types and L-Types, easily tearing through the heads of those zombies.

Even the L3s that could withstand bullets and grenade blasts were helpless against those electromagnetic beams.

2 L4s the size of houses over 4m-tall, that had grown out black scales capable of withstanding rockets, were also pierced through by those beams, slumping lifelessly to the ground.

When all the commotion was over, all those evolved zombies that posed incredible threats had all been taken out, leaving behind the ordinary zombies.

"What the hell!! Those machines are too powerful!! Tanks are trash compared to them! What the hell is that technology?!"

"That was too terrifying!! Those machines!!"

"Fuck, to think that there were such Mechs on this Earth!"

"..."

Inside their vehicles, the soldiers of the 15th Battalion watched the Reapers destroy their enemies, stunned.

In terms of offense and defense, the Reaper was basically unrivaled on Earth, any other weapons or war could not compare

to it.

Under the control of Bai Yi, the 8 Reapers continued to dish out carnage, tearing the Evolved zombies into pieces.

With such a large-scale battle, their efficiency was much higher than Yue Zhong. At the same time, their 4 cannons on each of them were able to fire out rapidly, killing the aerial zombies in the skies.

Once all 8 joined the fray, they provided a breather for the soldiers and decreased the casualty count drastically.

The majority of the zombies were already even more agile and perceptive compared to humans, however, their speed was not comparable to those vehicles at full speed.

At the same time, with Mount Tai carving out a bloody path, Yue Zhong forcefully brought the 15th Battalion out from the siege.

As he was killing his way out together with the 15th Battalion, deep amongst the zombies, there was an intelligent zombie standing with a furious expression. He had a medium build, with a long, thin blade at his waist. His hair was short, his looks handsome, as though Pan An had reincarnated.

He growled in a venomous low voice, "Damn it! Damn it!! Damn human, how dare you escape from my hands!! I will remember you!! When I catch you, I'll rip you apart and drink your blood!!"

This zombie, Ren Jie, was extremely clear that with his current Type 5 strength, he would just be slapped into a meat paste by Mount Tai if he appeared in front of Yue Zhong. Hence, he had no choice but to hide among the zombies and watched them leave helplessly.

"That side should Guang Xi. Very good. Very good. One day, I will slaughter all the people in Guang Xi."

Ren Jie shot another look of hatred at the direction where Yue Zhong was headed to, before turning around, and commanding the

horde of zombies to move on towards Guizhou.

His intelligence was not low and knew that the human factions had already joined together over at Guang Xi, forming a powerful force. Furthermore, with Yue Zhong standing his ground, if Ren Jie was not careful, he might end up dead. What he needed was to amass more soldiers by invading Guizhou. Once his forces numbered more than 2 million, he could contend with the Guang Xi region with just numbers.

When Yue Zhong led the 15th Battalion back to Guang Xi, he immediately dissolved them and reintegrated them into his troops.

Having witnessed his strength and mysterious powers, the soldiers were already docile and obedient.

These were all elites, well-verses in various weapons. Once they were shuffled into Yue Zhong's troops, his forces immediately received an upgrade in strength.

Reorganization of the troops was left to Zheng Ming He, while Yue Zhong disappeared.

"Damn it!! The resistance is truly strong."

Over at Vietnam, Thai Nguyen City, Yao Li Hua saw the city walls full of holes and was thinking anxiously.

In order to take down Thai Nguyen City at one go, Yao Li Hua had deployed all of the VPDC, throwing all 20,000 elites into the battle.

He had thought that since Yue Zhong was not around, plus he had the reinforcements from the Kingdom of God, it was enough to allow him to conquer it quickly.

However, a few days had passed, and the casualty count on his side was nearing 4,000. He had just barely entered the city, and the battles were already intense. Who knew how much more of a price he had to pay.

These 4,000 soldiers were not 4,000 zombies. If they were zombies, even if they had to die, as long as it was an order, they would continue to fight. However, humans were different. Once the losses reached a certain threshold, they would lose their fighting spirit.

Inside a secretive location within Thai Nguyen City, there was the command center of Yue Zhong's forces. Within, there was a teenage girl dressed in military uniform, exuding a valiant aura as she was keeping an eye on the displays and issuing commands.

This beautiful girl was precisely Ming Jia Jia, the leader that Yue Zhong had appointed over Vietnam. After the past 2 years, she had gone through a baptism and was vastly different. She had since grown more confident and emitted a charm.

One ordinary female soldier came up to her and repeated, "General, District C2 had been breached. Colonel Pan Jin Yong and another expert had been injured, and were evacuated."

Ming Jia Jia responded indifferently, "Send Gan Tao over to E5."

"Yes!" The lady commander replied, before falling silent, and chipping in, "General, right now, our forces are insufficient. With their continuous attack, we can last another 10 days at most. Should we request for reinforcements?"

Yao Li Hua was the snakehead of Vietnam, after hiding for 2 years, and gaining the support of the Kingdom of God, he had managed to surpass Yue Zhong's forces in Vietnam.

Although Ming Jia Jia was doing her best to commandeer, and the soldiers were fighting their hearts out, in terms of advantage, they were slowly losing.

After all, Vietnam had not been on Yue Zhong's priorities in terms of development, thus, Ming Jia Jia and her forces had no advantage when comparing weapons, that was why it was even more tiresome.

Ming Jia Jia had a resolute look, "No need. We can definitely hold out, and we must. I will not let anyone destroy his work."

At this moment, a voice sounded, "I'm here."

When Ming Jia Jia heard the voice she had been pining for, her body trembled slightly, as she turned around. Her eyes glistened with tears of joy and she leaped into Yue Zhong's embrace, her strong facade breaking as she cried out, "Master!! Jia Jia misses you so!! It's been over a year, how come you're only here now?? Do you not want Jia Jia anymore?"

Yue Zhong chuckled, and hugged her tightly as he kissed her forehead, "How can that be? You're my general, you know."

Ming Jia Jia revealed a bright smile, with tears still in her eyes, "Hehe."

Chapter 964: Massacre!

Outside Thai Nguyen City, a large number of Vietnamese soldiers charged under the cover of their cannons, firing their weapons at the city as they invaded inch by inch.

All of a sudden, there was a burst of light from within the city, as Yue Zhong appeared above the battlefield, floating in midair.

When Yao Li Hua saw him, his face fell, "Is that Yue Zhong?!"

Initially, Yao Li Hua's VPDC had been destroyed by Yue Zhong, causing a shadow over his heart. The moment he saw Yue Zhong, his heart sank.

Yue Zhong's eyes were cold as he spoke, "Yao Li Hua, you had better kneel within 10 seconds, and surrender. I can spare your lives. I will execute only those whose hands have been stained with the blood of my soldiers, and turn you into slaves. Otherwise, everyone on your side will die today. 10... 9..."

When Yao Li Hua heard those words, his face turned as he laughed out savagely, shouting into his loudhailer, "Who do you think you are?! You think you can stop us by yourself? Our VPDC will crush Thai Nguyen City today! We will round up all you bastard invaders and treat you as our dogs!!"

Yao Li Hua had experienced his fair share of battles and had sent his recon soldiers out prior, not discovering any other reinforcements. It was because of this that he was filled with guts.

"Since that's the case, you can all die!!"

Yue Zhong's eyes flashed coldly, and with a wave of his hands, he released 8 Reapers and 10 RH2s.

The moment the 18 Mech Fighters appeared, they charged right for the VPDC under Bai Yi's control.

In a few breaths, the entire armored group slaughtered their way

through the Vietnamese side.

The RH2s employed their sensors to the maximum, scanning all the Vietnamese soldiers before the information was relayed to the central computer and deciphered by Bai Yi. In a flash, electromagnetic beams shot out with uncanny accuracy, striking the soldiers on the head.

The 8 Reapers separated, obliterating anything in their paths, culling the lives of the soldiers as easy as wheat.

On the battlefield, blood and limbs flew everywhere, while the heads of the soldiers were pulverized

"Ah!!! Go to hell!! Go to Hell!!"

5 Vietnamese soldiers roared in rage as they swept their rocket launchers towards one of the Reapers.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Following sounds of explosions, a number of projectiles slammed into the shield of the Reaper and enveloped it.

The next instant, 5 laser beams shot out, piercing the heads of those 5 soldiers, incinerating their brains instantly.

Soon after, the Reaper stepped out of the smoke, without a single scratch.

As it stepped out, at a small hill about 2 km away, a Type 3 expert sniper of the VPDC was currently fixing his aim on it. This Super Evolver, Nguyen Van Hung, was a peak sniper that had killed countless experts of the Chinese forces in Thai Nguyen City.

At the sight of the Reaper, Nguyen Van Hung immediately pulled the trigger, activating his Third Order Strengthen Bullets.

At that moment, a single bullet that could kill even a Type 4 Divine Warrior shot out, slamming into the energy shield of the Reaper.

The bright flash of light that occurred subsequently burst out,

shattering the energy shield of the Reaper.

In response, the Reaper adjusted his cannon and fired out 10 electromagnetic beams towards the position of the peak sniper.

Faced with that retaliation, before Nguyen Van Hung could even react, his head had been blasted apart, his body enveloped by those sizzling beams, leaving only his legs.

Having destroyed such an expert in one move, the Reaper continued forward, firing out more beams at the surrounding soldiers.

Suddenly, 3 Vietnamese experts leaped out from a corner, surrounding one Reaper, when the Reaper responded instantly with 3 blasts.

Before they could even touch the Reaper, they had holes in their heads.

One Type 3 expert of the Vietnamese force, Truong Van Hien, who wielded a large beast bone and wore a Type 3 Mutant Beast hide, broke out in cold sweat, "What the hell is up with those robots? How can they be so powerful?!"

Truong Van Hien was extremely proud of his own power, even if faced with a tank, he had the guts to pummel it flat. However, against those Reapers, there was only despair in his heart.

He quickly made a decision, that was to flee far away, "No, we are not a match for those monsters! We have to flee!"

Truong Van Hien had just taken a step when an electromagnetic beam shot out from the building behind him, blasting through his head. His headless corpse crumpled to the ground.

The strongest Evolver team of the VPDC was cruelly massacred by the Reapers.

When over 2/3 of their forces had been wiped out, they finally crumbled and left their comrades as they tried to escape.

Not long after the Evolvers fled, the rest of the VPDC also began to break away in an attempt to escape.

They lost the advantage they had paid a huge price to get and abandoned all equipment while stepping over one another.

Yao Li Hua screamed in rage as his face contorted with fury, "WHY?! Why is it like this?! I have 17,000 men under me!!! Why did I lose?! No! No!!! I will not be defeated!! 2nd Regiment!! Attack!! We must wipe them out!! Thunder Fighters!! Attack!! Wipe them out!!"

Under his orders, the reinforcements in the form of the 2nd Regiment began to mobilize.

40 tanks, 80 IFVs, 138 machine gun vehicles, as well as many infantry soldiers swarmed towards the direction of Thai Nguyen City.

In the sky, 12 Thunder Fighters and 36 Eurocopters flew towards the 8 Reapers.

Facing such a huge armored battalion, the 8 Reapers opened up their chest plates, firing out small guided missiles that rained towards the armored fleet.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the explosions rang out one after another, the tanks, IFVs and machine gun vehicles all exploded in balls of flames.

In the sky, 36 Eurocopters were also struck by the homing missiles, turning into blazing balls of flame, as they fell out of the sky.

Of the 12 Thunder Fighters, 3 suffered damage to their rotors, and they quickly dropped towards the ground.

The rest had their hulls dented and started to wobble in the sky, but they managed to survive the assault.

Yao Li Hua saw the armored battalion he was so proud of taken

out easily by those 8 Reapers in a second and his face was pale. His eyes flashed with despair, as he muttered, "How is this possible?! How come there are such powerful mechs on this earth?! How?!"

On the battlefield, the 2nd Regiment of the VPDC saw their trump cards being annihilated and lost all of their courage and bearings. Most of them began to scramble for dear life, albeit a rare few letting out screams of despair as they charged at the Reapers, only to be blasted apart.

The troops fled, and everywhere on the battlefield, there were many who threw aside their equipment as they wailed.

Yao Li Hua was still someone battle-hardened, even in the face of despair, he managed to shout out, "Retreat!! Convey my order!! Everyone!! Retreat right now!! To the forests!! We can only fight with guerilla tactics!!"

Under his orders, the fleet began to drive off into the distance.

"You're still thinking of fleeing? Leave your lives behind."

Yue Zhong appeared right behind them, activating his Summon Tamed Beast technique, calling out Mount Tai, Lightning, and Turtle, all three Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

Mount Tai was massive, and the moment it appeared, it already blocked the path of retreat. With a single swing of its tail, many of the soldiers, as well as their vehicles, were instantly flattened.

Lightning had consumed a large amount of Type 4 and Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei. After its evolution, there were not many changes to its exterior, however, there was an additional layer of white scales. Its forehead also had some strange runes. However, its speed was now beyond what it had been, reaching Mach-3.5 when it exerted itself.

When Lightning was summoned, it pounced on the various fleeing soldiers with ease and bit off their heads easily.

As for Turtle, it had become over 1 km in length, as though it was

a small island.

Chapter 965: Destruction of the VPDC!

Turtle did not make use of its strength to crush its enemy, instead, it channeled its innate ability, and congealed ice shards that shot towards the VPDC.

When those soldiers were struck, their bodies froze into ice sculptures.

The 3 Type 5 Mutant Beasts worked together to block the retreat of the VPDC. Every single moment, there was death happening.

Yao Li Hua watched on helplessly as his soldiers were slaughtered, before his face turned pale with utmost despair, pleading, "Leader Yue Zhong! I'm willing to surrender!! I will take them all to surrender to you!! Please!! Have mercy on us!!"

Yao Li Hua was crafty, at that time, he had killed his own ally, using his head to exchange for a pardon and a chance to negotiate with Yue Zhong. He wanted to do the same now. As long as he could live, he would have a chance.

Yue Zhong's face was frosty, "It's too late. I've said it, if you didn't agree, all of you shall die here. No one can save you."

Yao Li Hua screamed out, "Yue Zhong!! Must you be so vicious?! We have over 10,000 men here!! If we give it our all, you will not have it easy either!!"

Yue Zhong replied icily, "Whatever you want to do, in any case, all of you will die here."

Yao Li Hua's eyes flashed viciously, and he hollered into his loudhailer, "Everyone, listen up!! Since he wants to wipe us out, we shall fight to the death with him!!"

They were forced on the path of no retreat. Upon hearing Yue Zhong's decline of their surrender, many of them turned crazy and charged at the Reapers and Type 5 Mutant Beasts, hoping to take down them together.

Unfortunately, their weapons did not amount to much, and there was no way to threaten these monstrous entities. At every second, there would be a VPDC member dying, their screams ringing throughout the battlefield. The entire place had become a cruel slaughterhouse.

Gan Tao, whose eye had been dug out by the Vietnamese, watched as Yue Zhong slaughtered his hated enemies, and he was filled with excitement, roaring with laughter while tears streamed down his eyes, "Good!! Good!! Good!! Well-deserved deaths!! Kill all these Vietnamese bastards!! Long live Leader!! Brothers, do you see??!! Leader has avenged your deaths!"

Pan Jin Yong, who was lying on the bed with grievous injuries, saw the images from the frontlines, and was shocked till his eyes went wide, "Powerful... Leader could actually take on an entire army himself. How can a human be so strong?"

By this time, even if Yue Zhong did not use the Thai Nguyen City's forces, he could still wipe out the 20,000-members of the VPDC. Such strength was basically equivalent to a God.

"Powerful!!"

"He's too strong!!"

"That's too terrifying..."

"..."

When the members of Yue Zhong's forces saw this, they were all stunned, not daring to believe their eyes.

After the apocalypse, humans continued to evolve, but amongst the powerful experts, to actually destroy a 20,000-strong army, Yue Zhong was the first.

The cruel slaughter continued from another 3 hours, all the VPDC members were wiped out.

Yao Li Hua was also killed by Lightning with a single swipe while

he was fleeing.

After wiping out the entire force of the VPDC, Yue Zhong assigned 500 soldiers from the city to head to the VPDC's base.

Along the way, Yue Zhong slaughtered anybody that got in his way.

The elite forces of VPDC had been deployed in the battle, and killed by Yue Zhong. Thus, all those who were defending the base were a bunch of riff-raff, some even using melee weapons.

The weapons and ammunition of the VPDC had been provided by the Kingdom of God, which was only enough for 20,000 soldiers. The rest had no choice but to use melee weapons.

Although the Kingdom of God was supporting the VPDC, their focus was still on the Europe side, thus, there was a limit to their help.

The VPDC was also slaughtered cleanly by Yue Zhong, not to mention these melee-users. After over a hundred had died, the rest crumbled and lost all will, fleeing for their lives.

He quickly gained control over the entire base.

After he established his authority, he quickly implemented a curfew, preventing any Vietnamese from leaving their homes, cutting off their contact between one another. He then made many of them leave towards the direction of Thai Nguyen City.

He was infuriated by their betrayal time and time again. Thus, he had come to the decision to enslave these 400,000 Vietnamese, forcing them out of Vietnam to be worked at the various production facilities he had. If they joined his country, he would allow them to be normal citizens. If there was resistance, then they would be slaves their whole lives. In any case, due to the heavy restructuring, there would be a huge manpower requirement everywhere. Slaves would be the cheapest labor force.

After the apocalypse, the human population was enough. These

400,000 was gathered by Yao Li Hua through hard means from the various factions. In one fell swoop, they were snatched away by Yue Zhong and forced to leave. In the Northern parts of Vietnam, there were now little pure-blood Vietnamese.

When the Kingdom of God tried using their 5 armies to attack, Yue Zhong had crushed or obliterated 4 of them, leaving only the force from India that was still advancing.

The India Forces had just entered Tibet when they received news of Russia's defeat, and they quickly turned tail and retreated like a turtle.

The Kingdom of God had a wide reach, thus there were many spies hidden within Yue Zhong's forces as well, acting as their eyes and ears.

The sight of the Sky Fortress crushing the Russian forces had stunned the upper echelons of the Kingdom of God. They were not willing to lose their most loyal and heavily invested India Forces fall at the hands of their enemies.

India was abundant in resources, with plenty of humans. Within a year of the apocalypse, the Kingdom of God had its roots set deep in this area.

The various talents that emerged either joined them or were eradicated, thus, the country was tightly within the Kingdom of God's control.

Of course, due to their immense population, their zombies were also numerous, and the Kingdom of God could not blanket the entire country. Thus, those areas, where they did not control, had several other motley factions that popped up.

Novosibirsk had already replaced Moscow, forming the new capital of Russia after the apocalypse.

Currently, there were many zombies outside the city, and gunshots and cannon fire could be heard.

Tanks, IFVs, machine gun vehicles and other armored vehicles formed a torrent of steel that charged right out at these zombies, annihilating them.

Within the regions, a number of machine guns spat out gunfire, taking down the aerial zombies.

From the horde, H2s and H3s would attack from time to time, while Devourers would charge upfront and tore some of the armored vehicles apart.

The aerial zombies also swooped down and entered the city, attacking the soldiers and citizens, spreading the virus.

The cruel battle continued for a long while, with a mounting toll on the human side, while many zombies were being incinerated in exchange.

The legacies of the country left behind were currently being expended, but there was enough to use, thus each time the horde attacked, the Russian Forces would unleash another volley of heavy fire.

After a few rounds, there were barely a few Evolved zombies left.

By this time, the battle had taken its toll on both sides, and the zombies retreated while abandoning the corpses of their comrades.

After they had gained intelligence, it had become harder to deal with them. They learned how to preserve their forces. As long as not too many Evolved zombies perished in their charges, it was possible to obtain even more cannon fodder. Furthermore, numbers were their advantage.

As the zombies retreated slightly, a burly man with short blue hair and good looks walked into a living room. He was exhausted and as he sat down on the sofa, he immediately shut his eyes.

Another young man walked in with a document, however, he stopped momentarily when seeing the middle-aged man.

The middle-aged man asked slowly, "Zano, what's the matter?"

The younger officer hesitated a moment, before replying, "Your Majesty, our expeditionary force had been defeated by the Chinese forces. Gief had submitted."

The middle-aged man with blue hair was precisely the current Emperor of Russia, Andras.

When he heard this, Andras opened his eyes, which flashed with a fiery glint, as he turned to Zano sharply, "How did he lose?"

"The Chinese made use of this weapon."

Zano opened up his handheld computer and showing a scene where the Sky Fortress slaughtered the Russian forces.

Andras's face turned incredibly ugly, as he snarled, "Damn Kingdom of God! They kept this information from us!! We've been had by those bastards!"

Chapter 966: Remorseful Tsar!

Zano looked towards Andras and asked respectfully, "Your Majesty, what do we do now?"

Andras closed his eyes, lying against the sofa, and touched it lightly. He replied in a soft manner as though speaking to himself, "We can't stay in Novosibirsk any longer. If that fellow sends an advance force, it would be enough to injure and kill many of us. Once the main force arrives, we will only have death."

All of a sudden, he opened his eyes and asked, "How are things over at Outer Mongolia?"

He had been fighting on the front lines these few days, deploying his forces and fending off the zombies. He was exhausted and had not kept a grasp on the intelligence of the outside world.

Zano replied, "We had already established some form of secure base in Outer Mongolia. The terrain is decent, and the defenses are being set up right now."

Andras closed his eyes, falling silent for a while, before replying, "Convey my order, get Grogau to make preparations for a retreat. After 10 days, we will abandon Novosibirsk and head over to Outer Mongolia."

Zano lost color in his face, his voice trembling, "Your Majesty, are we really abandoning Novosibirsk? If we really retreat to Outer Mongolia, it would difficult to reclaim our country."

Outer Mongolia was considered backward, and the level of technology or industrialization could not compare to Russia. If the empire retreated there, they would lose their industrialization edge, which meant that it would be harder to reclaim all of Russia.

The Kingdom of God could quickly develop technology like the Thunder Fighter and support other vassal forces, because they had quickly gained many manufacturing cities, pushing out resources

and equipment, gaining the upper hand in the fight against zombies.

Within China, Yue Zhong had also reclaimed a few manufacturing cities. He also took in a few talents, producing the Sky Fortress as well as weapons like the laser gun technology.

Once the Russian Empire made for Outer Mongolia, it would be hard to reclaim Russia or kick-start any industrialization and manufacturing for that matter.

Although they could still preserve most of their strength and legacy left behind by pre-apocalypse Russia, it would run out someday due to the constant fights. Their combat ability would thus decrease. It was because of this, that they had sent out their troops to attack China, in a bid to obtain their resources.

Andras continued, "Today's battle, we had lost another 3,000 soldiers. 2,000 citizens have been infected and turned to zombies. Adding on to our 20,000 elites who had been lost on the expedition, we only have 60,000 elites left. If that fellow was to send his forces to attack us, with our present strength, we would only be able to last 10 days. Zano, only by living on, would there be hope."

The intelligent zombies were terrifying, at that time, near the capital of China, Feng Bo and the rest had gathered over millions of zombies, forcing Yue Zhong to utilize a nuke to destroy them.

Andras's group was considered unfortunate, with no nuclear weapon in their arsenal, they had been forced by the evolved zombies slowly but steadily towards Novosibirsk.

The moment the leader of the zombies in Russia gained control of all zombies in Russia, they only had to send out the 4 million-strong horde; it would be enough to crush Andras's team.

Andras's eyes turned cold, as he gnashed furiously, "What's more, those damn Germans played us for a fool! They can be the ones to

take him on for all I care."

Zano was doubtful, "Your Majesty, do you mean that He Lu is likely to point his troops towards Europe?"

He Lu was the current leader of the zombies, and he was the nightmare of Russia. He had already gained control over a million zombies and was practically invincible.

Andras had clashed with He Lu a few times and made use of firepower to gain an advantage. However, the tables had turned entirely, and they were not his match at all.

A strange glint appeared in Andras's eyes, "That's right. After we leave Novosibirsk, there would not be any humans left in this region. If he wants to replenish and increase his troops, he would have to aim for Europe. With his intelligence, that is the move he would likely take. This is because his current goal is to increase his army and become the true King of zombies."

Russia's population and cities were mostly concentrated in Eastern Europe, where it was cold and harsh, with ice everywhere. The best move for intelligent evolved zombies to bolster their ranks would be to attack the rest of Europe.

As He Lu evolved constantly, his intelligence had surpassed most humans, thus he naturally knew where to go.

Zano finally understood Andras's meaning, "Understood!"

Andras fell silent once more, before he added, "Let Alexei go and negotiate with Yue Zhong about the captives."

Concerned, Zano replied, "Your Majesty, Yue Zhong is a tough nut to deal with. I don't think that he will let our people go so easily."

Andras replied, "No, he will do so. As long as we recognize that Yue Zhong is the true leader of China, and form an alliance with him, he will agree."

"Yes!" Zano replied respectfully, before dismissing himself.

Not long after he left, Andras slammed his hand on the table beside him viciously. With a loud crack, the table broke apart. His face was contorted in rage, looking like a savage, injured beast while muttering, "Damn Germans, damn Yue Zhong! I shouldn't have listened to those damn Germans!! Bitches!!!"

Having lost his 20,000 troops, Andras was filled with rage. Since he lost those troops, the total strength of Russia had suffered greatly. In front of Zano, he had to maintain his calm, in fact, he was long since infuriated and full of regret.

After he cursed and swore for a while, he finally calmed down, and sat back on the sofa, falling into a deep sleep.

In Europe, the headquarters of the Kingdom of God, the Elder Council was once again in discussion and chaos

"Yue Zhong is back, he's back from the 2nd World."

"Those mech fighters are all technology from the 2nd World! No, that's not right, those RH2s are definitely from there, but those energy shield-types, what the hell were those?! They're too terrifying. Just 8 of them could fight against an entire arm. Oh, God, why have those machines landed in the hands of those barbarians?!"

"And that gigantic Mutant Beast! It's over 2 km long!! What the hell!! It's a Type 5 Mutant Beast and it seems to be some... Diplodocus-looking creature. Too fearsome, he could actually tame a Type 5 Mutant Beast."

"One man against an army. Has he actually reached such a stage? Too fearsome."

No, it's not his personal strength, but those things he can summon. His beasts are all too terrifying!"

"..."

Within the Council, the monitors were showing the images obtained from their sources, and when they saw the various trump cards Yue Zhong had, all of them had ugly countenances.

When Yue Zhong returned to Earth, he had returned with a strength capable of overwhelming armies. He had destroyed 3 of the Kingdom of God, shocking the various Elders.

"What do we do?"

One of them spoke, "Negotiate. We have to talk with him. The Gates of Hell have already opened, the Vampires and Flesh-Eaters of the 2nd World are invading soon. This is the time for the people of Earth to stand together. As long as he knows how to see the big picture, he will talk with us."

Another Elder quipped in, "No, I feel that we can ignore him. Those monsters from the 2nd World are already here. Our current priority is to fortify our defenses. Asia is too far from us, and the seas are sealed. They would not be able to provide any aid anyway. Let's just forget about him."

"That's right, I feel the same way too."

There are so many Chinese anyway, the zombies are over 1 billion. He would not be able to help us. As long as we don't attack him, there should not be any problems."

"He has advanced technology on his hands. If we can ally with him, we can gain huge improvements in our equipment."

"Those technologies? Sir Edward and the rest have also returned with them. We don't need Yue Zhong at all."

Edward was the 1st Apostle of the Kingdom of God and the strongest Evolver. Before the apocalypse, he was already someone with special powers. It was just that it was not strong. The moment the apocalypse set in, he had awakened as a 5-attribute Evolver, and his psychic powers had been enhanced to a terrifying degree, becoming the strongest existence within the Kingdom of

God.

Every single one of the 12 Apostles was geniuses among geniuses. They had awakened naturally and were competitive with each other. However, they all agreed that Edward was the strongest among them.

Unless there were 8 of them working together, if they were to face Edward, there would only be death.

When the 2nd World began, the 12 Apostles also entered at the same time.

After the stage was over, 8 of them returned, while 4 died there. However, of the 8 that came back, everyone's strength increased to a terrifying degree, the weakest of them already at the peak of the Type 4 realm.

Furthermore, Edward had come across some miraculous encounters, obtaining their technology, and brought them over. Thus, the Council was confident of rejecting an alliance with Yue Zhong.

Chapter 967: Beast Transformation Technology!

"That's right! Sir Edward has also returned! What did he bring back?"

"Great Elder, let us take a look at the power that Sir Edward had brought back."

"..."

The various Elders within the Council began to buzz out in a discussion, looking towards Jonas in expectation.

The 1st Apostle Edward was one of the 3 heads of the Kingdom of God, possessing authority and strength. Only the other 2 heads were qualified to know where he went, as well as the intelligence that he provided.

Jonas, who looked 10 years younger than he did in the past, slowly eyed everybody, before turning to the pretty secretary beside him and waved his hands.

The good-looking secretary immediately walked over while shaking her hips seductively, inserting a disc into the projector.

Soon, the images flashed and revealed a glass laboratory.

A single human soldier walked into the lab, getting onto the single bed before a few alloy cuffs appeared to lock his limbs.

6 men in lab gowns and masks walked in, applying some form of anesthesia to the soldier, knocking him out. After that, they began to operate on his back, opening him up, inserting some Mutant Beast nuclei into his flesh, before sealing him back.

The 6 men began to stitch the soldier's back in a certain manner, revealing a bloody trail that formed a strange rune.

After the rune was completed, they retrieved a vial of Mutant

Beast blood, and with a brush, they drew the blood across the stitches.

The moment the blood got on the soldier's back, it was absorbed into the flesh in a mysterious manner.

His back then began to glow, as he opened his eyes suddenly. His pupils were bloodshot, and his muscles began to transform, as his entire body began to sprout out long, yellow hair, and his hands and feet grew long sharp claws. His forehead began to contort and elongate into a tiger's head.

"Roar!!"

The locked half-man, half-tiger let out a monstrous roar of rage, as it thrashed about violently, breaking the cuffs.

Immediately, an IFV barged into the lab.

When the tiger-man saw the IFV, it leaped forwards onto the vehicle and slashed through the thick armor with its claws like tofu. The exterior was immediately split apart, revealing the compartment inside.

The monster saw that there was nobody within, and roared out in rage, slamming its fists into the IFV, turning it into a pile of scrap metal after a while.

This was one of the technologies that Edward brought back to the Kingdom of God, the Beast Transformation Technology. With it, it could produce powerful beast-creatures of Type 3 and even Type 4 realms.

"That was powerful."

"Great, with such warriors, our Kingdom of God should be able to take over the world."

"..."

Seeing the tiger-man tear the IFV in half easily, the Elders all celebrated.

If they could mass produce such powerful soldiers, it was possible for them to conquer the world.

One of the Elders suddenly asked Jonas, "Great Elder, what about their stability and obedience?"

He replied slowly, "These Beast warriors have gained the ability to transform freely. However, after their first transformation, they will turn incredibly savage and need more training to control the power. Most of the initial test subjects are from our pool of loyal devotees. In terms of their obedience, there're no problems in their human forms. However, the beast-side needs more training to fully obey our orders."

"Very good, with this, as well as other technology, we should have the ability to rule the world, we don't even have to concern ourselves with Yue Zhong!"

"That's right!!"

"..."

Seeing the ability of the Beast warrior, the Elders all got excited and threw all notion of lowering their heads and negotiating with Yue Zhong out of the window.

After the world changed, the zombies on land and the Mutant Beasts in the seas had caused many human factions to be cut off from one another. Even aircraft would be threatened by aerial Mutant Beasts.

The distance between China and Europe is too far. China could not threaten nor send aid in time to Europe. With such circumstances, it was fine for the Kingdom of God to ignore China for now.

No one wanted to send an envoy to China anymore, thus, they decided to brush Yue Zhong aside. They retrieved their forces from overseas and focused their energy on the zombie hordes within their territories.

On the other side, after Yue Zhong had defeated the 5 armies from the Kingdom of God, he had activated his forces to launch an attack on Hebei.

At the same time, Guang Xi and Hunan sent their own forces with Hu Yi and Chi Yang commanding them, to deal with the surrounding hordes all around their areas.

Yue Zhong took the 40,000 armored forces into Hebei, conquering 2 counties at one go, eliminating over a hundred thousand zombies.

Hong!

Following the sounds of explosions, the zombies that were lured out were blasted apart and fired upon madly by the human soldiers.

Yue Zhong still emphasized on the basic military training of the soldiers, once they have all obtained the powerful electromagnetic or laser weapons, even Type 5 experts would have to be careful with them.

As the zombies were being obliterated, from afar, aerial zombies with fleshy wings came flying from the distance.

The hundred of them glanced at the battlefield from afar before quickly beating a retreat.

Yue Zhong glanced at them and sighed, "Scouting!! These zombies already know how to scout?! Their evolution is truly terrifying."

Chapter 968: 10-Million Zombie Horde!

When Yue Zhong walked into the command center and eyed the display, he noticed a huge horde that was making its way over.

The horde started to split apart, surrounding the county. They were intending to surround and annihilate all the people within.

All of a sudden, Bai Yi's figure appeared on the displays, and she reported hastily, "Warning! Warning! Based on calculations, there are 9,874,567 enemies! There may be some hidden enemies as well!"

Yue Zhong looked at them and laughed lightly, "Over 9 million zombies, quite a decent number. Forget it, let me go and handle them first."

If it were in the past, Yue Zhong would be anxious when faced with such a number. He would even call for an immediate evacuation. However, after his evolution to the Type 5 realm, at the same time, gaining the powerful weapons of the 3rd World, he was confident of facing them.

Right now, a mechanized troop was currently carrying out fortification works in the county, swiftly repairing some fire points.

4 Reapers were deployed out to the 4 corners of the construction area, with them as the core, they could easily decimate any evolved zombies.

Yue Zhong exited the command center, taking a huge leap into the sky before he activated his Flight ability and soared towards the Sky Fortress.

"Father!! Yin Shuang missed you!"

Yue Zhong had just entered the Sky Fortress when a 14 or 15-year-old teenage girl came jumping into his embrace. She had a head of long, silver hair, her figure petite but her curves were explosive,

boasting a C-cup breast size. Her looks were also extraordinary, and she started to nuzzle her face into his chest.

Yue Zhong stared in shock, "Yin Shuang! You're so big now?"

When he left a year ago, she had still been just a small girl. However, she was now already a beautiful teen capable of toppling the world.

Yin Shuang giggled, "Did Father miss me?"

Yue Zhong chuckled and pecked her forehead, "Of course, this is your reward."

Yin Shuang continued to hug him tightly, as she grumbled, "More, more!!"

Yue Zhong laughed as he ruffled her hair, "Once we have beaten this horde back, I will give you more presents."

Yin Shuang smiled brightly, but her words were full of violence, "Fine! Yin Shuang will help Father to kill all those enemies!! Hehe!! Yin Shuang is very powerful now! My fist can destroy a tank!"

As an offspring from the Mutant Infected Womb, Yin Shuang was a heaven-defying genius that possessed superhuman capabilities. In her blood also flowed the savage nature of the zombies. If it was not for the fact that she had seen Yue Zhong when she first opened her eyes, she would have evolved into a terrifying Demon Queen.

Yue Zhong smiled, "My Yin Shuang is definitely awesome."

She was someone that Yue Zhong could trust fully. When he was with her, he felt relaxed and there was no need to be on guard.

Just then, the beautiful Liu Yue Mei appeared, donned in military uniform. She brought 2 men and 1 woman as they came up to Yue Zhong, greeting him, "Leader!"

In this one year, a huge amount of Evolving Liquid had been produced and distributed to the army. In the stable course of life,

there were also many more who naturally awakened. Under the training of his subordinates, other than Liu Yue Mei, these 3 others had also gained the ability to control zombies.

They were young and looked at Yue Zhong curiously. They were newbies that had been discovered within this year and had only seen Yue Zhong through their studies. It was the first time meeting him in person.

Yue Zhong's gaze landed on them and he chuckled, "Lieutenant Colonel Liu, aren't you going to introduce them?"

In times of war, ranks rose rapidly. With Liu Yue Mei's ability, Yue Zhong was able to take down the capital easily. That was why she was promoted.

In response, Liu Yue Mei smiled and introduced, "This is Niu Jin, this is Zhang Shi Tou and that is Wang Li."

Yue Zhong nodded in satisfaction, "How do you do, I'm Yue Zhong."

The 3 of them replied in unison, "Greetings, Leader!"

They had all been ordinary people, but after joining the army and receiving training, they had a military bearing now.

Yue Zhong exchanged some perfunctory words with them, before following Liu Yue Mei into the command center.

Inside the command center, there were many displays, showcasing the various images on Earth obtained through radar.

Right now, there was a huge horde right below them, with countless zombies surging towards the county.

Liu Yue Mei closed her eyes and sensed a while, before opening them and declared, "East, I can sense a huge amount of Z-Types brain waves in the East."

The Sky Fortress shot towards the East and came above a large horde.

Liu Yue Mei frowned and spoke, "They're right below here."

Chen Yan, the captain of the ship, immediately gave the order to attack, "Fire!"

At that instant, numerous cannons, laser guns, and other weapons extended out of the Sky Fortress. Under Bai Yi's control, they unleashed carnage upon the zombies below.

The ordinary zombies were all taken out swiftly, their headless corpses slumping the ground.

One particular L4 that was the size of a house, had its brain pierced by numerous laser beams, and it fell dead as well.

Under Bai Yi's control, the dense firepower reaped the lives of countless zombies efficiently. Before long, there was a huge patch of unmoving corpses.

The huge Sky Fortress floated above the horde of zombies, as a number of napalm grenades dropped onto them, resulting in a huge sea of flames that devoured the entire group.

Within the sea of flames, an evolved zombie with a huge head and small body leaped out of the L4

The moment it jumped out of its carrier, a laser beam descended from the skies, penetrating its brain and blasting it apart.

Once it died, the entire horde around it fell into chaos.

The Sky Fortress continued to soar through the skies, taking down the various intelligent zombies that were discovered, disintegrating the chain of command.

After killing about 8 of the intelligent zombies, the aerial ones finally appeared, in a horde of over a hundred thousand.

When they appeared, the hangar doors of the Sky Fortress opened, and 20 Thunder Fighters flew out, together with numerous Z-10s.

At the same time, the laser cannons extended out from the Sky

Fortress, firing wildly at the aerial zombies.

Under the mad firing of the lasers, the countless zombies were blasted apart, turning into blood and dismembered flesh that fell out of the skies.

The 20 Thunder Fighters and dozens of Z-10s shot right towards the aerial zombies, firing their own weapons at them.

These aircraft did not need to protect the Sky Fortress. With their ability to maneuver in the skies, they began to kite the aerial zombies, without losing a single one of their own.

Even so, the rest of the aerial zombies continued to launch frenzied assaults on the Sky Fortress, using their flesh and bodies to break through the firepower, pouncing onto the hull.

When they managed to get past the firepower, to their dismay, they saw flamethrowers extending out, instantly incinerating them in billowing flames.

Droves of them fell towards the ground, charred and smoking.

However, there were still zombies that managed to reach the top side, using their sharp claws to destroy the guns and cannons they could find.

With their sharp claws, they were able to claw out holes in those weapons, destroying them.

Inside the Sky Fortress, everyone saw the aerial zombies swarming all over their aircraft and had expressions of dismay.

During the battle for the Capital, Yue Zhong and the rest had not yet seen these aerial zombies.

The weapons on the Sky Fortress were enough to deal with a few tens of thousands of them, but against a hundred thousand, they would likely be defeated and torn apart.

At this critical juncture, Chen Yan was pale as he looked to Yue Zhong, "Leader, do we evacuate?"

"No! We will continue to wipe out those intelligent zombies, let me deal with these freaks."

Yue Zhong glanced at the countless zombies crawling on board the Sky Fortress, and spoke this sentence, before turning around to head outside.

"Father, wait for me!"

Yin Shuang bounced off after him.

Chen Yan watched Yue Zhong leave, before gritting his teeth and ordering, "Continue the assault!"

All the subordinates on board the Sky Fortress felt their heart clench and quickly continued their work.

Yue Zhong brought Yin Shuang out on the deck. The moment they appeared, they were met with the aerial zombies opening their jaws to take a bite at them.

"Father, let me help you kill them all. Hehe!" Yin Shuang giggled before she disappeared from her location.

In a split second, a dozen of those aerial zombies suddenly burst apart.

At the same time, they were being taken out in a single, straight line, and ordinary people would not understand how those zombies suddenly burst apart for no reason.

Only Yue Zhong, a peak-Type 5 expert, was able to see Yue Zhong appearing in front of those aerial zombies and throw a single punch to obliterate them. Due to her speed far surpassing the speed of sound, it was hard for normal people to catch up.

Yue Zhong watched Yin Shuang slaughter the zombies, and sighed, "Powerful! Her speed of evolution had already reached the peak of Type 5 as well. Her natural talents are truly terrifying."

Yue Zhong had the God and Devil Imprint, after killing numerous experts and absorbing their life force, only then did he

undergo such a change to become a Type 5 expert.

As for Yin Shuang, she did not have the Imprint, and yet, she managed to jump from the Type 3 to Type 5 realm. Her innate talent was high.

He retracted his gaze and waved his hands, and a deep-red mech fighter appeared. It had an ancient knight armor and wielded a sharp blade. There were other blades concealed everywhere on its frame, and there was a pair of bright red wings that stretched out like an angel.

This bright scarlet mech was the evolved form of a Reaper with the help of Jung Ri Soo's ability, and Yue Zhong called it the Scarlet Reaper.

"It's your turn, Scarlet Reaper."

He then inserted the Heart of Hope into the Scarlet Reaper's chest.

With a bright flash, the Heart of Hope burrowed into the chest of the Scarlet Reaper.

Its eyes then flashed brightly, as though coming alive, and kneeled down on a single knee in front of Yue Zhong. A bright light then shot out of its body to envelop Yue Zhong, absorbing him into its frame.

As Yue Zhong entered the Scarlet Reaper, he instantly felt as though he had become one with it, he was the mech, and the mech was him. He did not see any connection, wires, display panels or even controls. However, as long as he willed it, information flowed directly into his brain.

With a thought, he could sense the movement of every single aerial zombie that had crawled on the Sky Fortress. It felt like the entire world was in the palm of his hands. He knew that the sensors of this mech were extremely and vastly superior to any he had known.

Moments after he entered the Scarlet Reaper, a hundred aerial zombies soared towards him.

Chapter 969: Scarlet Reaper, one against a million!

"Wipe them out!"

With a single thought from Yue Zhong, a number of cannons emerged from the frame of the Scarlet Reaper, shooting out countless laser beams that penetrated the heads of those hundreds of zombies, all according to his will.

After those beams shot through, the mini rockets that accompanied the beams directly exploded, causing those aerial zombies to burst apart.

"Amazing! Is this the power of the Heart of Hope as well as the Enhanced Mechanization ability? This is remarkable!"

Yue Zhong saw how easily it was to wipe out those hundreds of zombies, and felt elated. It was even easier than killing an ant.

The Scarlet Reaper then flapped its wings, turning into a bright red beam that shot towards the sky.

"Kill them all!"

He swept a glance over the countless aerial zombies, and with a burst of killing intent, the wings on his back flashed brightly. The next moment, dense laser beams shot out from the wings, hitting the countless zombies as though every single beam had eyes.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the explosions rang out, over a hundred thousand zombies were directly decimated. They disappeared at a speed visible to the naked eye, falling out of the sky.

Shit, is he still human? If things continue like this, Leader can wipe out those zombies by himself, right?"

"..."

Seeing how Yue Zhong was piloting the Scarlet Reaper to massacre the zombies, everyone inside the Sky Fortress stared wide-eyed. Some soldiers even cussed out in their fear and awe.

The might of the Scarlet Reaper was simply too terrifying. It was able to instantly attack thousands of enemies, causing their heads to explode. Such strength far surpassed logic. Everyone continued to rub their eyes, unsure if their sight was failing them.

Chen Yan looked at Yue Zhong piloting the Scarlet Reaper to slaughter the zombies and his body trembled with excitement, as he roared out with laughter, "Strong!! This strength is almost impossible on Earth!! Mech Fighters can reach this type of level?! Truly, other than Leader, no one else can do it!! Haha!! Only Leader can create such miracles!!"

Niu Jin and the rest saw for themselves the astonishing sight and their minds were blown, "Shit!! That's awesome!! Is he still human?! What an overpowered person!!"

Liu Yue Mei looked at Yue Zhong and sighed in her heart, "Powerful. He should be using technology from another world. That world has far surpassed us."

She had good relations with the various close subordinates in the capital, thus, she knew that Yue Zhong had left for another world to fight for them. Seeing such an overpowered equipment, she could guess where it came from.

Yin Shuang stared at him, her face flashing a bright smile, "Father is so strong!! He is truly Yin Shuang's father! What a display!! Yin Shuang will become as powerful as Father!!"

After wiping out 150,000 zombies with the Scarlet Reaper, Yue Zhong finally felt a hint of exhaustion.

Right at this time, he willed a single thought, and inserted 5 Type 5 nuclei and a Type 6 one into the chest area, feeling a strong surge of energy that coursed through him, boundless and unending.

What was a Type 6 Mutant Beast? It was an existence that was an Overlord in the 3rd World, almost invincible. Other than the Type 7 Mutant Beasts, even Type 7 Divine Warriors might not necessarily be able to kill a Type 6 Mutant Beast. Every single one of them could cause a calamity or disaster, and their strength was something to behold.

In the endless seas of the 3rd World, each time the Type 6 Mutant Beasts had to eat, they would consume over tens of thousands of other Mutant Beasts. If they raged, they could go on a rampage to kill tens of thousands of Mutant Beasts as well. Their strength was no joke.

It was precisely due to relying on the Type 6 Nucleus that Yue Zhong could single-handedly kill over a hundred thousand zombies.

The aerial zombies could sense Yue Zhong's threat to themselves as well, and quickly pounced towards him.

Right at that moment, a blanket of laser beams shot past them, and they all burst apart, showering towards the ground.

While the hundreds and thousands of zombies seemed endless, Yue Zhong's control of the Scarlet Reaper's laser beams also seemed boundless.

At the same time, with every single zombie he killed, the pure life force energy would be absorbed by the God and Devil Imprint, channeling into his body, strengthening it slowly but surely.

Both sides came to a standstill, however, those zombies that had gotten on the deck of the Sky Fortress were wiped out cleanly by Yue Zhong.

The situation continued for a while before the remaining 200,000 zombies could not take it anymore and were forced to retreat.

These flying zombies were also considered the elite of the hordes, if they were to be wiped out, then the horde would lose a great

asset.

Aerial battles were tougher than land battles. Such a logic was also understood by the intelligence zombies.

"You want to escape? It's too late! Today will mark your deaths, beasts!"

Yue Zhong gazed at the fleeing aerial zombies, and his eyes flashed with a cold light. He piloted the Scarlet Reaper to chase after them with the speed of a shooting star.

Countless laser beams fell upon the zombie horde, striking them down where they stood.

All of a sudden, the horde split apart, intending to flee in 2 different directions.

"Smart! It's too bad, you're too late!!"

Yue Zhong's gaze swept across them and fell upon the right side, noting one particular intelligent evolved zombie that bore a 90% resemblance to humans, albeit with a pair of fleshy wings.

This particular evolved zombie was called Jiang Sheng and had already reached the Type 5 realm. When Yue Zhong's gaze fell upon him, he could feel an overwhelming sense of crisis.

He did not dare tarry and quickly flapped his wings, fleeing at a speed of Mach-2.

The Scarlet Reaper flapped its wings once, and a huge tornado was generated behind it, pushing it towards Jiang Sheng with a speed of Mach-5.

Due to the terrifying speed of the Scarlet Reaper, there was a powerful resistance from the air itself, causing its frame to heat up, looking as though it had come out from a furnace.

In a breath, the Scarlet Reaper had appeared right in front of Jiang Sheng with sizzling heat. It reached out with its massive hands and grabbed Jiang Sheng.

The next moment, a sharp alloy blade shot out from inside the hand, piercing Jiang Sheng.

The sharp alloy blade that flashed and shot out an electrical current that slammed into Jiang Sheng's body.

"Ah!!!!"

Buffeted by those merciless attacks, the intelligent evolved zombie Jiang Sheng let out a miserable scream.

These life forms were new biological entities, thus, their senses and perception were more evolved than the ordinary zombies. They knew pain, emotions, different from those ordinary zombies that knew no pain nor feelings.

Jiang Sheng was a Type 5 expert, but under the circumstances of having its body pierced, as well as the electrical surge, it resisted for a quite a while, before turning weak, entering a near-death state.

A Type 5 Puppet Rune then shot out from the Scarlet Reaper, entering Jiang Sheng's head.

When it entered, another electrical current shot through his body, destroying his final resistance, allowing the Puppet Rune to fuse into his mind.

The Type 5 Puppet Rune quickly worked its effects, and the weakened Jiang Sheng came up to Yue Zhong, declaring, "Jiang Sheng greets Master!"

Yue Zhong asked, "Are you the master of this zombie horde?"

Type 5 Divine Warriors were all terrifying existence, with the qualifications to lead a million-strong horde. At that time, had Feng Bo and the rest continue to evolve, they would have reached the Type 5 stage by now as well.

Jiang Sheng replied honestly, "No! I'm just one of the 3 generals. I'm in charge of the 600,000 aerial zombies. The true leader of this

horde is called Hu Man, and he's much stronger than me. He's in charge of 5 million zombies. The other 2 generals are called Liu Xiong, and Gui Can. They're in charge of 2 million zombies each and their strength is similar to mine."

"3 Type 5 experts eh?"

Yue Zhong sighed, and with a thought, the remaining energy of the Scarlet Reaper was presented in his eyes.

"To kill 400,000 energy consumption 40%. That is to say, the Scarlet Reaper's limit is a million zombie? The remaining 60% should be enough to deal with 3 Type 5 experts."

The Scarlet Reaper relied on the Type 6 Nucleus for power, hence it was not truly limitless. There was a threshold. However, the fact that it could decimate a million zombies meant that its power could not be expended that easily usually.

Yue Zhong gave Jiang Sheng an order, "Take me to Hu Man!"

"Yes! Master!"

Jiang Sheng responded obediently and flapped his wings towards the deeper part of the horde.

Chapter 970: Ambush!

On the ground, there was a huge, densely packed horde of zombies. In the deepest parts, there were a few L5s, each of them over 5m tall, their skin covered with thick scales, and looked imposing.

These tank-like behemoths had impenetrable defenses as well as immense strength. Ordinary cannons and rockets would not be able to harm them at all.

Any L5 could easily crush a Type 4 expert, and the only weakness they had was that their speed was not as terrifying as any Type 4 experts. If it had been at the onset of the apocalypse, such a monster would have been anybody's nightmare.

Even when it was already into the 2nd year of the Apocalypse, this sort of monster was one of the strongest monsters physically. Tanks would just be squashed flat under them.

Under Jiang Sheng's lead, Yue Zhong followed after him in the Scarlet Reaper, all the way till they reached the airspace above the group of L5s.

Jiang Sheng suddenly spoke, "Master, Hu Man suddenly cut off the telepathic link between us. I have no way of sensing his location. I can only confirm that he is somewhere in this group. If he does not utilize any power, I have no way of sensing his presence."

At this time, a group of 3m-tall zombies with huge bellies and moving on all fours crawled out from somewhere.

Their bellies exploded suddenly, causing a number of shots made out of the corrosive liquid to fire towards Yue Zhong in the sky.

At the same moment, the various H1s, H2s, and H3s were raised by the L-Types, spitting out powerful fireballs at the Scarlet Reaper.

The mechanical arm of the Scarlet Reaper opened, and a red energy shield coalesced in front of it, enveloping it entirely, causing all the attacks to be negated easily.

Yue Zhong then controlled the wings to flap once, as it disappeared in a flash, and the rest of the attacks missed.

At the next moment, the Scarlet Reaper reappeared, with its wings outstretched, and countless laser beams fell upon the zombies below.

It was as though God's judgment had passed, as the laser beams struck the zombies all in the head accurately. In an instant, over a thousand evolved zombies had their heads exploded, and the life force was absorbed into Yue Zhong's body.

While the energy might be huge to ordinary humans, it was barely enough for the Type 5 Yue Zhong. Even a million low-level evolved zombies might not help him evolve further.

Jiang Sheng suddenly pointed to the west, "Over there, I can feel Liu Xiong's Spirit waves."

These hordes were being controlled by the intelligent evolved zombies through brain waves, and the moment those waves were sent out, only humans with the ability to control zombies or fellow zombies can sense them.

Jiang Sheng was a Type 5 intelligent evolved zombie, thus his senses and perception far surpassed Liu Yue Mei.

Yue Zhong piloted the Scarlet Reaper and shot towards the direction where Jiang Sheng pointed. He immediately saw dozens of L5s.

Just as he flew over there, the L5s began to scatter, dispersing in different directions.

Yue Zhong used the Scarlet Reaper's systems to scan below, and could only sense the immense life force of the L5s masking the Type 5 Liu Xiong.

When zombies evolved to the final stage, they would undergo a transformation, becoming something new. The cruel Flesh-Eaters and Vampires of the 2nd World were precisely such beings, evolved from zombies. Those that fail in their evolution would become Living Corpses without any intelligence, forever doomed to walk the line between life and death.

An L5 was a Type 5 zombie, and they were beginning their next-evolution. Their life force was much stronger than ordinary humans. If they could develop intelligence, they would become true intelligent beings.

Yue Zhong controlled the Scarlet Reaper to open its mechanical arms, and in an instant, multiple laser beams shot down at the heads of the L5s.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

As the explosions rang out, small holes the size of a finger appeared in the heads of the L5s, while black blood flowed out.

"Seems like the level 1 cannons are ineffective. The defenses of their scales are pretty strong."

Yue Zhong looked at the barely injured L5s, and with a thought, the shoulders of the Scarlet Reapers opened up, revealing tightly packed 30mm cannons.

In that instant, red laser beams shot out from those 30mm cannons. When they slammed into the heads of the L5s, they caused explosions, as flesh and blood splattered everywhere.

The lifeless bodies of the L5s then slumped to the floor.

The Scarlet Reaper waved its hand, and a bout of Devil Flames appeared, shooting downwards. The bodies of the L5s were then enveloped by those flames.

Under the influence of the Heart of Hope, the Scarlet Reaper was like an entity on its own, only covering Yue Zhong as an external armor. He could still access his abilities, allowing the Scarlet

Reaper to channel them as well.

Finally, one of the L5s corpses split apart, and a shadow dashed out, fleeing towards the distance.

Yue Zhong's senses blanketed the area, and before he made a move, he swept a glance throughout the surroundings, speaking coldly, "Come on out. I've already sensed your presence, there's no point in hiding."

"Your senses are truly astounding, truly the top wanted enemy of our Saint Clan."

From the zombie horde below, 9 figures flew out to surround Yue Zhong.

Of them, 8 were male and 1 women, all of them had bat-like wings. They had suits, while their faces were pale, the men were handsome while the lady was beautiful. They were like Eastern-Europeans. There was one who had a head of long hair, his looks almost as beautiful as a woman, while his wings were made out of flesh. He wore casual clothes and he was the epitome of a beautiful man.

Jiang Sheng pointed at the casual beautiful man and told Yue Zhong, "Master, that is Hu Man."

"Jiang Sheng? Treasure of Hope, Puppet Box?"

Hu Man's gaze was sharp as he placed his hands behind his back. Eyeing Yue Zhong coldly, he said, "You are Yue Zhong? I'm the future King of the zombies, Hu Man. You're pretty brazen, actually using the Puppet Box to control my general. What guys. Still not kneeling to submit to this Seat? If you continue to resist, after this King defeats you, I will wipe out all generations of your family, and kill your loved ones. If you submit, I can ensure that you will be well taken care of for the rest of your life."

Yue Zhong eyed Hu Man coldly and sneered, "Just a bunch of zombies, and you even learned how to be imposing? Your

evolution speed is pretty fast eh? Are you all Saint Clan Ancestors from the 2nd World? Meeting 8 of you here that know how to fly, you guys seem to hold me in high regard. Are you in cahoots with these lowly zombies?"

One of the male Saint Clan member spoke, "That's right, we are the Ancestors of the Saint Clan from the 2nd World. Yue Zhong, you're strong, but, you're definitely not a match for the 8 of us. Surrender now and we can spare your life. We will turn you into one of us, allowing you to sit high above everybody else. Yue Zhong, a human can live for a hundred years at most, while we are eternal. Don't you wish for eternal life?"

Immense power and everlasting life, this was what everyone would chase after, and the most tempting rewards for most people.

The Saint Clan Ancestors had used such promises to lure over talents from the human race, making them into their own.

"Hahaha!! You spout too much bullshit. Based on your sadistic nature, you actually have the patience to talk to me? There must be some secret weapon being prepared. However, I'm not going to give you the chance. Just go to hell."

A cold glint flashed across his eyes, and the Scarlet Reaper exploded out with speed, instantly appearing in front of one of the Saint Clan Ancestors. He sent out a palm to grab at him.

The 9 Type 5 experts did not think that Yue Zhong would actually fall out with them and watched stunned as he grabbed the Saint Clan Ancestor, before squeezing him and causing his body to burst apart.

"Witt!! Damn it!! Yue Zhong!! You're dead!! You hear me??! No one can save you!!"

Seeing the Saint Clan Ancestor killed by Yue Zhong, another one of them roared out in rage and flapped his wings. He charged towards the Scarlet Reaper, slapping his hands and slashed out

with 2 Bloodflame Blades congealed from his blood essence.

The Bloodflame was one of the secret arts utilized by the Vampires. There was nothing that it could not burn, and a Bloodflame Blade from a Type 5 expert could easily split apart a tank, while the metal would be melted into a puddle.

"It's useless!! You guys are too weak! Unless a Type 6 expert appears, you will all die!!"

Yue Zhong laughed out coldly, piloting the Scarlet Reaper, disappearing from his position. He then appeared behind the Ancestor that had cursed at him, sending out a claw to obliterate him.

Chapter 971: Falling into the Zombie Horde!

After crushing 2 Type 5 Vampires consecutively, Yue Zhong swept out with his Spirit, landing on Hu Man, while his eyes emitted killing intent.

Hu Man was able to evolve to this stage, this proved that he had the most potential. Within a short 2 years, he had already reached the Type 5 realm. If he was given more time, Yue Zhong would no longer be able to take him down.

"Hmph! Trying to kill me? Yue Zhong, you're still lacking. After today, I will let you experience true fear and despair."

Hu Man's perception was strong, the moment Yue Zhong emitted his killing intent, he could feel it. He snorted coldly, the fleshy wings on his back flapping once, before he shot towards the distance with a Mach 2.5 speed.

Yue Zhong controlled the Scarlet Reaper to push its speed to Mach 5, before chasing after Hu Man in a blaze. Within a breath, he had already reached in front of Hu Man, reaching out to grab him.

At the moment as the mechanical hands were about to close in on Hu Man, a strange glint flashed past his eyes. His body then flickered, disappearing before reappearing 20m away.

Hu Man laughed coldly, "My ability is Spatial Flicker. As long as you do not have any spatial disruption ability, you have no way of catching me."

Spatial Flicker was the strongest ability used for assassination and escape. If humans had this ability, there might be a flaw due to a lack of strength.

However, as Hu Man was a peak Type 5 expert, possessing a physique far surpassing humans, he was able to utilize this ability many times, thus, it would be difficult to kill him.

Hu Man eyed the distance, laughing coldly, "Furthermore, the time is up. Yue Zhong, today shall be the day you die!"

There was a sudden bad feeling in Yue Zhong's heart.

Out of the blue, from a corner of the horde, there was a blue beam of light that shot towards the sky, enveloping it.

In that instant, Yue Zhong felt his body sink, as though he could not fly anymore, plummeting towards the ground.

Hu Man, as well as the 6 other Type 5 Vampires, also descended quickly.

The moment they landed, under the forceful suppression of a strange power, Yue Zhong and the Heart of Hope was ejected from the Scarlet Reaper.

Yue Zhong landed and waved his hand, keeping both the Heart of Hope and the Scarlet Reaper into his Storage Ring, before willing his Dark Dou Qi out.

Unfortunately, no matter how much he urged, there was no way to channel the Dark Dou Qi. All the skills were sealed and could not be utilized. His only current weapon was his flesh body.

"Shit! What's going on?"

Feeling that strange suppression, Yue Zhong's face turned ugly, He had been unbeatable so far because he was able to utilize his skills in combination to great effect. Once he could not use them, it would be a huge disadvantage to his strength.

Especially right now, when there were so many zombies all around him. Without the ability to fly, even a Type 5 expert would die in the midst of such numbers.

Hu Man laughed savagely, "Yue Zhong, are you very afraid now? Having lost those powers you're so proud of, landing among the horde of zombies, all that awaits you is death!! I will watch how you die pitifully!! Haha!!"

Although Hu Man had evolved from the lower zombie life forms, he had never thought of them as his comrades. He only acknowledged those who were intelligent. The rest were all tools to be used.

At this time, on the ground, a dozen Type 3 Hunters charged over at the speed of sound.

Yue Zhong had not yet gotten his bearings when those Hunters had already opened their jaws wide, their tongues shooting towards him like bullets.

He pulled out the blade at his waist that had been fashioned from the tooth of a Type 5 Sea Snake, and the tongues all fell to the ground.

When the tongues landed, the ordinary zombies all around quickly grabbed them and began devouring them.

The ordinary zombies also had the instinct to strive for evolution. The flesh of the Hunters was nourishment for them to evolve. It was just that during normal times, due to the suppression of these higher-leveled freaks, they did not dare to attack them.

On the ground, all that could be seen were just zombies everywhere.

Yue Zhong quickly pulled out his Black Tooth Blade as well and slashed out in a circle.

In an instant, over a dozen low-level Evolved zombies were sliced in two, falling to the ground.

Yue Zhong continued to slash out with his weapons like a meat grinder, turning the zombies all around him into meat paste, as he made his way towards the area Hu Man had landed.

"Haha!! Without the powerful mech, you're just an ordinary human with your abilities sealed!! Yet, you dare to challenge this Seat?! Simply ridiculous! This seat shall rip you apart and use your

blood as wine!!"

Hu Man laughed out in an unbridled manner, and with a tap of his foot, he suddenly disappeared, before appearing in front of Yue Zhong, intending to grab at his head.

Yue Zhong's speed suddenly exploded forth, twisting his body and the Type 5 Sea Snake Tooth in his hand. The strike caused a deep gash in the right chest of Hu Man, as black blood flowed profusely.

Hu Man then screamed out, as he tried to flee towards the zombies.

The moment he turned, Yue Zhong shot forwards.

"You fell for it!! Die!!"

Hu Man laughed out savagely, as he twisted back, sending a fist towards Yue Zhong. With his Type 5 strength, this was a punch that could destroy a tank.

Yue Zhong did not dodge it, instead, he sent out a punch to meet Hu Man's fist.

At the moment both fists came to a clash, Hu Man's right shoulder was twisted badly and flung uselessly to the side, his bones broken due to the impact.

Hu Man screamed out in pain while his face was contorted in disbelief, "AH!!! It hurts!! It hurts!! How can this be?! You're just a human!! How can your strength and bones be stronger than mine?!"

Among those of the same realm, the physique of humans could not compare to the foreign races. Hu Man had used his own strength to frequently best other human evolvers. This was the first time he had been defeated in a physical clash.

"Seems like all of us are affected by the seal. You can die now."

The killing intent in Yue Zhong's eyes intensified, as he shot

forwards, his fist whistling towards Hu Man's head. The explosive strength of the Type 5 realm blasted out, causing Hu Man's head to explode upon impact.

Destroying Hu Man's head with a single fist, Yue Zhong then turned around, pulling out his Black Tooth Blade and slashed down at another Type 5 Ancestor that had tried to get close, directly slicing him in two.

One Ancestor saw all these and screamed out in fear, "Quick! Flee!! This human is already a half-step Type 6 expert!! He's on the verge of a breakthrough to the Type 6 realm!!"

Yue Zhong shot forward, his blade slashing out without mercy, directly killing that Type 5 Ancestor.

The 4 remaining Type 5 Ancestors had ugly looks as they retreated backward explosively.

Jiang Sheng pounced down from the skies, knocking one of them to the ground, as both of them got entangled.

Yue Zhong wielded the Black Tooth Blade, tapping his foot and shooting towards the remaining 3 Type 5 Ancestors.

At this time, a dozen Hunters arrived, bringing with them a putrid stench as they tried to pounce on Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his Black Tooth Blade, and they were all split apart, their dismembered bodies falling to the ground.

After passing the corpses, Yue Zhong appeared in front of one of the Type 5 Ancestors, slashing out and slicing him in half.

The remaining 2 took the chance to flee a few hundred meters, jumping into the midst of the zombies.

Yue Zhong calmly pulled out his Electromagnetic Cannon and fired out into the distance.

The laser beam shot out, piercing through a dozen zombies, before blasting into one of the 2 Ancestors in the head, causing it to

burst apart.

The remaining female Vampire disappeared within the ranks of the zombies.

After wiping out nearly all the Type 5 experts, Yue Zhong barely had time to breathe, when the endless horde charged right at him.

He waved his Black Tooth Blade in a frenzy, slaughtering the zombies that came at him.

As he sliced them up, he was thinking silently, "This cannot continue on, I need to kill my way out, otherwise, I will just die here from exhaustion."

Although he was almost invincible in a one-on-one fight, being in the middle of the horde with no way of flying, it would definitely be a death trap. No matter how high his Stamina, it would just be delaying the inevitable.

"The west! I remember that blue light came from the west. There has to be an answer there!"

He immediately made a dash for that direction, appearing beside Jiang Sheng, and killing the Type 5 Ancestor entangled with him in a single strike. After that, the both of them continued to charge westward.

As he slaughtered the zombies, every single slash would be done with the least amount of force and the most efficient movement, so as to maximize the killing rate while minimizing the stamina usage.

Under that sort of constant slashing, Yue Zhong utilized the blade techniques that he had picked up, making his movements simple and efficient, as he became more proficient in the Dao of the Blade. If this had been before the apocalypse, his blade techniques would have been enough to qualify him as a grandmaster. Of course, it was considered a slaughterer blade technique.

Chapter 972: Exhaustion!

Being in the midst of the zombies, Yue Zhong could feel the terror being in the midst of the horde. No matter how many he killed, they just kept coming. There was no end. Furthermore, his Stamina was being depleted. Surrounded by body parts and the stench of rot, it was enough to drive anyone crazy.

However, he was someone who been through countless battles, and he had an iron will. He continued to forge forward, killing the countless zombies.

Under the protection of a group of Devourers, the beautiful Type 5 Ancestor was supported by a handsome but scarred man beside her, while shouting, "We must kill him! We cannot let him live, otherwise, he will be the greatest enemy of our race!"

The handsome man was Gui Can, one of the 3 generals under Hu Man.

Gui Can shot the beautiful Type 5 Ancestor a look, as he frowned and entered contemplation.

After the death of Hu Man, the horde had fallen under the control of Gui Can and Liu Xiong.

However, under the effect of the blue light, the ability of Gui Can and Liu Xiong to control the other zombies was severely incapacitated. Right now, Gui Can could only handle tens of thousands of them. If they used such a number to attack Yue Zhong, only to fail, it would not be helpful to their future contending for the position of King.

As for Jiang Sheng, who was also affected by the blue light, he could only control the zombies to not attack himself, but not anything else.

After gaining intelligence, these evolved zombies also gained hopes and aspiration. Controlling the millions of zombies was Gui

Can's goal.

Compared to that, he had no issue with letting Yue Zhong go. After all, China was vast, at most, Gui Can could avoid Yue Zhong and establish his strength elsewhere.

As they were different, zombies could live anywhere, even if the terrain or circumstances were harsh.

The beautiful Type 5 Ancestor saw Gui Can hesitating and gritted her teeth to tell him a secret, "Gui Can, I'll let you in on something. Yue Zhong has the God and Devil Imprint on his right arm, and he already has a God-Devil Nucleus in him. This is why he is able to evolve so fast even though he's a human. Once you consume it, you'll gain an incredible strength, immediately becoming a Type 6 existence. At that time, the entire world will tremble at your might. You can become a powerful Overlord!!"

Gui Can's face changed, as his gaze became incredibly sharp, evidently overcome with greed. He stared at her, "What?! Poliyaeva, are you certain? How come you didn't tell us this before?!"

Poliyaeva sighed, and had a difficult expression, "Yue Zhong only has one of those, even we also want that opportunity to evolve. It's natural we wouldn't make it known to you guys."

As long as she could incite his greed, Poliyaeva was able to relax. Every strong expert harbored thoughts of getting stronger. Once they obtained such an intel, it was hard to resist.

Gui Can's gaze turned cold, as he stared fixedly at Poliyaeva, "What else have you kept from us?"

She replied, "There's nothing else. That's the only secret, the biggest secret. There's nothing else."

Gui Can turned solemn, "Fine, I can command some troops to attack him, but, you must help me kill him."

Poliyaeva had a crafty glint as she tried to bargain, "Fine!

However, the price for making me act is his God-Devil Nucleus. The use of the God and Devil Imprint is even larger, you're not losing out."

Gui Can's eyes flashed, but he nodded, "Fine!"

After the both of them had finished negotiating, Gui Can swept a look across the zombies around him and opened his mouth, releasing a sharp, supersonic wave that ordinary humans could not pick up, spreading it out.

The zombies under Gui Can that were familiar with his brainwave signals immediately responded, rushing towards Yue Zhong according to his will.

As he could not control those that did not belong to his army, the dozens of thousands of evolved zombies charged forward with the L5s taking the lead, crushing the fellow zombies in the way, turning many of them into meat paste, while moving towards Yue Zhong's location.

Within the horde, there were blade flashes everywhere, as zombies were chopped up into minced meat. Yue Zhong continued to forge forward with his blade slashing continuously, advancing without stopping.

All of a sudden, there was a sense of danger that arose in his heart, as he jumped back explosively.

A bout of gray poisonous fog spat over, before landing on the ground.

Yue Zhong swept his gaze around, noticing a number of Devourers that could spit hidden at the back of some other zombies.

The ferocious-looking Devourers opened their jaws and continued to spit out poison at Yue Zhong.

With a flash of his body, he dodged them time and time again, as he routed towards one of them.

At this moment, 18 Hunters jumped out from right behind the Devourer, pouncing towards Yue Zhong.

The Black Tooth Blade in his hands was swung forward in a flash, slaughtering all 18 of them within seconds.

After killing the 18 Hunters, 4 5m-tall L5s stomped over, raising their massive fists and swinging them down at Yue Zhong.

These L5s had terrifying strength, if even Yue Zhong was caught, he would be heavily injured.

With a tap of his foot, Yue Zhong routed around the L5. When he had reached behind, he was met with the onslaught of 8 zombies with huge bellies that suddenly ruptured, causing the corrosive pus to splatter everywhere.

His expression fell, and he had no choice but to twist around, dodging with all his might.

Yue Zhong's current response speed had surpassed the human limits, however, he was still struck by 3 or 4 of the corrosive liquid. Sizzling sounds could be heard as his clothes were directly dissolved, before being stopped by the Type 5 Mutant Beast hide.

He pulled out his Electromagnetic Cannon and fired rapidly, causing those big-bellied zombies to be blasted apart.

These big-bellied zombies were incredibly dangerous to Yue Zhong with his abilities sealed.

After killing the 7 or 8 of them, 6 nimble S5s with powerful legs dashed out, slashing towards him with its sharp claws.

He slashed out with his blade, directly slicing those 6 S5s in halves.

However, he could not catch his breath, as the Devourers behind had fired out the poisonous fog once more at him, while the L5s were lumbering towards him from all directions as well.

The waves of attacks came one after another, even someone as

strong as Yue Zhong could not manage this without feeling exhausted. He had depleted much of his Stamina, and there was no way to advance.

Jiang Sheng slaughtered the ordinary zombies at the side but had no means of assisting Yue Zhong to break out.

In the midst of the fighting, Yue Zhong began to pant and perspire. His breathing became ragged and his eyes were bloodshot. Even his arms were starting tremble slightly, each time he raised his blade to slash out.

Beside him, the pile of zombie corpses had already formed a small hill, releasing a thick stench of rotting flesh.

In the distance, Gui Can watched while hidden within the body of an L5, his heart aching at the sight of the dead subordinates of his.

The number had reached over ten thousand, comprised of mainly Type 3 and above zombies. Gui Can only had about 30,000 of them. This was his base capital, and having lost $\frac{1}{3}$ of them to Yue Zhong, it was natural that he felt heartache.

He had a ferocious glint in his eyes as he stared at Yue Zhong, "It's time, his Stamina is about to run out."

Under such circumstances where there were enemies everywhere, even if Yue Zhong was half-step into the Type 6 realm, his Stamina would not be able to hold up.

Although he had killed over 10,000 within an hour, continuously slashing his blade at that sort of speed was incredibly taxing.

In the zombie horde, after Yue Zhong had slaughtered another 3 S5s, he suddenly took a step back with a pale face, and due to the fatigue, he suddenly fell.

"It's time!! He's mine!!"

There was a ferocious glint in Gui Can's eyes as he pounced towards Yue Zhong.

Poliyaeva, who had been quietly standing beside Gui Can, shot forwards with even faster speed, by almost 30%.

"Damn it! Am I going to die here?"

Yue Zhong felt like his body was weighed down with lead, making it hard to move. In this situation, it seemed impossible to get out alive.

An S5 dashed forward, appearing in front of Yue Zhong and slashed out with its claws.

"I will not die so easily!!!"

Fury arose in Yue Zhong's heart, as he twisted his body and allowed the claw of the S5 to strike his shoulder. He then used his fist to slam the S5's head, causing it to explode.

At the moment of the S5's death, a stream of life force was absorbed into his body.

The amassed life force throughout the course of his journey was pure and concentrated, and this final strand of life force from the S5 was like a match that ignited the potential within Yue Zhong's body.

The life force began to surge within him, entering the God-Devil Nucleus in his mind. In return, the God-Devil Nucleus absorbed it and refined it further, spewing out a golden energy that coursed throughout Yue Zhong's body.

Chapter 973: Metamorphosis, the Type 6 Realm!

Following the flow of the light gold energy, Yue Zhong's muscles, marrow, bones, every single part were all covered with a light gold sheen. They began to change and metamorphosize, evolving quickly.

The golden energy continued to course out from the God-Devil Nucleus, entering the various runes, allowing the runes to turn even more silver and profound.

"Congratulations, the Body of Steel had evolved into the God-Devil Body, the skill is now First Order God Devil Body."

"Congratulations, your Devil Flame had evolved into the God-Devil Flames."

"..."

"Congratulations, you have broken through the mortal realm, evolving towards the direction of a God-Devil."

After Yue Zhong broke through the Type 6 realm, within his sea of knowledge, there was a flurry of notifications. Every single skill he learned through the system evolved, becoming even stronger.

"Is this the Type 6 realm? I'm no longer a mortal. What a good feeling."

He took a deep breath, feeling his head clear. He had undergone another heaven and earth change. When he narrowed his eyes, he could see the movements of bacteria in the sky. When he focused on his ears, he could hear the sound of an ordinary zombie's head being crushed by an L5 a long distance away, at the same time, there was a myriad of noise that he could even distinguish.

With a thought, he could accurately sense the situation all around him, even a distance away. Such a powerful perception was

almost omniscience.

If it had been before the apocalypse, just by using his current senses, he could be the master of a sect. In the past, he would be revered like a deity.

"Haha, Yue Zhong, you are mine!!"

At this moment, there was the sound of excited laughter, as Poliyaeva wore an expectant look, arriving in front of Yue Zhong flapping her wings, slashing out at his head.

Behind, Gui Can roared out in rage, "Stop!! He's my prey!!"

Gui Can had not expected Poliyaeva to be this cunning, and her speed to be this terrifying. His own speed was far inferior.

Poliyaeva's face was covered with a sadistic smile, as she reached out, "Haha! Gui Can you fool! When I've finished taking Yue Zhong's God and Devil Imprint and his God-Devil Nucleus, I will make you my subordinate! Haha!"

Just then, Yue Zhong lifted his head, reaching out with his own right hand, grabbing at her.

There was a look of shock in her eyes, and she tried to dodge, but there was no way, as she was captured like a little bird.

"I was just thinking of capturing a female Vampire as a pet, you can take that role obediently!"

A cold look flashed past his eyes, and he flung her down viciously, stepping on her head. He then applied a little more pressure and caused her head to sink further into the ground. He then sent a powerful vibration through his legs, causing her to be knocked unconscious before a Type 5 Puppet Rune entered her head.

"What's going on? What's happening?"

Gui Can saw how Poliyaeva was taken down easily, and he felt shocked, quickly twisting his body to retreat backward.

"You want to escape?"

Yue Zhong turned to Gui Can, his eyes flashing with a cold look. He then disappeared from his position, and appearing on top of Gui Can in a flash, reaching out to grab him."

"Explode!!"

After reaching the Type 6 Realm, Yue Zhong's strength was simply terrifying. Gui Can had only the moment to scream one word before he was captured by him.

When Gui Can's words fell, the big-bellied zombies behind began to explode, as a rain of corrosive liquid fell towards Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong swung Gui Can out, blocking in front of him, causing the corrosive liquid to rain upon Gui Can, corroding huge parts of his flesh, turning them black.

The corrosive liquid had 2 effects, one was corrosion, while the other was infecting a person to become a zombie. Even Type 5 experts might not necessarily be able to resist the corrosive liquid.

Yue Zhong then swung him down mercilessly, stepping on him and declaring coldly, "You shall be my dog then!"

Gui Can struggled, roaring, "Wishful thinking!! I will never be your dog!!"

"That's not up to you to decide!"

With a tremor shooting down Yue Zhong's leg, the vibration rocked Gui Can's head, knocking him out. A Puppet Rune also entered his head.

By the time Gui Can woke up, he was on all fours, greeting Yue Zhong, "Dog Gui Can greets Master!"

Yue Zhong shot him a look, "Forget it, stand up. Gather these zombies and escort me out."

"Yes, master!"

Gui Can stood up, and immediately released another soundwave command.

The remaining 20,000 evolved zombies stopped all attacks towards Yue Zhong, turning to become his guards as they attacked their way out.

Under Gui Can's command, there were 200 L5s, and they were like bulldozers crushing through the horde. With a single slap, they could turn a huge patch of evolved zombies into meat paste.

The 20,000 elite evolved zombies continued to crush their way out, at every second, there were at least a dozen thousand zombies being killed. The speed was even faster than Yue Zhong's slaughtering speed.

Under their escort, Yue Zhong came to the corner where the blue light was released.

"What is that?"

In a small valley, there was a huge altar. There were many mysterious runes engraved on it.

At the center of it, there were 9 Mutant Beast Nuclei, as well as a blue mirror placed on the flat surface of the altar.

Right now, the 9 Mutant Beast nuclei were glowing resplendently, as a red energy coursed through the blue mirror, causing it to fire out the blue light beam towards the sky.

Yue Zhong looked at it, and his pupils narrowed, asking Poliyaeva beside him, "What's this?"

Chapter 974: Controlling the Zombie Horde!

Poliyaeva responded, "This is one of the Treasures of Hope, Sealing Mirror. With 9 Mutant Beast nuclei placed on the altar, it could cause the abilities of experts within the range of 30 li to be sealed, leaving behind only the flesh strength. The time to prepare it is 5 minutes. The higher the quality of the Mutant Beast nuclei, the higher the level of the experts sealed. Type 5 nuclei could seal experts of the Type 6 realm and below. Type 6 nuclei could seal experts of the Type 7 realm and below. The limit is the Type 9 realm."

Yue Zhong looked at the Sealing Mirror and frowned, "A Treasure of Hope? While it seems powerful, to the human race, it's barely useful."

The physique of the human race was weaker than the foreign races. By sealing the skills and abilities of the enemy as well as ally forces, in terms of flesh bodies, unless everyone had Yue Zhong's physique, it was just a bad move to the rest of the humanity.

Yue Zhong asked, "How do I take it down?"

Poliyaeva replied, "Just take it down from the altar."

Yue Zhong walked up to the altar, and reached out with his hand to retrieve the Sealing Mirror.

The moment the blue Sealing Mirror was retrieved, the light went out from the altar.

"The sealing effects have disappeared." At the moment the blue radiance went out, Yue Zhong could sense the sealing effects on his abilities disappear, causing his body to feel even more relaxed. With a thought, a light gold flame burned brightly from his hands.

Yue Zhong then kept the 9 Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei into his Storage Ring.

Type 5 Nuclei were precious resources to Yue Zhong.

Producing Reapers, Puppet Runes, and the energy source for the Storm Battleship all required huge numbers of Type 5 nuclei, if it wasn't for Yue Zhong raiding the Cloud Region's treasury, he would not have been able to produce so many Type 5 Puppet Runes without consideration.

Yue Zhong then swept a look towards Jiang Sheng and Gui Can, "Let's go, time to gather the zombie army."

Jiang Sheng and Gui Can replied with respect, "Yes! Master!"

The moment they left the valley, Gui Can opened his mouth, sending out his command in all directions.

Jiang Sheng flapped his flesh wings, soaring into the skies, sending out his own signal in all directions.

When the Z-Types within the horde felt the brainwaves from their respective commanders, they could sense the threat from the high-level evolved zombies, and quickly aligned their own brain waves to Jiang Sheng and Gui Can, becoming their subordinates.

Yue Zhong let out the Scarlet Reaper, combining with the Heart of Hope, and soared into the skies once more.

Even after Yue Zhong had stepped into the Type 6 realm, the Scarlet Reaper was incredibly useful to Yue Zhong. After all, he could not single handedly take out a hundred thousand zombies by himself.

Within the zombie horde, there was still one more Type 5 Liu Xiong. Before he took him out, he could not relax.

Even after so many zombies had been slaughtered by Yue Zhong, there were still over 8 million of them. Such a number was enough to wipe out Yue Zhong's forces in the small county.

Along the way, Yue Zhong continued to keep a lookout, when suddenly, he realized that over at the west side, a million zombies had broken up and split into a hundred different groups, running in different directions.

Yue Zhong saw that and frowned, "Crafty fellow!!"

Yue Zhong released his wings, as countless laser beams rained upon the fleeing zombie horde.

Amidst the rain of laser, countless zombies fell down dead.

In a short 5 minutes, over 400,000 low-level zombies were obliterated.

The Scarlet Reaper then kept its wings, and the rain of laser beams stopped.

Yue Zhong swept the 70 hordes with a look of pity and did not chase. He had to reserve some strength in the Scarlet Reaper to deal with something unexpected. Furthermore, finding a Type 5 evolved zombie within the horde of 700,000 was incredibly difficult.

As long as Liu Xiong did not issue any orders within the horde, even Gui Can and Jiang Sheng could not discover his presence.

Liu Xiong fled pathetically, while the remaining 7 million zombies were quickly controlled by Jiang Sheng and Gui Can.

Once they were brought under control, Yue Zhong got Jiang Sheng and Gui Can to command them to attack Hebei.

This time, his intention was to wipe out as many obstructions as he could so that it would be easier for future battles.

After all, even he did not have the confidence of success. He might have become a Type 6 expert, but he was only at the initial realm. Who knew how many Type 6 freaks were still alive in the 2nd World. He did not have any confidence of dealing with them.

Furthermore, there was still the Type 7 Emperor Ba Long in the 3rd World. Once they descended upon Earth, it would be the nightmare of the human race.

Having reached the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong was even clearer about the terror of high-level experts.

Had there not been the Xue Luo Forts, the Storm Battleship, or even the high-tech defenses of the Capital in the 3rd World, the human race could not possibly hope to defend against a Type 7 expert.

If Emperor Ba Long was to descend upon Earth now, with his strength alone, he could wipe out all resistance whatsoever, and launch a massacre. Nuclear weapons might only possibly threaten it.

At Hebei, where mountains covered 3 of its sides, and it was even surrounded by a river, the city wall had reached 9m. A 30-year-old man, Shangguan Qing Cheng was staring out at the horde of zombies currently clashing with his soldiers.

Shangguan Qing Cheng had been an ordinary white-collared worker, going to the gym often, gathering with his friends once in a while, leading a carefree life.

After the world changed, he had taken a private bus to leave the city, experiencing countless betrayal and fighting, coming to close shaves with death. He had finally awakened his ability to control air, and with this ability, he had started to clear villages of zombies, gathering survivors. He fought hard and continuously, finally establishing a survivor base of 8,000 people.

Inside this base, 7,000 of them were soldiers. In this cruel world, even women and children had to learn how to fight, otherwise , their outcome would be death.

Before the world ended, Africa and Afghanistan were in chaos, and had many child soldiers. It was the product of chaos. After the world ended, only the Kingdom of God, Yue Zhong's establishments and any other powerful factions which had resources and abilities could allow their children to continue studying.

Even within Yue Zhong's faction, some of the children had accepted some form of military training. After all, they did not

know when they might be sent to the battlefield.

One particular man came up to Shangguan Qing Cheng, covered in blood, as he spoke with grief, "Boss Qing Cheng!! The brothers can't hold on much longer!! So many brothers have died!! Deploy the Tiger Panther Riders, please!! Otherwise, we will all die soon!"

Hearing those words, the 80 evolvers beside Shangguan Qing Cheng turned to look at him.

This 80 Evolvers consisting of men and women were the trump cards of Shangguan Qing Cheng, the Tiger Panther Riders. Each of them were survivors unearthed by him, following him through countless battles, and their levels exceeding 60.

Furthermore, everyone of them was loyal to Shangguan Qing Cheng, because he was the only Type 4 expert among their base, and his might terrifying. Only he could take down those high defense L3s and L4s. The rest of them could not do anything to those freaks.

Shangguan Qing Cheng glanced out the wall, looking at those soldiers fighting for their lives, as well as the endless horde beyond the walls. He stood up, and spoke solemnly, "Come with me!"

After that, all 80 Evolvers followed Shangguan Qing Cheng to the battlefield.

Fireballs, wind blades, ground spikes, ice shards, Mutant Plants, Summon Tamed Beasts, all sorts of abilities were cast, causing a large number of zombies to be torn apart.

On the battlefield, a large Mutant Plant coiled around a 4m-tall L4, trying to pierce it with its sharp tendrils, but to no avail.

A number of fireballs and ice shards exploded on the body of the L4, but they could not penetrate the scales of the L4.

As the L4 swung its fists, the huge mutant plant was ripped apart. It then braved the bullets and charged towards the city wall.

All of a sudden, a large air blade sliced out without warning, decapitating the L4, causing blood to splatter everywhere. The headless corpse of the L4 slumped to the ground.

There were sounds of celebration from the city wall.

However, it did not last very long, as they caught sight of another 30 L4s, as well as 3 L5s heading towards the wall. Behind those elite evolved zombies, there were still many other L3s and other Type 3 zombies.

The assault of the horde had just truly begun.

Chapter 975: Shangguan Qing Cheng!

Shangguan Qing Cheng looked at the approaching horde, their numbers dense and unending, and his face turned pale, "Finished, we're doomed this time. Am I finally going to die here?"

He could congeal air blades to decapitate L4s easily, however, his limit was about 20 per day.

If it were in the past, there would be at most a single L3 within a village, while a county with over a hundred thousand people would have a few L4s.

And yet, there were suddenly 10 L4s, 3 L5s as well as numerous other zombies. Their numbers and makeup far surpassed what the survivor base was capable of handling.

On the city wall, all the survivors had looks of despair. They were carrying melee weapons, against the evolved zombies, it was incredibly strenuous to fight. There was definitely only death that awaited them from the incoming horde.

All of a sudden, the zombies surrounding the county turned and joined the incoming horde.

Shangguan Qing Cheng's heart sank even further, "Shit, there's a Z-Type. Seems like its level is pretty high, it could even control over a million zombies!"

When Shangguan Qing Cheng was fighting his share of zombies, he had naturally come across the Z-Types. Against such hordes being controlled by the intelligent evolved zombies, he had to run a few times. After all, people like them with no backing were not a match for such numbers.

One young evolver by the name of Wei Qing, who had blonde hair, walked up to Shangguan Qing Cheng and muttered softly, "Boss, seems like things are bad. Let's make preparations for our escape."

A dark look came over Shangguan Qing Cheng's eyes as he responded lowly as well, "Go and prepare."

When faced with hordes of this magnitude, Shangguan Qing Cheng and his men had fled a few times. He had originally assumed that once he controlled a county, he would not have to flee anymore. However, when he came across such a number again, he found out how naive he was.

Right at this time, the zombie suddenly split apart, and a Jeep came out from within, coming to a stop in front of everybody.

3 warriors in military wear came out from the jeep, walking towards the county.

From the endless horde, 3 humans actually stepped out. Such a scene was enough to stun everyone present. They stared wide-eyed as the 3 walked towards the county.

Bai Xiao Sheng stood straight and hollered, "I'm Major General Bai Xiao Sheng from the China Central Army. Get your leader to come out."

After coming back to Earth, Yue Zhong had been fighting and consolidating his factions, establishing the new Chinese government, and all his armies were now grouped under the same moniker.

Shangguan Qing Cheng eyed Bai Xiao Sheng, and asked, "I'm the leader here, Shangguan Qing Cheng. China Central Army? I have not heard of you guys before. Are you guys from the capital? I remember that it was Yue Zhong's faction there."

After Yue Zhong had conquered the capital, he had made use of the broadcast stations to send out a message to all corners of the country.

Since then, many factions with radio capabilities knew that Yue Zhong had conquered the capital. However, they did not know that he had just established a new government.

Bai Xiao Sheng chuckled, "That's right. Our leader Yue Zhong had established a new government. Open your gates and join us, you will be one of us."

Shangguan Qing Cheng laughed lightly, "Are you asking us to submit?"

Bai Xiao Sheng's tone turned icy all of a sudden, "That's right! It is an order to submit. Can you see these zombies? They are all under Leader's control right now. Do you know what that means? If you want to resist, I will wipe you out on account of treason."

Intimidation, enticement and threats, Bai Xiao Sheng was well-versed in the usage of all of them.

After taking over the capital, the new government had started to clear the various zombies and reach out to the various factions around. They had come across various small-time leaders of their own factions. Each of them had grown giddy with their own authority, and it was difficult to get them to submit straight away.

With that, Bai Xiao Sheng waved his hands.

A soldier stepped out with a flute and blew on it.

As the notes blew from the flue, 20 L3s stepped out from the zombie horde and kneeled in front of Bai Xiao Sheng's party of 3, stretching out their heads.

Bai Xiao Sheng then took out an Electromagnetic Cannon and fired it at one of them.

With a flash of a bright beam, the L3's head was pierced, revealing a large gaping hole, as brain matter and blood flowed out.

Bai Xiao Sheng continued to demonstrate by killing the rest of the L3s, before turning his cold gaze towards the county wall.

"How is that possible?!"

"Those were L3s!! Their defenses are impenetrable! Even heavy

machine guns can't do shit to them, when did it become so easy to kill them?"

"What weapon is he carrying? Isn't it too overpowered?"

"..."

On top of the county, when everyone saw this, their faces fell, and discussion began to break out.

After the 20 L3s were killed, the flute sounded again, This time, 40 S4s walked out, getting down on the ground.

The 2 soldiers beside Bai Xiao Sheng pulled out sharp Level 3 system weapons, killing those 40 S4s, making use of the system weapons to absorb the life force of the S4s and became stronger.

Witnessing, Shangguan Qing Cheng had a huge change in expression, he knew that Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest were demonstrating what the Central Army was capable of.

Furthermore, the fact that they could command such evolved zombies meant that the Central Army could groom countless experts.

Seeing this, everybody on the county wall had nothing more to say. They knew that if they did not submit, there was only death.

After a moment of silence, Shangguan Qing Cheng asked, "If we submit, what kind of treatment will we be given?"

Bai Xiao Sheng replied, "How many people do you have?"

Shangguan Qing Cheng said, "Slightly over 8,000."

Bai Xiao Sheng quickly spoke, "After you submit, you will get to keep all private possessions. We can guarantee the safety of your people. Other than those who had committed unforgivable acts, we will not kill anyone. As the leader, if you were to join us, you will automatically be promoted to the rank of captain, and enjoy the relevant treatment. Other than, you can put forward the names of 3 others to enjoy the benefits of the lieutenant rank. 20 others can

get to enjoy benefits of the 2nd-lieutenant rank. No bargaining."

Shangguan heaved a sigh of relief and made his decision, "Fine, I agree. I will join the new government."

Having been through so many years of moving from place to place, hoping against hope, such days had exhausted Shangguan Qing Cheng. Although he had his authority, controlling the lives and deaths of 8,000, when faced with a zombie horde, he could only flee. He was already sick of such a lifestyle. If he could choose, he would rather be a small-time leader of the days prior to the apocalypse, than an overlord of the current times.

When he announced their submission, the county immediately opened their gates to welcome Bai Xiao Sheng and his 2 subordinates.

Right after they entered the county, a vehicle fleet came driving out from the horde, entering the county as well.

From the vehicle fleet, a number of soldiers jumped out, armed to the teeth. They were exuding a terrifying aura, as they swiftly occupied the various important points in the county.

Shangguan Qing Cheng took a glance at the soldiers, and his eyes went wide, "They're all experts, what the hell?!"

These hundreds of soldiers were all at least at the peak of the Type 2 realm, at the same time, a number of them were already at the Type 3 realm.

If Shangguan Qing Cheng did not make a move, these hundred soldiers could easily wipe out his Tiger Panther Riders.

After deploying the troops to control the entire county, Bai Xiao Sheng then spoke to Shangguan Qing Cheng, "Come with me, we're going to meet the leader."

Shangguan Qing Cheng nodded, "Ok."

Sitting in a jeep, Shangguan Qing Cheng left the county.

As they traveled through the zombie horde, Shangguan Qing Cheng looked at the surrounding zombies and felt his scalp go numb. Of the various evolved zombies, he recognized a few and not the rest. However, there was one thing clear; no matter how strong he was, he would still die when faced with this horde.

As they went deeper into the horde, Shangguan Qing Cheng saw 2,000 soldiers wielding Tang Replica Swords and killing zombies.

The various high-level evolved zombies were presenting themselves and their heads, allowing the soldiers to kill them.

Those fresh corpses were then loaded onto a number of trucks.

They were good nourishment for Mutant Beasts as well as fertilizers for Mutant Plants. Furthermore, they were good research materials.

Yue Zhong had such ample food resources because he had obtained the Rice Tree, a Mutant Plant when he was in Guang Xi. With the zombie corpses as fertilizers, those Rice Trees had grown abundantly, allowing for his faction to cultivate a huge amount of rice.

Shangguan Qing Cheng watched the soldiers slaughtering the evolved zombies easily, and a hint of envy flashed past his eyes, "No wonder they could produce so many experts. With such a huge horde at their disposal, it's so easy to create powerful experts!"

Shangguan Qing Cheng had been through his fair share of life-and-death situations, killing high-level zombies and Mutant Beasts with great difficulty, evolving to where he was today. Noting the difference in their circumstances, he felt a little unsettled.

After passing through various guard posts, he finally came to a command center. The moment he entered, he saw numerous electronic displays, and on them, images of the entire region were being shown.

Chapter 976: Strange Treasure!

Shangguan Qing Cheng took a look at the information displayed on the screens, and sighed in his heart, "Truly, a big organization is different."

It was because of their edge in technology and equipment that the Central Army was able to grasp the situation around them, crushing all obstacles and conquering numerous counties.

His gaze then retracted from the monitors, landing on a young man in military uniform, whose arms were around a young woman in white dress.

Bai Xiao Sheng then introduced him, "This is our leader Yue Zhong."

Shangguan Qing Cheng came up to greet him, "How do you do, Leader Yue Zhong, I'm Shangguan Qing Cheng. It's an honor."

Yue Zhong replied, "How do you do, take a seat."

"Yes!"

Shangguan Qing Cheng then sat opposite Yue Zhong, his gaze falling upon the pretty young woman, his heart shocked, "What a beautiful woman, she's like those photoshopped models! How could there be such a beauty on this world? This fellow truly has the fortune."

The young woman in Yue Zhong's arms was precisely Yin Shuang. Her features were extraordinary, and as she matured, she was even more stunning. Ever since Yue Zhong came back, this little demoness was unwilling to leave his side for more than a second.

Yue Zhong asked him in a relaxed manner, "I heard you know the location of a strange treasure, is that true?"

After gaining control over the millions of zombies under Hu

Man, Yue Zhong had sent the forces towards Hebei, in an overwhelming display of force. Any zombie horde they came across was gathered under the control of Jiang Sheng and Gui Can. They were then used as training materials for the soldiers under Yue Zhong.

Currently, Yue Zhong's forces were continually gaining strength with the help of the system equipment, and the constant replenishment of zombies.

In these few days, of the elite soldiers in the Central Army, even the most ordinary soldier was at least Level 50. Compared to everywhere else, they could be considered peak experts.

Equipped with laser guns, these 40,000-strong Central Army could even kill a Type 5 evolver under the right circumstances and tactics. Be it individual prowess or joint efforts, the Central Army was truly a formidable force.

With the combined forces of the Central Army and the zombie horde, Hebei was swiftly conquered by Yue Zhong. More than a 100 small factions like Shangguan Qing Cheng's also submitted to him, thus, his power and population grew once more.

There was a complicated look in Shangguan Qing Cheng's eyes, "That's right, Leader. I've discovered a lake in the Qingxia Forest. Every night, there would be a bright radiance glowing from the lake. It would attract countless Mutant Beasts over, and they would try to swallow the rays of light emitted by the lake. I'm guessing that there's a strange treasure inside."

Yue Zhong revealed a serious expression, "Oh! What is the strongest Mutant Beast that has been to the lake?"

After the world changed, there were many strange things in this world. On this earth, there might even be a new treasure that formed. However, as Shangguan Qing Cheng was only a Type 4 expert, he did not dare approach to investigate. Obviously, the Mutant Beasts there were not to be underestimated.

Shangguan Qing Cheng replied solemnly, "There are many Mutant Beasts guarding there. One time, I saw 5 Type 5 Mutant Beasts consuming the moonbeams reflecting from the lake. Fortunately, I managed to flee in time, and only observed them from afar. Otherwise, I would have been dead. The Type 5 Mutant Beasts are not large ones though. Their physiques are almost the same as us humans. However, they are slightly bigger, about 2m-tall, and have beast-like features. They're truly terrifying."

Yue Zhong frowned when he heard that, "Humanoid Type 5 Mutant Beasts? Seems like it's going to be an issue."

In terms of crushing enemies, leveling the battlefield, and intimidating the enemy, Mount Tai was perfect for the job. However, it had a huge shortcoming, that was its speed, which was slow, and its intelligence was on the lower side as well.

Whereas humanoid Type 5 Mutant Beasts might not have the strength of such behemoths, their growth was more balanced and all-rounded, surpassing even most ordinary Type 5 experts. Even the Dino-Warriors might not necessarily be a match for a humanoid Type 5 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong thought silently, "Jiang Sheng and Gui Can had been sent out to conquer the rest of Hebei, while Poliyaeva has to remain here to exert fear on the horde. Bai Xiao Sheng and the rest are not a match for a Type 5 Mutant Beast as well. Seems like there's only me."

It was a critical juncture of reclaiming Hebei. Under the lead of Jiang Sheng and Gui Can, the Central Army was quickly recovering many cities. Yue Zhong did not want to deploy them to take care of those Mutant Beasts.

Against the other zombie hordes, Jiang Sheng and Gui Can was even more important than Yue Zhong himself.

Within Qingxia Forest, there were many trees over a few hundred meters tall. Growing densely together, they provided lush

cover and allowed many Mutant Plants to thrive. There were some even capable of swallowing humans whole due to their large sizes.

Inside this forest, there were many behemoth-Mutant Beasts, thus, many human experts would carry out hunting expeditions here, in order to increase their strength.

"It's that lake!"

On a huge tree, Shangguan Qing Cheng pointed to a vast water body, with pristine clear water that had a light jade-like tinge to it, and told Yue Zhong.

Right now, on the tree, there was only Yue Zhong and Shangguan Qing Cheng. Yue Zhong had been reluctant to bring too many to this Qingxia Forest. This was because that unless one was a decent expert, against Type 5 Mutant Beasts, they would only be sacrificing their lives needlessly.

Yue Zhong observed the lake, noting many types of Mutant Beasts lurking all around.

Many were quietly laying on the ground, idling away, not engaging in any fights or slaughter among each other.

Yue Zhong had done his research towards Mutant Beasts and knew that they would fight and consume one another for the sake of evolution and survival.

Only when there was a King or Overlord of a particular species, or under the pressure of a tyrannical high-level Mutant Beast, would there be a gathering of Mutant Beasts.

Even during fights of different species, some were unable to suppress their own bestial instincts, acting out against other foreign races. Therefore, such a scene where beasts of different types were laying around without attacking one another was strange.

Yue Zhong observed carefully before asking, "Where's the light?"

Shangguan Qing Cheng replied, "It's only during the night."

"Guess we'll have to wait."

Night fell.

Following the darkening of the skies, many more Mutant Beasts began to walk out from various parts of the forest.

There were Mutant Giant Cockroaches, Mutant Apes, Mutant Two-headed Dogs, Mutant Leopard Cats, and other ferocious Mutant Beasts rushing over.

"Ah! What's that?"

All of a sudden, there was a shrill roar. Yue Zhong turned towards the direction of the commotion, only to see a white-scaled Type 5 White-Scaled Panther darting through the forests like a phantom, pouncing on the various Mutant Leopard Cats, tearing through their throats, and devouring them.

The Type 5 White-Scaled Panther was extremely fast, as the other Mutant Beasts appeared before they could react, their throats were already torn through. Blood splattered everywhere, as the beasts died pitifully.

At another corner, there were a 2m-tall Type 5 Ape-man covered in a layer of black scales, looking 50% similar to humans. It was throwing multiple punches at the various Mutant Beasts that arrived.

Although this Type 5 Mutant Ape-man was only 2m-tall, it had a terrifying strength. Each punch was enough to cause a Type 3 Mutant Beast to explode.

Over at another side, there was a 1.56m-tall lithe figure with a cat-head. Her body was voluptuous, covered in a layer of green scales, while her claws were 80cm long. This Type 5 Mutant Green Cat was flashing about the forest.

One by one, the Mutant Beasts that got close had holes appearing

in their heads, their nuclei dug out, as their lifeless bodies crumpled to the floor, with them none the wiser at the point of death.

Finally, there was another Type 5 Black Lizard, covered in a layer of black scales, and looking humanoid. It continued to strike out with its tongue, penetrating the heads of the incoming Mutant Beasts as easily as cannon shots. It would coil its tongue around their nuclei and brain juices, gobbling them up.

The 4 Mutant Beasts continued in their areas, reaping the lives of the various Mutant Beasts.

The Mutant Beasts inside Qingxia Forest continued to fight to reach the lake.

A few Mutant Beasts managed to get past the 4 tyrannical Type 5 Mutant Beasts, reaching within 500m of the lake. The 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts then stopped their rampage and went back to their respective locations.

The 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts had swallowed over 300 nuclei by the time they stopped their slaughter.

Those who had not dared to get close due to the rampage of the 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts started to inch closer and consume the flesh and blood of the fallen beasts.

Chapter 977: Traces of the U.S. Army!

At the same time, in order to fight for the blood of those Mutant Beasts, many of these low-level Mutant Beasts began to engage in slaughter, as the roars and screams of agony and misery rang out through the forest.

By the time darkness enveloped the Earth, all of a sudden, there was a bright beam that shot out from the lake.

The moment the beam appeared, the Mutant Beasts by the lake fought to open their mouths and absorb as much light as possible.

Among them, the 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts took in the most light. When the light entered their bodies, their aura seemed to strengthen as well.

"There's indeed a treasure!"

After evolving to the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong could see clearly, that there was a peculiar silver spring within the depths of the lake. It was from this lake that the beam of light was emitting from.

"Ah, there's a helicopter!"

Suddenly, his brows furrowed, and he heard sounds of communication between humans. As he focused, he could tell that the sounds were a few kilometers away.

A few kilometers away, on the flat ground atop a small hill, there were 12 AH-64 Boeing Apaches and 12 carriers.

6 men and 2 women stepped out, wearing black combat uniforms, emitting a dangerous pressure, observing the pillar of light.

A total of 300 equipped American soldiers got out from the carriers, and some equipment was being transported out as well, being put together to form a large construct.

One short, blond hair burly soldier gazed at the silver beam and sighed, "It's amazing. That beam of light is so beautiful. We can even see it from the satellites. Why would such a thing exist here, instead of our American land?"

One of the ladies, a beautiful blond with her long hair in a ponytail, spoke coldly, "Jos, every country would have some natural-forming treasures after the apocalypse. Didn't America already produce the Basmult Gem? Quickly take care of those Mutant Beasts and retrieve the treasure. According to the intelligence reports, the new government of China is about to recover the whole of Hebei. Once they discover this phenomenon here, they will send their forces to take out the Mutant Beasts and keep the treasure."

Jos turned around to look at the beauty, and chuckled, "The Chinese government? The faction under that person called Yue Zhong? I'm a peak Type 4 Divine Warrior, if Yue Zhong were to send his forces here, I will just wipe them out. Let them see the might of our Superhuman Alliance. Rosie, after this mission, let's fuck."

The westerners were usually more open and uttered profanities without much care. However, it was effective, as when a man and woman took a liking to each other, a one-night stand was likely to occur, as compared to the long courtship of the eastern world.

Rosie's face turned cold, and she pointed a middle finger, "Go fuck your own mother, fool!"

"Haha, Jos, she called you an idiot." A black man in sunglasses spoke up. He was wiping his weapon, a heavy cannon of sorts with a 300mm barrel, equipped with a collimator, and a Type 5 Mutant Beast nucleus inserted in the middle of it. He laughed out brazenly before continuing, "Rosie, Jos can't satisfy you. Let me do it, I guarantee that you will not be able to get out of bed for 3 days."

Ross's eyes turned even more icy, as she pointed her own cannon

at his groin, "Sure, Caiman, if you don't mind me blasting your sorry excuse for a meat into pieces, just come at me."

Caiman raised his hands apologetically, as though in surrender, "Haha, I'll pass."

Just then, a bulky warrior with a bald head and rippling muscles stepped forward. His face was covered in a thick beard, his expression stern, and his gaze sharp. "Quit your nonsense, time for the mission."

"Yes! Boss (Captain Cleo)!"

The moment Cleo spoke, the rest of the team immediately turned serious and began equipping their technology.

Soon, 6 cannons with 300mm barrels, inserted with Type 5 Mutant Beast nuclei and had countless mysterious runes engraved all over them were fully assembled. The black barrels were then aimed at the Mutant Beasts below them.

The rest of the American troops also swarmed out like ants, carrying all sorts of heavy equipment, building a simple but terrifying cannon.

As they were adjusting the aim of the 6 cannons, one bald man who had his eyes closed, muttered out a strange incantation under his breath. A thin, black light radiated out, enveloping everyone present and masked all their killing intents and auras.

3 men and 1 woman quickly got on the ground, adjusting their breaths, and aimed.

At that instant, 4 beams shot out from the hill, aiming for the 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts respectively.

Due to their killing intent being masked, both by their own suppression as well as their comrade's spell, it was only at the moment when the beams were shot out that the 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts felt the killing intent.

The 4 beasts had killed countless Mutant Beasts and felt numerous killing intents, fear, respect, thus, their reaction to this killing intent from the humans was slightly slow.

Only the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat was able to make it in time, dodging to one side.

The 4 beams fell, and 3 beams slammed into the beasts.

One of them penetrated the head of the Type 5 Black Ape-man, directly blasting its brain apart. A Type 5 Nucleus flew out from its brain.

Another beam slammed into the waist of the White-Scaled Panther, shattering its spine, almost cutting it in half. Its entire body was dyed red with blood.

The 3rd beam punched through the chest of the Type 5 Lizardman, destroying it, as blood splattered and bone fragments flew.

In an instant, the 4 most feared Mutant Beasts were taken out, 1 dead and 2 heavily injured.

Humans might be the weakest race in this apocalyptic world, losing out to other existences of the same rank. However, with the appropriate equipment, weapons, as well as their intelligence, it was possible for them to take on higher-ranked enemies.

At that instant, the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat that had evaded quickly slashed through the heads of the 2 heavily injured comrades, digging out their nuclei and swallowing them. It then turned towards Cleo and the rest, its eyes filled with a cold killing intent.

Jos cursed out excitedly, as he pulled his trigger, "Go to hell! Beast!"

A number of beams that could blast a Type 5 Mutant Beast into oblivion fired out towards the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat.

At that moment, 4 beams slammed into the body of the Mutant Green Cat, piercing through its body, and causing a few holes in the ground behind it.

Cleo saw that none of the beams hit and passed his order immediately, "Not good, that was an afterimage! The mission has failed, abandon all equipment and retreat now!"

Wesmer, the commander of the Seals Special Forces, frowned and replied, "Colonel Cleo, we've already established the defense post. It's just an attack by a single Mutant Beast, we should be able to take it down!"

Within their defense, coupled with the automatic weapons and 300 soldiers, Wesmer had the confidence of beating the enemy. Cleo had just called for a retreat without even trying to fight, this would cause their troop to abandon an entire battalion's worth of ammunition. He could not agree to the decision.

Cleo barked out coldly, "Major Wesmer, that is a Type 5 Mutant Beast! It alone can kill all of us here! I will not watch all our guys die at the hands of a beast without a reason!! Order the retreat now! Major!"

After that, he did not even care for Wesmer's response, and he led his subordinates into one of the carriers.

Cleo was the strongest Evolver within the Superhuman Alliance, and he knew the terrors of a Type 5 Mutant Beast. Even if they all attacked together, there was only death.

When they all boarded, Cleo immediately barked at the pilot, "Fly now!"

"Ok! Boss!!"

The pilot was also a member of the Superhuman Alliance. He quickly piloted the aircraft and pulled up into the air.

Wesmer saw that Cleo had actually fled and frowned. He started to reconsider the severity of the situation, and decided to give the

order, "Convey my order, get everyone to retreat."

The signal officer beside him immediately replied, "Understood!"

However, just as he spoke, his head disappeared mysteriously, as blood shot up and splattered over Wesmer's face.

Chapter 978: Selena from India!

Feeling the warmth of the blood from his vice-commander, Wesmer felt his body turn cold. He was a Level 40 Enhancer, however, he did not manage to see how his comrade had died. This meant that the enemy could take him out in the same manner.

At the next instant, Wesmer's head also disappeared mysteriously, as blood spurt upwards like a fountain.

Within moments, throughout the American temporary base, the soldiers began to lose their heads, as warm blood splattered everywhere. The headless corpses then slumped to the ground.

"Ah!!"

Seeing such a horrific scene, the American soldiers began to take up their arms and fired aimlessly into their surroundings.

The bullets fired everywhere, to no avail, as the heads of the soldiers continued to be swallowed up.

The entire defense point had turned to a slaughterhouse.

In just a short time, the American troops crumbled and were trying to flee towards the helicopters.

Under the pressure of the slaughter, one of the carriers did not even wait for their comrades and flew off.

Such an act of abandoning their comrades aroused the curses and ire of the soldiers below.

However, the helicopter had just taken off, when the rotors were suddenly twisted off by an unseen force, and the entire aircraft veered to the side.

After it lost control, it descended to the ground.

At the same time, the rest of the Apaches and heavy carriers that had not yet flown, all had their blades twisted off mysteriously.

Seeing such a scene, the rest of the American troops fell into despair, trying their best to flee elsewhere.

As they moved, death seemed to fall upon them, as their heads disappeared one by one, fresh blood continued to flow.

"What a terrifying Type 5 Mutant Beast!!"

Cleo and the rest of the soldiers from the Superhuman Alliance watched with pale expressions as they witnessed the elites of the American troops being wiped out.

If it were a frontal clash, Cleo and his men would have been wiped out in a few breaths.

Against pure strength, they were no different from ordinary humans.

"Chance!!"

Yue Zhong saw that 3 of the Mutant Beasts had died, and his eyes flashed with a glint. He shot forwards towards the lake.

At the same time, from the forest, 6 men wearing all black shot out, making their way for the lake as well.

Yue Zhong's gaze swept across them and frowned, "Who are they?! They actually managed to conceal themselves for so long, evidently, they've been here earlier than me."

After Yue Zhong had stepped into the Type 6 realm, everything within a certain radius could not escape his perception.

Had these men arrived after Yue Zhong, he would definitely sense them. It was apparent that they had reached before him, and made use of some ability to evade his perception.

After entering the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong's speed was incredibly fast. Although the 6 were ahead of him, in a breath, he had pulled the distance closer.

The leader spoke in Hindi, which Yue Zhong could not understand, "Kill him!"

5 of them immediately turned around and attacked Yue Zhong jointly.

One of them had a silver, 6-round cannon handgun, as he quickly activated his Enhanced Bullet skill while aiming at Yue Zhong. The round fired could blast through a tank.

Another waved his hand, causing countless transparent spider silk to weave into a huge web that shot towards Yue Zhong.

One of them had a narrowed gaze, his eyes turned bloodshot. 2 beams that could cause illusions fell upon Yue Zhong.

A gravity-manipulator waved his hands, causing the gravitational pressure to weigh down on Yue Zhong, increasing it by 30 times.

The last one waved his hands and shot out countless poison needles towards him.

These 5 were all at the Type 3 realm. When they joined hands, even Type 4 experts might fall under their attacks.

"Seeking death!"

A cold light flashed in Yue Zhong's eyes, as he disappeared from his location, causing the attacks to hit nothing.

"He's gone? What's going on? Teleportation?"

The 5 black-clothed men were all shocked.

5 Yue Zhong clones suddenly appeared in front of the 5 black-clothed men, and threw out a palm each, before disappearing.

The next moment, the chest area of those 5 burst apart, as bones, blood, and meat splattered out. They lost their lives and crumpled to the ground.

"Strong!! How come there is such a powerful person here?"

The leader of the 6-man troop saw Yue Zhong slaughtering the 5 others, and felt shocked.

As the leader went blank, Yue Zhong had already appeared in

front of her, grabbing her head.

This leader was also a Type 4 expert, but against Yue Zhong, there was nothing that she could do. She quickly shouted shrilly in English, "Stop, Yue Zhong, I'm a woman!!"

Before she could finish her words, Yue Zhong's hands had already grabbed her head. As long as he exerted a little more force, her head would be crushed.

Yue Zhong relaxed his grip slightly, as he spoke coldly, "An enemy is an enemy, even if you're a woman. I won't be merciful. There are many women that had died at my hands. Speak. Who are you and why do you know my name?"

In the Type 4 realm, Yue Zhong could easily slap her to death, this was why he decided to get to the bottom of things before killing her.

The leader took off her mask, revealing a beautiful face that was the color of wheat. Her hair was black and lush, her eyes limpid as she looked at Yue Zhong with a hint of a smile. She reached out with her hand, "I'm Selena, the daughter of Tai Xin, leader of the India Rebel Forces. I'm honored to meet you. I just guessed your identity. Of the experts within Hebei's region, to be able to kill my subordinates with such ease, there could only be you."

There was no rage or fear on her face, as though the deaths of her 5 subordinates meant nothing to her. With her attractive smile and voluptuous body, her entire person exuded a strong charm.

Yue Zhong shook her hand and continued coldly, "India, isn't it a base under the Kingdom of God? I hope that you're not lying to me. I have many ways of ascertaining the truth."

As long as he used the Puppet Rune, he could obtain all the information he wanted from a person. Of course, it meant that the original person would die, becoming a slave of Yue Zhong for eternity.

Selena's face turned serious as she replied, "No! India is not the base of the Kingdom of God. Those damn Germans are invaders. Us Indians have never given up on resisting them. One day, we will definitely chase them out, regaining our independence. It is precisely because of overthrowing their rule that I've come to China, finding someone to resist them, namely you. Yue Zhong, please assist our India Rebel Forces, and abolish the damned Kingdom of God rule."

Yue Zhong looked at Selena and thought quietly, "Seems like the Kingdom of God has not conquered India fully. This is something I can use."

The Kingdom of God has numerous pawns in China, many of which already within Yue Zhong's new government. He had his share of a headache because of this and wanted to give the Kingdom of God a 'present' in return. However, both sides were too far apart. He did not wish to openly slaughter them in the face of the imminent invasion by the foreign races from the 2nd and 3rd Worlds.

Furthermore, they had a nuclear weapon as well. If both sides fell out, and a nuclear war happened, both sides would just suffer. There were no benefits to it. However, exchanging a few blows between each other was definitely not a problem.

Yue Zhong remained impassive as he replied, "Since you're an envoy from India, why didn't you look for me? Instead, you came here."

There was a hint of mischief in her reply, "I heard there was a treasure here, so I came over to take a look."

Yue Zhong glanced at her in disdain, "Fine. Stay here and observe."

Selena responded docilely, "Yes!"

Yue Zhong swept the lake a glance, noting that the Mutant Beasts

all around were trying to gobble the moonbeams. With a tap of his foot, he instantly disappeared from his location, appearing right in the center of the lake.

Selena stared agape, "Fast!! Even Feroz's speed cannot compare! He truly is the top expert of China."

Feroz was the genius expert of the India Rebel Forces. However, compared with the Type 6 Yue Zhong, he was just an ant.

Chapter 979: The Tyrannical God-Devil Body!

In a breath, Yue Zhong penetrated through the surface of the lake.

After reaching the Type 6 realm, and undergoing a heaven-shaking change, he was no longer a mere mortal. He could even breathe freely in the water. With each breath he took, the oxygen in the water would be absorbed into his bloodstream, but the water would not enter.

In the water, Yue Zhong felt as free as he did on land, as though he was an aquatic animal. He took a deep breath, causing moonbeam to distort and enter his body.

Within the pure moonbeam was a pure astral energy. It could allow humans to break past their limits and obtain unbelievable strength. As the energy was absorbed by the gold God-Devil Nucleus in his body, it turned into a light-gold fog that spread throughout him.

Immediately, he felt his strength rise another level. Ever since he entered the Type 6 realm, each increase was getting extremely tough. This increase was comparable to the life force obtained from killing 200,000 zombies.

"What a good treasure, if I can obtain it, my strength will rise even quicker."

Yue Zhong sensed the increase in strength and felt elated, looking towards the direction of the beam of light.

In the deep parts of the lake, there was an ancient altar, looking extremely decrepit, with a huge fist-sized pearl resting on it. It was this pearl that was emitting the moonbeam, and with the help of the altar, it emitted a straight beam up towards the sky.

At the same time, there was a huge 200m-long, mysterious and

profound-looking Wyrm.

"Type 5 Wyrm, powerful overlord in these waters."

Yue Zhong activated his Eye of Perception, obtaining only this simple piece of information. He finally understood why there were so many beasts on the outskirts, but no one dared to snatch the source of the light.

Some Type 5 Mutant Beasts were also segregated into the low, mid and high tiers. Such tiers set these Mutant Beasts aside from the normal ones, making them even more terrifying.

Although this Type 5 Wyrm was only 200m, it exuded a dangerous aura, surpassing even that of the Type 5 Mount Tai.

Inside the 3rd World, Yue Zhong had come across a few Type 6 Mutant Beasts. However, even they did not fill him with a dread like the beast in front of him.

Within these waters, as long as any Mutant Beasts entered the water, even if the 4 Type 5 Mutant Beasts had joined hands, they would only be gobbled up by the Wyrm.

Yue Zhong was clear, that even if he released Type 5 Turtle and Type 5 Mount Tai, they would only be killed by this Type 5 Wyrm in front of them. This was the assessment derived from his senses as a Type 6 expert.

The Type 5 Wyrm had its eyes closed and was absorbing the moonbeam lazily. The majority of the energy was sucked by it, leaving only a small beam shooting to the sky, for the other Mutant Beasts to absorb.

There were also other small white flowers growing beside the Type 5 Wyrm, with fruits looking like pearls in the middle of those flowers.

Yue Zhong felt his scalp go numb while watching the Wyrm absorb the moonlight. After reaching the Type 6 realm, he had confidence in fighting most Type 5 Mutant Beasts on land.

However, against water-based ones, he lacked the confidence.

After hesitating for a moment, he eyed the bright pearl, and gritted his teeth, activating his Fifth Order Stealth ability, retracting all of his aura. He then slowly made his way towards the back of the Wyrm.

The lake was vast, and the Type 5 Wyrm was not the only living thing inside.

Within the lake, there were many other Mutant Beasts and fishes.

Those that were Type 2 and above feared the might of the Type 5 Wyrm and did not dare get close. However, there were unintelligent fishes that would swim close.

Many schools of fish gathered towards the moonbeam, unwilling to leave. Although they had no intelligence, their basic instincts could sense the comfort from the pearl, thus, they wanted to stick close.

Yue Zhong hid all traces of his aura, floating quietly behind the Type 5 Wyrm, following its bottom and he tried to swim upwards silently.

All of a sudden, the Type 5 Wyrm opened its eyes and adjusted its massive frame.

Yue Zhong felt his heart tighten, as his muscles went taut, ready for battle at any notice. Although he might not have much of an advantage, he would not give up without a fight.

While preparing himself, he made his way towards a stone noiselessly.

The moment the Wyrm opened its eyes, it opened its huge mouth to take a deep breath.

A large whirlpool formed within the lake, and the countless fishes that had absorbed the moonbeam were sucked into the

mouth of the Type 5 Wyrm.

At the same time, Yue Zhong's hands had already been entrenched deep into the ground of the lake.

The whirlpool began to exert a powerful suction on all the nearby lifeforms, forcing them towards the mouth of the Wyrm. Even with his hands in the ground, Yue Zhong could feel the terrifying force threatening to pull him into the body of the Wyrm.

Had he not secure himself, he would have been absorbed without being able to resist.

Water and land were different. There was hardly anything in the water he could borrow some force from. Those that did not have any abilities to control current flow, even if they were powerful Type 7 Divine Warriors, they would only be sucked into the mouth of the Type 5 Wyrm.

With a light suction, over a hundred thousand jin of fish was swallowed by the Wyrm, including some other Mutant Beasts as well.

After that, the Type 5 Wyrm then closed its eyes and continued absorbing the moonbeam.

Yue Zhong waited for a while. When he discovered that there was no further reaction, he then relaxed and swam out, moving towards the head of the Type 5 Wyrm.

As he got closer, about 30m away, he propelled himself with a powerful lunge, concentrating his Dark Dou Qi at his hands, causing his fingers to become extremely sharp as he drilled towards the scales of the Type 5 Wyrm.

Under his terrifying strength, the scales of the Type 5 Wyrm that could block even cannons were pierced by Yue Zhong's nails, till he was an arm length's in. As he tore, he caused a huge bloody hole to appear in the body of the Wyrm.

The blood that was filled with mysterious life force seeped up,

dying the region red.

Yue Zhong stood within the blood, acting like a pile driver as he tore further in, digging into the Wyrm.

In the water, a frontal clash was too disadvantageous for Yue Zhong. As long as he got into its body, he could easily tear this Wyrm apart.

The Wyrm could feel the pain from the wound, and its eyes snapped open, as it struggled in pain. It swung its massive tail, slapping towards the area Yue Zhong was digging, with a ferocious intensity.

Currently, due to its quick reaction, Yue Zhong had only penetrated the powerful flesh of the Type 5 Wyrm halfway.

Facing the incoming attack, Yue Zhong's eyes turned bloodshot as he roared out in rage, channeling his Dark Dou Qi, enveloping himself.

As the huge tail slapped down, Yue Zhong locked his body, forcefully defending against the tail of the Wyrm.

At that moment, a powerful force traveled from the tail, causing Yue Zhong's entire body to sink like a nail into the flesh.

When Yue Zhong took on this strike, he felt his shoulders ached, as his energy flow got disrupted and he spat out a mouthful of blood that had a slight tinge of gold. His face turned pale, but he was elated. "Formidable! This God-Devil Body is formidable!! If it were in the past, I would have been flattened into a meat paste!! Now, I only feel the pain, but my bones are intact! This body is truly powerful!"

After being hammered into the body of the Wyrm, Yue Zhong immediately activated his God-Devil Flame. His body was shrouded in the all-devouring flame, incinerating the flesh and blood of the Wyrm.

Yue Zhong quickly seared through the Wyrm's body.

The tyrannical Wyrm became even more agitated, thrashing about in shock and panic.

The peaceful lake became violent, as waves over dozens of meters swept out in all directions.

Many beasts along the shore were swept up as well, falling into the lake and struggling in a frenzy.

As the massive Wyrm continued to struggle, a number of water jets shot out, spraying everywhere in a bout of rain.

After struggling for a long while, the Type 5 Wyrm finally trembled for one last time, before its head burst open, as Yue Zhong appeared with a huge goose egg-sized blue nucleus.

The Type 5 Wyrm lost all signs of life, and slumped to the bottom of the lake, lifeless.

With its death, the thick stench of blood drew all the Mutant Beasts within the lake towards its position.

Chapter 980: Superhuman Alliance!

The bottom of the lake had turned into a slaughter-fest between the Mutant Beasts, as they fought to swim over.

There were Mutant Fishes with rows of sharp teeth, their sizes larger than bungalows. There were also gigantic crocodiles that were easily over 30m long, seemingly capable of swallowing elephants. All sorts of ordinary Wyrms that did not get close were also charging forwards now.

Yue Zhong looked at the horde of beasts and immediately activated his Summon Tamed Beast, as a hole appeared at the bottom of the lake. Turtle lumbered out.

The moment Turtle appeared, it opened its huge mouth and a whirlpool appeared, directly sucking many of the Mutant Beasts. It then brought down its mighty teeth, and with multiple loud crunches, many of the Mutant Beasts were directly consumed.

Although Turtle was not as terrifying as the Type 5 Wyrm, it was still an Overlord-class beast.

When the rest of the Mutant Beasts felt Turtle's aura, they quickly turned and fled, not daring to get close.

After they scared the most of the beasts away, Yue Zhong then went about his business, taking apart the blood, claws, and flesh of the Type 5 Wyrm.

Turtle also took the chance to gobble up the flesh of the Type 5 Wyrm.

The most precious resource of the Wyrm was its nucleus. However, its flesh was also a source of nourishment, surpassing most other Type 5 Mutant Beasts. It was even stronger than some other Type 6 Mutant Beasts as well.

In truth, its combat ability had likely surpassed some Type 6 Mutant beasts. However, due to its vessels being larger and

stronger, the amount of energy needed for it to evolve surpassed most others. That was why it had been stuck at the Type 5 bottleneck.

Yue Zhong then kept the blood, claws, flesh and even the spinal fluid into his ring. He made his way towards the altar, observing it carefully.

At the center of the altar, there were many runes engraved, filled with a mysterious and ancient aura.

He continued to take a good look, before pulling out a waterproof camera to take pictures of the runes.

After settling the photographic evidence, with a thought, he produced a clone that went forward to stretch out his hand and grabbed the pearl.

The moment the pearl ended in Yue Zhong's clone's hands, the bright moonbeam dispersed, no longer existing.

He could feel that the moment the radiance was gone, it was harder to absorb the light, "It seems like only the altar can help exhibit its maximum effectiveness. No wonder those fellows would put the pearl here. Seems like the altar cannot be damaged."

Yue Zhong then looked at the altar, before keeping the various white flowers nearby into special boxes.

After finishing all these, Yue Zhong then swam back up to shore.

When he broke through the water surface, he looked at the sky, noting 3 Apache Helicopters as well as a heavy carrier. Even though they were a few hundred meters above ground, Yue Zhong could see them clearly.

"Damn it!! That Chinese succeeded!" Aboard the helicopter, Jason, one super-soldier looked down with his Heaven-Seeing Eye ability, before his face suddenly changed, "Oh my god! That Chinese man is Yue Zhong! Shit!! He's pulling out a weapon to attack us!!"

Yue Zhong was pretty famous among the various powerful factions on Earth. Many of them were paying attention to Yue Zhong's information. After all, he was the most powerful within China right now, having fought back the arms of the Kingdom of God a few times. Some of the spies planted in the Kingdom of God by the American forces had given information back to them.

Most of the peak experts in America already knew of Yue Zhong's might. A Super Evolver that could contend with the 12 Apostles, there were not many like him in America either, only 2 others. Since Yue Zhong could fend off the Apostles, he was naturally paid attention to.

Hearing Jason's words, the rest of the super soldiers had ugly expressions. Not a single one of them possessed the ability of flight. Should the helicopter fall, they would all perish.

From the past records of Yue Zhong's battles, destroying a helicopter hundreds of meters in the air was not a problem. He was known to be a marksman as well.

Cleo immediately roared, "Lime!! Tell him we have no hostile intentions!!"

Lime, a black soldier, immediately roared out downwards, "Hey!! Mr. Yue Zhong!! We're people from the Superhuman Alliance in America!! We've come this time to see if we can work together with China, to fend off the invaders!! Don't attack us!!"

Lime had the ability to broadcast his soundwaves, thus amplifying the signal over a hundred meters. His voice traveled clearly towards Yue Zhong's ears.

"America's Superhuman Alliance?" Yue Zhong frowned slightly and lowered his Electromagnetic Cannon.

The information network of the new Chinese government was still lacking. After all, Yue Zhong was different from the Kingdom of God and had built his faction up from scratch. Due to the

inconvenience of information, it was tough even for information flow within the country, not to mention abroad.

However, with the help of the Puppet Runes, many Kingdom of God personnel had been turned into his puppets, and Yue Zhong had obtained plenty of useful information from them.

Yue Zhong had learned about the other 4 major powers in the world, namely England, the Kingdom of God, America as well as the new China.

As for the other countries, most of them had been swallowed by the Kingdom of God. While they might have resisted slightly, it was futile in the end.

Africa had become a region fought over by England as well as the Kingdom of God.

In the Middle East, England and the Kingdom of God each had a territory, with England holding a majority. India was also under the Kingdom of God.

Russia, a superpower before the apocalypse, had been largely conquered by the zombies due to the presence of the intelligent evolved zombies.

Australia was originally controlled by the Kingdom of God, but their forces there had been wiped out by the Mutant Beasts, and the place was now overrun by beasts.

The American continent had been united, but the Kingdom of God still sent many troops to infiltrate and occupy many areas within.

The rest of the countries were either overrun by zombies or split into many factions. No one else could match the current great 4.

Of them, the Kingdom of God had the largest reach and troops. However, due to its battlefronts stretching out for so many areas, there were many times where they fought losing battles. There was no doubt about their might nonetheless.

The Superhuman Alliance was truly one of the strongest factions in America. It was made up of most of the super Evolved over there, with the intentions of protecting America. They were active in resisting the Kingdom of God as well as zombies. Due to the huge legacy left behind from prior to the apocalypse, they had plenty of capital to resist the Kingdom of God.

Since these people were from that alliance, Yue Zhong did not want to engage in an all-out war if possible.

The Vampires and Flesh-Eaters of the 2nd World were already upon them. With such invaders, having an additional ally was better.

"He kept his cannon!" Lime saw Yue Zhong retract his weapon and heaved a sigh of relief.

Hearing those words, everyone else in the aircraft relaxed. They did not wish to perish in a foreign land.

Just then, Lime's expression fell once more, "Shit, the Type 5 Green Cat is coming again!"

Lime was only at the Type 4 realm, but he could catch the movements of the Type 5 Green Cat with some difficulty. He noticed it slaughtering the entire special forces battalion, as it made its way towards Yue Zhong.

"What?"

Hearing Lime's words, the soldiers all stepped forward to look out.

Yue Zhong just kept his weapon when he felt a sense of danger. He activated his Dark Dou Qi and brought his fist across the air, punching towards his right.

There had been nothing there when suddenly, a lithe figure appeared. The Type 5 Green Cat had not expected Yue Zhong's reaction to be this terrifying, and was struck by his fist, sent flying out a few meters.

In the air, Lime exclaimed in shock, "Holy shit! Did my eyes go bad? A human could actually punch a Type 5 Beast and send it flying?! Is he still human!?"

Cleo sighed, "No wonder. He truly is something to have built a faction up and conquered $\frac{1}{3}$ of China. Even the Kingdom of God had suffered under his rule."

Chapter 981: Suppressing the Type 5 Mutant Beast!

Rosie looked at Yue Zhong with a hint of excitement, "Say, who is stronger between him and Leo?"

Leo was the strongest hero within the Superhuman Alliance, a genius of America. Before the apocalypse, he was just like the 12 Apostles, a person with supernatural abilities. After the world changed, his abilities underwent a huge evolution. As the Kingdom of God led their forces to defeat a few American factions, Leo had stepped up to form the Superhuman Alliance, defeating those invaders. It helped America regain their footing, recovering the various lost bases, finally becoming one of the current superpowers.

Susan, another blond with a pair of huge boobs and exquisite features had a look of adoration on her face, "Brother Leo is the strongest!"

Cleo spoke up with confidence, "Leo had gained a secret treasure from the 3rd World and has likely crossed the Type 5 Divine Warrior realm. However, even he might not necessarily defeat those Type 5 Mutant Beasts below. Therefore, I believe that without the usage of any trump cards, Yue Zhong would win. But, if Leo used his trump card, Yue Zhong would definitely die."

"Leo eh? I should meet him if I have the chance." While the American soldiers were discussing in the skies, they did not expect the contents of their conversation to be overheard by Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong glanced in the direction of the Mutant Green Cat that had been blown away by him. With a flash, he leaped towards its direction.

In that instant, he had appeared in front of the beast, his right hand flying towards the Mutant Green Cat like a cannon.

The Mutant Green Cat was proud of its speed, however, it was helpless and could not dodge Yue Zhong's attack. A ferocious light flashed past its eyes, as it tried to meet his fist with its own claw.

Although humanoid Type 5 Mutant Beasts did not have the strength that other behemoth-types had, they were still strong, exceeding Type 5 and even some Type 6 Divine Warriors of other species.

As their fists met, there was a loud sound of impact. The ground beneath the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat cracked, with half its leg stuck. There was a look of shock in its eyes, as it realized that this human's flesh physique was stronger than itself.

"A Type 5 Mutant Beast is truly strong. If any other Type 5 Divine Warrior were to take on this fist of mine, their bones and veins would likely shatter."

Yue Zhong saw how the Mutant Green Cat met his assault and was also slightly taken aback. However, he continued to exert his Dark Dou Qi as he threw another punch.

The Type 5 Green Cat could only block the hits but was slammed into the ground by Yue Zhong's relentless assault, blood flowing out of its orifices.

Lime was shocked as he exclaimed, "Holy smokes. He's actually suppressing the Type 5 humanoid Mutant Beast using purely his physique. That's too freaking monstrous man!"

When the various members heard that, their expressions were filled with shock.

Cleo turned his complicated gaze downwards, as he spoke, "I had

thought that the Kingdom of God had exaggerated Yue Zhong's capability. Seems like those people should be executed. His strength exceeded whatever they made it out to be. If we had taken him on with that wrong info, it would have been a catastrophe."

A few of them nodded silently, agreeing with his words.

America was a practical country, with its foreign affairs policies being extremely dynamic. It had always been for the sake of the country. They would dictate weaker factions, while using sanctions against bigger powers, sometimes even threatening force.

If the new China was a weak power, then, after America had stabilized itself, it would not hesitate to overthrow China. However, if China was strong, then America would quickly change roles and seek a cooperation.

If a country was weak, then its ties with others would be nonexistent, only being food for others to devour.

After witnessing Yue Zhong's might, Cleo and the rest let go of the arrogance they held onto since Leo had brought the technology back from the 3rd World. They now viewed China as a power on equal footing.

A Type 6 Divine Warrior was able to wreak havoc on Earth. Only a nuclear weapon could possibly pose a threat to such an existence.

Selena saw how Yue Zhong toyed with the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat, her body trembling as her eyes gleamed with excitement, "Strong!! He's too strong!! That is a Type 5 Mutant Beast, and he actually suppressed it! With his help, we definitely can overthrow the Kingdom of God!"

Yue Zhong sent out over a thousand punches, with extreme viciousness, pummeling the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat till it bled everywhere.

Its defense was finally blown apart by Yue Zhong, and it was sent flying through the air, breaking through a number of towering trees, before smashing into a boulder heavily. The impact even caused the boulder to be destroyed, as it spat out a mouthful of blood.

Yue Zhong took a deep breath, before disappearing and reappearing in front of the Mutant Green Cat.

The Type 5 Mutant Green Cat let out a purr, with a pleading look, "Meow!!"

After becoming a Type 6 Divine Warrior, Yue Zhong's perception was heightened, and he could sense the plea from the Mutant Green Cat. He stopped his fist right in front of its head, coldly declaring, "You want me to stop? Sure, but don't resist and become my pet. Otherwise, I'll kill you and retrieve your nucleus."

He then waved his hand, activating the Tamed Beast technique, sending a bright light into its head.

The Type 5 Mutant Green Cat maintained obedience and allowed the technique to enter its body.

While the strength of a humanoid Mutant Beast was weaker than those beast-types, their intelligence was higher. This Type 5 Mutant Green Cat could understand Yue Zhong and was willing to oblige, thus allowing the technique to be imprinted on it.

The glow of the technique radiated for a while before dissipating. At that moment, Yue Zhong could sense the connection between it and himself clearly. The Type 5 Mutant Green Cat had truly become his summoned Beast.

"Meow~!"

After establishing that connection, the Type 5 Mutant Green Cat pounced on Yue Zhong and stuck out its tongue to lick his face, expressing its affection.

"Holy shit!! He actually subdued a Type 5 Mutant Beast."

"Heavens, that was unbelievable."

"..."

In the sky, Cleo and the rest watched with their eyes wide-open.

What was a Type 5 Mutant Beast? On Earth, if such a beast was to go on a rampage, a small country could be destroyed easily.

Cleo and the rest could make use of weapons to kill a Type 5 Mutant Beast, or in the earlier instance, the 3 because they were distracted by the moonbeam as well as the other Mutant Beasts. Thus, their defenses had been lowered, that was how they could have gained an advantage.

If it were in another setting, even with their advanced technology, they would not dare to pick a fight with a humanoid Type 5 Mutant Beast.

Yue Zhong ruffled the Green Cat's brain and chuckled, "From now on, I'll call you Green Cat!"

Green Cat revealed a look of contentment as it purred, "Meow~~!"

Yue Zhong then eyed the sky and declared coldly, "Come on down."

His voice was not loud, but it traveled the few hundred meters, ringing clearly by the ears of those in the sky, cause them to all falter.

Cleo immediately gave the order, "Descend!"

The American helicopters immediately made their way down.

Cleo walked up to Yue Zhong and reached out his hand warmly,

"How do you do, Leader Yue Zhong. I'm the commander of the 7th Squad in the Superhuman Alliance, Cleo. I'm honored to meet you."

Yue Zhong shook his hand in return and replied indifferently, "Hello."

Cleo continued to praise him, before getting straight to the point, "Leader Yue Zhong, you're truly something. We've heard of your feats in America, and you have taught those Germans from the Kingdom of God a lesson. It does make us Americans happy. Oh yes, what did you get in the lake, can you show us?"

A number of curious gazes immediately fell upon Yue Zhong, the soldiers of the Superhuman Alliance were all eager to know.

Yue Zhong rejected, "That's classified information."

He had not yet determined what the pearl could do, thus, he would not let them look at it so easily. This was to maintain an aura of mystery.

No matter what, Yue Zhong had to keep some trump cards, otherwise, the enemy would know how to counter him.

Cleo immediately put on an apologetic expression, "My bad, I got too curious."

Yue Zhong replied, "No problem. This is not a suitable place to talk, let's head to my base."

Cleo agreed quickly, "Sure!"

Shangguan Qing Cheng had already left the region long ago.

Yue Zhong and Selena boarded the helicopter, and he directed the rest towards the county where his forces were waiting.

Outside the county, there was a dense horde of zombies that

stretched out for miles.

When the helicopter got close, Yue Zhong pointed to the county and said, "It's right there."

Lime saw the zombies and felt his scalp go numb, "Oh my god, those are zombies!! Your base is in their midst?! Are you for real?!"

Cleo's face was also ugly, but he maintained his manners, "Leader Yue Zhong, you must be pulling our legs. How can there be live people within a zombie horde?"

Jason, with his Heaven-Seeing Eyes, quickly exclaimed, "Lights!! What the hell?! There are lights down there!! Cleo, the county has people!!"

The pilot had a look of incredulity as he threw the transmitter over, "Head!! There was a warning from below. If we continue to fly, they will attack us! They are people from the China Central Army! Yue Zhong, you talk to them."

At the same time, 6 Thunder Fighters flew out from the county, heading for them.

The Thunder Fighter was the most advanced aerial weapon right now, and 6 of them were enough to destroy this American fleet.

Yue Zhong received the transmitter and spoke into it, "It's me, Yue Zhong. These aircraft are not the enemy."

A voice full of vigor came from the other end, "Yes! Leader! Please allow our Falcon 2nd Squad to escort you."

Yue Zhong did not refuse, "Ok!"

The 6 Thunder Fighters flew over quickly, covering the flanks of

the aircraft.

Lime saw the aircraft and his eyes were filled with envy, as he asked Yue Zhong, "Thunder Fighters. Those things are even fiercer than our Apaches. Their defenses are also high, known to be the Kingdom of God's trump cards. These fellows have given us a hard time. Yue Zhong, how did you obtain such machines in good condition?"

The Thunder Fighters were advanced technology and were basically tanks in the skies. They could bring with them devastating ammunition and used to obliterate enemies.

Over 20,000 Americans had died under these war machines. Even experts from the Superhuman Alliance were not spared. Thus, Lime had a strong impression of them.

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "You just have to kill their pilots."

Seeing Yue Zhong unwilling to answer, Lime did not question further. He turned to look out at the zombies below him, feeling his hair stand once more. He then looked at Yue Zhong with a strange gaze, "This fellow, is he someone instated by the evolved zombies?"

Seeing the huge horde, the members of the Superhuman Alliance could not control their expressions, as they looked at Yue Zhong with fear, afraid that he was a puppet installed by the intelligent zombies.

Chapter 982: Alliance!

Amidst the palpitating wait, the fleet landed in the county. When they saw the human populace, Cleo and the rest relaxed.

Within a luxurious villa in the county.

Yue Zhong sat on the sofa as he addressed Cleo, "Why did the American government send you guys and not some diplomatic envoy?"

Between countries, it was a norm to send foreign diplomats and not a special force like this group of superhuman soldiers.

Cleo shrugged and chuckled, "Yue Zhong, I'm an actual diplomat. If you don't believe me, you can confirm with America. Under the recent circumstances, you know that if those normal diplomats were to be sent, who knows if they will meet some mishap and die out here. In order to come to China, we have paid a hefty price."

As the current transportation means were not as advanced as prior to the apocalypse, even when the 4 factions had established some form of stability, their relationships were not harmonious, and they were all playing guessing games and probing each other.

America would not just send a random official, if they were not careful, that government official might perish along the way.

Sending Cleo and the rest to China, other than establishing some form of diplomatic contact, they could gather intel and carry out their secret mission: steal some treasures from China.

Yue Zhong replied directly, "Then what's your motive for coming here?"

Cleo's eyes narrowed as he spoke, "Our country hopes to enter an alliance with China. Leader Yue Zhong, you must know that the Gates of Hell have opened. The Saint Clan of the 2nd World has begun their invasion. Other than them, other worlds would invade as well after some time. Only by working together, and pooling our

strength, will the human race be able to defend our Earth."

Yue Zhong remained impassive, "Alliance? What are the terms?"

Cleo put on a smile, "After we enter the alliance, we hope to share technology. We will release our knowledge of information technology, steel, and optics. We hope that China can share your laser technology, Sky Fortress, as well as electromagnetic weapons. Beyond that, we can also sign an agreement to attack the Kingdom of God together."

When Yue Zhong heard those words, he laughed coldly.

Cleo's proposition was to use the technology from before the world ended to exchange with Yue Zhong's technology obtained from the system. If Yue Zhong agreed, America would have gotten the long end of the stick.

He replied mildly, "Forget about sharing technology. I can consider attacking the Kingdom of God together."

Yue Zhong had already obtained a huge load of technology that far surpassed that of Earth from the 3rd World. With enough time, China's technology would rise rapidly. He was no longer interested in anything from America. However, he was not closed off to working together to eradicate the Kingdom of God.

The Kingdom of God's reach was far too wide and vast, siphoning resources from everywhere. Yue Zhong intended to curb and cut back on that level of influence and reach.

Hearing Yue Zhong turn down the offer to share technology, the sexy American Susan shot him a disdainful look, "Yue Zhong, it is now a moment of peril for us humans. At this time, we should all be working together. We share our resources and develop together, fighting off the invaders. Your action and behavior are too selfish."

"Selfish?" Yue Zhong laughed hollowly, before his gaze turned frosty, "Before the apocalypse, your country tried to shut down all forms of technology blockade against us. You didn't allow

technology to flow back here and prevented us from learning anything. Isn't that selfish? Furthermore, your offer of past technology to exchange for my advanced technology, and you expect me to agree? Brainless big-breasted idiot."

Susan was also a woman with a fiery temper. She flared, and reached for her pouch, "You dare mock me?"

Those on the frontlines usually had some form of temper. They had to kill often, thus that killing intent had been ingrained.

The moment she moved, there was a gust of wind as a pair of claws clenched around her throat, filled with killing intent, causing her to be drenched in cold perspiration, not daring to move.

When Susan moved, Cleo and the rest had thought to act as well. Unfortunately, there was a swish and multiple laser guns were pointed at them. The moment they made a move, they would be punctured full of holes.

A dense killing intent filled the room. The moment Yue Zhong gave the order, Cleo and the rest would be killed. Even if they were Type 4 experts, there was no way of getting out of this one.

Cleo hurried to explain in cold sweat, "It was a misunderstanding, it's all a misunderstanding! Leader Yue Zhong, we have no ill intentions!"

The reality of the apocalypse was cruel, and human lives were as cheap as ants. If things went awry, it was common for killing to happen. If Yue Zhong decided to be vicious, their entire part would be wiped out.

Furthermore, America would not cause a ruckus because of their death. After all, they had to contend with the zombies, the Kingdom of God. They were no longer like America from prior. Furthermore, since the world was dangerous, overrun with Mutant Beasts, how would they know if Cleo's team was wiped out

by Mutant Beasts or Yue Zhong.

Yue Zhong waved his hand, and the guns were lowered.

Green Cat also released its grip around Susan's neck, settling comfortably by Yue Zhong's side.

Susan looked at Green Cat with fear in her eyes and cold sweat down her back. She had seen how Green Cat had wiped out the entire Special Forces team. That sort of speed and ferocity left a deep impression on her.

Cleo adjusted his emotions and spoke, "Leader Yue Zhong, the Sky Fortress, Electromagnetic Cannons and Laser Guns are all technology that is important to us. Without it, we would have no means of defending against the invasions. What would it take for you to share the technology with us?"

That technology could be considered as way beyond today's context. If an ordinary soldier was equipped with an electromagnetic gun, then they would have the means of killing L-Types and other Type 4 Divine Warriors. The Sky Fortress was also a war machine capable of contending with other Type 5 Mutant Beasts.

With America's production facilities, once they gained such technology, they would progress fast and gain the ability to defend against the Saint Clan's invasion.

Yue Zhong flipped his hand, and the Sniper Cannon used by Cleo's team, relying on a Type 5 Mutant Beast Nucleus to kill the Type 5 Mutant Beasts at the lake, appeared, "Use technology of the same level to do an exchange. Don't try to bullshit me that you guys don't have such technology."

Cleo and the rest had abandoned the 4 of such weapons when they were killing the Type 5 Mutant Beasts. 2 had been destroyed by Green Cat, while 2 had been kept by Yue Zhong.

Cleo saw the Sniper Cannon and his face fell, "I'll have to check

with my superiors. Leader Yue Zhong, this Destruction Sniper Cannon is a classified weapon of the United States, can you return it to us? Otherwise, it might affect the relationship between our countries."

The Destruction Sniper Cannon could utilize Type 5 Nuclei and was a technology brought back by Leo from the other worlds. It could take out a Type 5 Mutant Beast. In order to obtain the treasure in the lake, they had brought out a total of 6. Now that they have lost 4, they would have to answer back home.

Yue Zhong replied mildly, "I'm going to research it, once I'm done, I will return it to you."

Hearing this, Susan and the rest had a look of fury.

Cleo's face remained unchanged, as he smiled, "Since this is the case, please go ahead."

Both sides exchanged a few sentences, Cleo then led his subordinates away.

Once they left the room, Susan exploded with dissatisfaction, "Boss!! Why did you give in?! That's our item!!"

The rest of the Superhuman soldiers also looked towards Cleo with the same look.

Cleo's face turned dark, "We are in their territory if he insists on not returning it, what can we do? Snatch it back? Huh? Susan?"

Hearing this, they all turned quiet.

Susan was still disgruntled, "Boss, are we just going to let it go? The alliance only has 15 of those Destruction Sniper Cannons. Now that we lost 4, we will have to deal with shit once we go back."

Cleo replied with a dark look, "Of course not. We have to get the alliance pushed through first. Once we have that, we can muscle them to return it. We can only suck it up this time."

Lime and the rest thought about and realized that there was no

chance. Against someone who could even tame a Type 5 Mutant Beast, going against him would only mean death.

The moment Cleo and the rest left, Yue Zhong summoned Selena over.

Yue Zhong spoke, "I want to know the current situation of your India Rebel Forces. Speak only the truth, if I discover that you're lying, then there's no need for cooperation."

"Yes!"

Selena turned serious and began to explain things in India.

Chapter 983: The Arrival of the Saint Clan!

India was already termed as a base of the Kingdom of God. There were many granaries that they used to control the majority of the survivors there. Under the Kingdom of God's rule, the Indian people became workers and soldiers.

At the start, there were many survivors that tried to rebel, only to be suppressed by the elites from the Kingdom of God. After that, due to the threat and fear, many became obedient and worked for them.

The Kingdom of God had the military might to protect their bases and build structures. At the same time, they used the rations to control the Indian people to work for them, while using many methods to cause friction between the Indian people, causing strife and conflict, controlling them tightly.

The Kingdom of God might claim to control the whole of India, but in truth, they had only occupied 3 important industrial areas. Within India, there were still many zombies, and countless factions with small-time warlords. It was just that these small factions were too weak to pose a threat to the Kingdom of God, that they could not be bothered.

However, the zombie threat was real, their numbers large, and the Kingdom of God was not willing to send their troops out. They focused their might on defense, while deploying their soldiers out from time to time. These soldiers would take out the smaller factions, while capturing the inhabitants and survivors to add to their own survivor pool.

Selena was part of the organization called the India Rebel Forces, boasting 20,000 survivors and 3,000 soldiers. Their aim and objective was to drive out the invaders and revive India.

Although they had 3,000 soldiers, in the fights against the Kingdom of God, they lost more battles than they cared to count.

Coupled with the lack of food and ammunition, their current situation was incredibly tough.

Due to the consecutive losses, more traitors started to emerge, defecting over to the Kingdom of God's side.

In fact, they had suffered so much, all that was left were 20,000 of devoted believers with the resolution to drive out the Kingdom of God. However, it was not enough to go on faith alone. They needed ammunition, resources, experts. It was tough to continue.

After hearing what she had to say, Yue Zhong asked impassively, "What will I gain by supporting you guys?"

Selena's face broke out into an attractive smile, "If you support us, you'll gain the friendship of all of India. Our people will remember your grace, and we will note down your contributions in our future books to glorify your deeds. Furthermore, with us as a bottleneck, the Kingdom of God would not be able to attack you from our direction."

Yue Zhong chuckled, "You sure know how to speak. Fine, I will support you with 2,000 rifles, 100 tonnes of rice, and 300,000 rounds of ammunition. I will also send an instructor to train your soldiers."

The Kingdom of God had caused its fair share of problems for Yue Zhong in China. They had also snatched up quite a bit of resources.

Yue Zhong could not do anything to the headquarters based in Europe, but he did not mind borrowing the Indians to give them a harsh blow. It would be best if both sides could be weakened from their clash.

Selena had an excited look as she bowed respectfully, "Many thanks, Leader, for your grace and help! All of our people will forever remember this!"

Yue Zhong then waved his hands, "You may leave."

Selena's eyes gleamed as she stood up and started to shake her hips a little. Smiling coyly, "Leader, I can dance very well, shall I dance a traditional Indian dance for you?"

"Get lost, don't get close to Father."

At this time, there was an enraged shout. Selena went blank when she saw the beautiful girl in a white dress burrowing into Yue Zhong's embrace. Her eyes were filled with a bloodshot look, emitting a killing intent that caused Selena to break out in cold sweat.

Seeing Yin Shuang agitated, Yue Zhong waved his hand towards Selena, "Just go."

"Understood!"

Selena then hurried out the door.

Yin Shuang hugged Yue Zhong's arms tightly, rubbing with her bountiful peaks, as she pouted, "Father! Father! Father! Next time, you must bring me!! Yin Shuang doesn't like to leave Father."

Yue Zhong could feel the soft yet bouncy breasts of Yin Shuang, and felt a heat rising in his heart. He quickly pulled out the moonbeam pearl obtained from the lake, "Fine, fine! Look! This is what I got from the lake."

The moment the pearl was pulled out, it began to radiate with moonlight in all directions.

If the moonlight could be utilized, it would help many humans become stronger.

At the moment he took it out, Yin Shuang's eyes were drawn to the pearl, revealing a look of longing.

Yue Zhong had just took in a few beams, when he suddenly felt his arm become lighter. His eyes snapped open, only to see Yin Shuang swallowing the pearl.

Yue Zhong shouted out in dismay, "No! Yin Shuang!!"

However, it was too late. By the time he exclaimed out, Yin Shuang had already swallowed it.

Immediately, her body started to radiate with a pure moonlight that wrapped around her. Yin Shuang also closed her eyes, allowing the moonbeams to coil around her.

In the end, the moonbeams formed a silverish cocoon that enveloped her entirely, while beating in a strange manner.

"She's evolving."

Yue Zhong stared at the cocoon, his facial expression strange, unsure whether to feel sad or happy.

Yin Shuang was already at the peak of Type 5, with such a powerful energy fluctuation, it was likely that she was going to reach the Type 6 realm. By that time, there would be 2 Type 6 Divine Warriors in Yue Zhong's camp.

However, with her swallowing the moonbeam pearl, it caused his plan of grooming many experts to be dashed.

He sighed, and consoled himself, "Forget it, since she already ate it, forget it. I'd have gained another Type 6 expert, it could be considered a gain."

Seeing Yin Shuang's condition, Yue Zhong stayed in the county, continuing to command troops from his center while protecting Yin Shuang.

In a valley within Brazil, a Gate of Hell opened, as a number of vehicles rolled out.

Numerous good-looking Flesh-Eaters and Vampires with perfect physiques and a hint of bloodlust in their eyes sat within these vehicles, arriving on Earth.

Other than that valley, there were 50 other doors as well. Humans carrying resources, Flesh-Eaters, Vampires, and Mechs, they all came out from the various gates.

A handsome, red-haired Flesh-Eater came in front of another vehicle fleet, speaking to a blond-haired, blue-eyed man, "Laurel, you guys are finally here."

Laurel's face had a cruel expression, as he licked his lips, "Kasper, I want to drink fresh blood."

Kasper laughed excitedly, "Sure, I've discovered a few human bases. Let us go hunt till we're satisfied. In order to capture them all, I've endured the wait for so long. Let's go!"

Under his lead, Laurel and his 1,000-strong unit came to a human base.

The human base had constructed a 6m-tall city wall all around, with pits dug outside. 8 black soldiers wielded rifles as they defended the entrance.

When Kasper and the rest appeared, the people inside the base quickly reacted, sealing the entrance. Soldiers also began to fill up their posts.

On the city wall, one of the soldier roarer out, "Hey!! Stop, or we'll open fire!"

Kasper's eyes shone with a sadistic glint. With a flash, he appeared right in front of the soldier in a few breaths. He then waved his hand and slashed the head of the soldier off. He then opened his mouth wide, devouring it in full view of all the other soldiers present.

"Freak!!!"

"Kill it!!"

"..."

The survivor base plunged into chaos immediately, as the soldiers began to fire their weapons at Kasper.

As Kasper ate, he laughed sadistically, turning into a hurricane. Everywhere he went, the soldiers would lost their heads.

Laurel was also a Type 4 expert. He led 200 Flesh-Eaters at the speed of sound, dashing through the region, and leaped up the city wall. They then began a massacre within.

"Damn monsters!! Go to hell!!"

The experts within the base roared out and wielded their weapons to attack Kasper.

With a twist of his body, he dodged the attacks easily, appearing beside one of those experts and grabbed at his head.

The headless corpse of the human expert slumped to the ground.

Chapter 984: Enter the Rebel Forces!

The moment the human experts within the survivor base died, there was no one else capable enough to withstand the cruel Saint Clan members.

Screams and wails rang out everywhere. The base had become a terrible hell.

The soldiers that Laurel had thoroughly surrounded the camp, not allowing a single human to flee. Within minutes, the enter 5,000 population had fallen under the savage massacre, with dismembered limbs and organs strewn all over the ground, while handsome warriors in uniform were gorging themselves on the flesh and blood.

Brazil was soon devastated by the invasion of the advance troops of the Saint Clan.

The various troops of Brazil stepped through the Gates of Hell, under the lead of their experts, ravaging through the various bases, and brought hell upon the human survivor camps.

At the center of Brazil, within one of the Gates of Hell, 5 men and 1 women stepped out slowly.

The leader was a man who had his long hair tied up in a ponytail, his looks dashing and even more good-looking than the fairest maiden. He wore a black combat uniform, with a long red cape. His eyes were closed as he took a deep breath, "So this is Earth? It truly seems to be a haven for evolution. I can sense the vitality and life here. My cells that have stopped evolving long ago are moving once more. On this Earth, I can definitely breakthrough the Type 6 realm within 2 years."

The rest of the party immediately congratulated him with respect, "Congratulations, Saint King Anselm. We wish you the best and success in your breakthrough to becoming a Saint

Emperor."

This man with a ponytail was one of the 4 Saint Kings, Saint King Anselm.

He laughed lightly, his gaze turning towards the distance, while he thought silently, "Maybe I don't even need a year. As long as I can catch another human expert with the God and Devil Imprint, swallowing it, I can definitely break through and evolve on the spot."

Another Type 5 Saint Clan member, Danny, asked, "Saint King Anselm, our hated enemy Yue Zhong is in China. Why not just attack them directly, instead of coming to Brazil?"

There were many Gates of Hell located throughout the 2nd World, leading to different parts of Earth. Danny was filled with hatred for Yue Zhong and did not understand why Anselm chose Brazil instead of China.

Anselm replied calmly, "Yue Zhong has a solid foundation over here. Before the Saint Emperor arrives, we might not be his match. Therefore, the urgent objective is to establish a kingdom first, providing a space for our troops behind to arrive safely. We can then take over the world bit by bit."

Anselm and the various experts of the Saint Clan were wary towards Yue Zhong, unwilling to clash directly with him. That was why they chose Brazil as their starting point.

Danny nodded, "Understood."

Anselm then gave an order, "It's good that you understand. Go gather the zombies, they will be our strongest weapons of war."

"Yes!"

The 5 Ancestors replied and with a flash, they disappeared from their location.

Vampires and Flesh-Eaters were the offsprings of the Ancestors

evolved from zombies and humans, or between Ancestors themselves.

An ordinary Vampire and Flesh-Eater might not have the ability to control zombies. Only those with the inborn talent, or those who entered Earth and had a miracle, breaking through the Type 4 or Type 5 realm, would they gain the ability to command zombies.

Furthermore, those Ancestors from hundreds of years ago had reached a different level of control over zombies. It was not the same as Jiang Sheng as the rest, who had only recently evolved and their ability to control their fellow comrades still lacking

The 5 Ancestors spread out and traveled through Brazil, gathering those zombies. The various intelligent evolved zombies were either persuaded to serve them or were instantly killed before their hordes were snatched.

Slowly, all the zombies in Brazil were gathered together.

Over in Nepal, a Gate of Hell opened, as droves of humans came out in vehicles, entering Earth.

One of them was decked in a black Type 5 Storm Battle Armor, her black hair flowing, looking extremely valiant as she stepped out of the gate, flanked by her 8 equally beautiful subordinates.

This beauty was none other than Luo Qing Qing. She closed her eyes to sense the abundant energy of Earth, and thought quietly, "Is this where Yue Zhong came from? What pure energy! On this planet, it would take at most another 10 years for me to break through to the Type 6 realm."

Floxa, dressed in a military uniform and looking extremely adorable, stared towards the distance, her eyes heated, "Brother Yue Zhong, wait for me, I will find you soon."

Luo Chen had also walked out and surveyed the surroundings, "Is this Earth? It is beautiful. I hope that this planet would not be devastated by the nuclear attacks."

The 2nd World had been crushed after the nuclear war happened, causing radiation throughout the entire planet. Dust and waste were everywhere, with very few places that had the rare chances of peeking through the perpetual layer of dust.

The 2nd World might be more vast than Earth, but the living things on it were much lesser. At the same time, the lifespan of the humans there were shorted, living to an average of 40. By that time, due to the consumption of radiated water, and breathing in the toxic air, they would either mutate or die of health complications.

"Is this Earth?"

"Sunlight! That's sunlight!!"

"There's grass and trees here!! This is so beautiful!! I love this world!!"

"This is great!! There's no radiation here!!! I love this world!!"

"..."

The rebel soldiers of the 2nd World that had stepped out of the Gates of Hell saw the scenery of Earth and were moved. Many of them kneeled down in their emotions and began to mutter with tear-streaked faces.

Compared to Earth, the 2nd World was practically hell.

In front of the soldiers, Luo Chen roared out loud to raise their morale, "From today onwards, this is our new home!! Let us work hard to protect our home!! This time, we have the guidance of Leader Yue Zhong! We have to defeat those damned Flesh-Eaters and Vampires!! Long live Leader Yue Zhong!!"

"Long live Leader Yue Zhong!"

"Long live Leader Yue Zhong!"

"..."

The human soldiers of the rebel forces from the 2nd World began

to scream out in fervor. They had been oppressed for so long by the Saint Clan. Under Yue Zhong's lead, they had managed to extract themselves from the underground and began to live. Coming to this beautiful Earth, they had started to idolize Yue Zhong and were filled with reverence for him.

"A bunch of fools!

A few of the commanders from the 3rd World who had been sent out looked at the soldiers coldly, while thinking silently. They were not as blindly devoted and loyal to Yue Zhong.

Floxenia looked at them coldly and a powerful killing intent emerged, "You scum are the true fools. Once Brother Yue Zhong is back, I will wipe you all out."

Before they stepped foot on Earth, Luo Chen had sent out some elite soldiers to scout the way. Under their lead, the huge army began to surge out and conquered Nepal in various directions.

This army that was mixed with elites from the 2nd and 3rd world had countless human experts at the Type 5 realm. Any zombie horde that they came across was easily crushed, at the same time, they quickly gathered the various small human factions and controlled them.

China.

Under Jiang Sheng and Gui Can's lead, the hordes were constantly attacking other hordes, gobbling up their zombies

Over at Hebei, there were still 2 huge zombie hordes over a million strong each. They seemed to know what was happening and they quickly led their own hordes out of Hebei, retreating towards Shan Xi, combining with them.

After recovering Hebei, Yue Zhong stopped his expansion, instead, cleaning up the scattered zombies all around Hebei. At the same time, he deployed the 700,000 human survivors found in Hebei to begin recuperation and work.

There had been over 70 million people in Hebei before the apocalypse, however, after the 2 cruel years of the apocalypse, only about 1% was left.

Inside a villa, a middle-aged man with a deep gaze and high nose, his hair blue and his eyes gray, sat opposite Yue Zhong on a sofa.

This middle-aged man spoke without being overbearing nor servile, "How do you do, Leader Yue Zhong. I'm the foreign affairs minister Lekov, it's an honor to meet you."

Initially, the Russian Empire had sent out Alexei, but his luck was bad, the airplane attacked by Mutant Beasts when it was flying over Outer Mongolia.

After that rude shock, the Russian Empire recovered and sent out a few different ministers, only for them to perish at the jaws of the various Mutant Beasts outside their territory.

In the end, only this Lekov, a Type 3 Divine Warrior, managed to reach China successfully.

Chapter 985: Yue Zhong's conditions!

Yue Zhong glanced at Lekov, and spoke sharply, "Russian Empire? You're here this time to pay damages?"

The Russian Empire had joined hands with the 4 other factions to attack China under the directive of the Kingdom of God. Had Yue Zhong not gotten back in time, his empire would have been severely undermined. He did not have a favorable impression of the Russians. If he did not have so many things to handle and worry about the possibility of a nuclear weapon in the Russian Empire, he would have brought his troops to attack them.

Hearing his sharp words, Lekov continued without skipping a beat, "I personally feel apologetic for the unhappy events between our 2 countries. However, the main cause of this misunderstanding was the Kingdom of God. Our esteemed Tsar does not wish for our countries to abandon the friendship and alliance. We hope that we can work together to deal with the Kingdom of God as well as other enemies of our human race."

Yue Zhong laughed coldly, "Alliance? Haha, what cunning. The moment we become allies, am I supposed to return the Russian captives to you without any demands?"

The moment they became allies, then the 10,000-strong Russian elites would have to be returned without any compensation.

Furthermore, the Russian Empire could then use that identity to request for aid and help. They were truly ingenious.

Lekov continued in a serene manner, "Sir Yue Zhong. Our expeditionary force was taken down by you the moment they entered China. You did not suffer many losses. If you return our forces to us, you'll gain a barrier against the zombies in the horde. Isn't that much more beneficial to you? Furthermore, to compensate you for your loss, our Russian Empire is willing to return half of Outer Mongolia, everything west of Mandalgori, to

your China, and recognize your sovereignty over the land there."

By now, the whole of Outer Mongolia had fallen to the zombies, and most factions had either fallen to the zombies or were swallowed by the Russian forces. As long as the Russian Empire agreed, China could gain half of Outer Mongolia. Land and sovereignty were extremely important to a country. Lekov believed that this condition would attract Yue Zhong.

"Sovereignty?" Yue Zhong laughed, not moved at all, as his pupils narrowed, "You want me to hand over the captives and ally with the Russian Empire, it's not impossible. I want 600,000 of the farmers from Outer Mongolia that have been captured by you guys."

While the Russian Empire was powerless against the zombie horde, they had considerable might, defeating the countless Outer Mongolian factions. They had captured over 600,000 people, and Yue Zhong had set his sights on them.

Lekov lost his calm at this time, "Impossible!! Leader Yue Zhong, those farmers are already our people. Please consider our proposition again. If you have issues with the size of the territory, we can negotiate."

In this apocalypse, human lives were like ants. Within most small and mid-sized factions, ordinary survivors were treated like trash and ants. However, to the larger factions, humans were crucial to development and expansion.

After the baptism of the apocalypse, Yue Zhong had obtained an additional 700,000 survivors from the Hebei region. In order for it to flourish and grow again, he would need even more people.

As to the land of Outer Mongolia, it was not important to Yue Zhong at all.

He had his hands full with handling China already, he had no further energy nor resources to spare for other places.

Yue Zhong maintained his stance, "No. I want those 600,000 people. If you can't make the decision, go inform your Tsar."

Lekov mulled over for a moment, "If we handed those 600,000 people to you, can you let our men bring their equipment and weapons back? We need a force that can fight urgently."

Yue Zhong replied, "Sure! Other than that, I can even support you with 5,000 rifles, 300,000 rounds of ammunition, 200 tonnes of rations. After our alliance is confirmed, I'm even willing to allow our countries to engage in trade. You can use Mutant Beast nuclei, hide, flesh to exchange weapons, ammunition, and rations."

At this time, Mongolia, Beijing, Guang Xi, Hu Nan, and Vietnam had all regained some form of vitality and were producing ammunition and advanced equipment.

Due to the stability of these regions, the development of China was advancing rapidly. Every day, a huge amount of ammunition and weapons were being manufactured. 5,000 guns and 300,000 rounds of ammunition were peanuts to Yue Zhong.

With this sort of capital, Yue Zhong could promise such aid to the Russian Empire.

Hearing Yue Zhong's words, Lekov's eyes brightened up. What he was interested was not the aid promised, but the opening of trade. That way, they could exchange for plenty of weapons and ammunition.

The Russian Empire lacked a stable base right now, and their ammunition was about to be depleted, and there seemed to be no way to replenish it. If they could maintain this diplomatic relationship with China, trading for resources, they could continue their operations.

Lekov then replied, "The matter is important, please allow me to go and convey your words to my Tsar, and I'll get back to you with

his reply."

Yue Zhong replied indifferently, "Sure!"

Lekov then saluted, before turning around to leave.

When he returned to his room, he quickly used a satellite phone to relay the message to Tsar Andre in Russia, conveying Yue Zhong's words.

When Andre heard Yue Zhong's proposed conditions, his face turned dark. He had originally intended to utilize the 600,000 farmers from Outer Mongolia.

Currently, there were only about a million Russians left in their empire. Without the 600,000 Outer Mongolians as manual labor, to build structures and be put to work, it would be harder for them to expand and develop in the future.

As he mulled over with a sunken expression, he finally gritted his teeth and replied, "Promise him. However, in exchange, there must be an agreement between our countries, no invasions. Get him to provide 10,000 rifles, a million rounds of ammo and 500 tonnes of rations."

After he finished, he seemed to have turned older by a few years, his heart bitter. He was full of regret over his decision to attack Yue Zhong initially.

This was 600,000 people! Furthermore, China had become one of the top 4 powers in the world right now under Yue Zhong's rule. They had factories and research and were developing steadily. Once they obtained the 600,000 people, it would be like giving wings to a tiger. In contrast, the Russian Empire would not be able to develop as smoothly without those 600,000 survivors.

He was full of regret, as he cursed madly, "Damned Germans, damned Yue Zhong!!"

Although he was reluctant, he had no choice but to accept this. This was because it was not so easy to groom those 10,000 Russian

elite soldiers. If they could be returned, their value was higher than 600,000 farmers.

Furthermore, the 10,000 Russian forces were all Russian soldiers, thus they were more important to Andre than the 600,000 Outer Mongolians. If he sacrificed those 10,000 soldiers for 600,000 foreigners, and his people knew, they would lose faith in him. Under such considerations, he had to agree to Yue Zhong's conditions.

Once Andre made the decision, Lekov quickly passed on the message, and both sides drafted out and signed the agreement of their alliance. The counter-offer from Andre was not an issue to Yue Zhong, with the help of his production facilities, it was definitely manageable.

After the signing, both sides began to get to addressing their side of things.

Russian soldiers hoisted their weapons and equipment as they made their way home, while the 600,000 Outer Mongolians were escorted by Russian troops towards China. They cried as they left their homeland.

Yue Zhong had paid attention to the state of railroads as he recovered the various regions, thus, within his territories, transportation was not a hassle.

The moment the 600,000 Outer Mongolians entered China, they were then sent to the various parts of his territory, made to work on reparation and construction projects.

With the addition of manpower, China's development advanced quickly as a result.

After recovering Hebei, Yue Zhong allowed his forces to rest and recuperate, while the various areas in Hunan and Guang Xi stopped all expansion and recovery of territory, instead, focusing on training and rest.

The human forces were not zombies, after all, no matter how elite they were, being in combat for so long will wear them out. They had to rest, or else they would start to fall apart physically and mentally.

This time, Yue Zhong's wide-scale deployment had wiped out over 6 million zombies, at the same time, through Jiang Sheng and Gui Can, they gained over 10 million zombies. The entire Hebei region was in his control, and thus, his faction had expanded a whole lot more.

As they stopped for a while, Yue Zhong continued to practice, while waiting for the new weapons and technology to be produced. He had already obtained research from the 3rd World, handing it to his research department. The moment they received it, they began their studies and the manufacturing process.

A month later, in front of England's capital, London.

A huge horde of zombies was surging towards the armed forces of England. The soldiers were armed to the teeth, with countless heavy tanks, light tanks, IFVs, machine gun-mounted vehicles, assault helicopters, as both sides engaged in a merciless clash.

Chapter 986: England in Peril!

On the battlefield, rounds of cannons were fired without stop, the blasts ringing out loudly.

A number of guided missiles and rockets landed on patches of zombies.

In the sky, there were many heavy helicopters that released countless napalm grenades and explosives, covering the battlefield with fireworks and explosions.

Numerous evolved zombies were blasted into smithereens from the impact of the explosions as well as the raging flames.

One 5m-tall L5 stood among the rest when suddenly, a huge cluster bomb landed right in front of it.

Hong! Hong!

Following the shocking explosions, the L5 was torn apart and ripped into pieces.

In the skies, the aerial zombies were also trying to launch an assault on the English forces. However, faced with the relentless firepower, they were constantly shot down in their futile attempts to get close.

Although the speed of those flying zombies was faster than ordinary aircraft carriers, they were not exactly a match for fighter jets or assault helicopters. Against a fleet of a hundred English jets, they were basically firing targets.

This battle was entirely the zombies using their bodies to resist the steel and weaponry of the human side. Many of them were reduced to bits and pieces, ashes floating away. The English forces, on the other hand, had not yet suffered many casualties. The zombies that managed to get past the suppressing fire would be wiped out by the English elites.

Within a secret command center, a 27-28 young man with blond hair and blue eyes looked at the displays, his eyes revealing a gaze of pride and excitement.

Behind him were a few people seated on a sofa.

One was a young man of about 18 or 19, with piercings and dyed hair, his clothes fashionable, while he embraced 2 beauties beside him. He looked extremely rebellious. Another man was dressed in a pastor's clothes, his hands holding a bible. One was a black man, whose build was large and full of muscles, his gaze cold, while he continued to use a cloth to clean his weapon that used a Type 5 Nucleus, and seemed beyond today's technology. The last was decked in an armor full of profound runes, his looks handsome, while he carried a great sword on his back.

These 4 men on the sofa were the strongest Evolvers in England, named Ackerman, Bolai, Simon, and Arthur.

Arthur, who was the young man in the rune armor, was an existence that could compete with the 1st Apostle of the Kingdom of God, Edward. The rest of the team were also powerful experts with Apostle-like strength.

Because of the 4 of them, England could successfully conquer and recover the various cities. At the same time, they fought back against the Kingdom of God every step of the way.

The young general spoke up, "Ackerman, get ready, the intelligent zombies will be forced to reveal themselves. Once they appear, I will inform you."

Ackerman, the black man wiping his weapon, nodded silently and walked out of the door in a relaxed manner.

Ackerman was the top sniper of England, having killed a few Divine Envoys of the Kingdom of God. Even the Apostles had to be wary of him.

The young man with the 2 beauties beside him laughed lightly, as

he spoke to the young general, "Brendan, seems like we will be back in London in 2 weeks to celebrate."

In order to recover London, the England forces had prepared for nearly a year, gathering their resources and power. They had used up huge amounts of resources from prior to the apocalypse, as well as the equipment manufactured since then. Killing 8 to 9 million zombies was just a matter of time.

Other than deploying their weapons, the English forces numbered over 100,000 soldiers. They were all elites, after the apocalypse, they had continually fought in all battles, and were well-versed in all weapons. At the same time, they had undergone a Job Change in the Newbie Village of the system. Thus, each of them exceeded the might of the special forces from before the apocalypse. Adding on the 4 top Evolvers, the English army had confidence in winning this fight.

Brendan's face was relaxed as he chuckled, "not quite, the 8 million zombies won't be dealt with so easily. In order to annihilate them entirely, it would take at least a month. However, we would have thoroughly recovered London by then. Not only will we regain an important manufacturing base, we can also pull out the long-time thorn in the flesh."

The 8 million zombies in London had always been a source of complaint to the English forces. With the flowing of time, as well as the evolution of the intelligent zombies, the horde had reached a point where they had to be dealt with. Otherwise, they could not deploy their troops anywhere else. The faster they fought this battle, it would be more advantageous and beneficial for the human race.

Brendan then laughed in disdain, "Although the intelligent zombies have evolved a lot, in front of us humans, their weak intelligence is comparable to pigs. If they had continued to stay within and defend or hide in London, it would have been so much more difficult. All we had to do was to attract them and they

actually rushed out to fight with us. It's practically a box-in, they had not improved at all. These fools are merely a bunch of moving flesh to me. It is just that their numbers are too much. That's why it would take more time.

He did not hold the horde in high regard. Although their numbers could be frightening, in the face of a well-equipped and well-prepared army, there's no way for the zombies to retaliate.

This 100,000-strong English force was even stronger than Yue Zhong's at that time he had fought for the capital. They had better weapons as well. The number of their equipment was easily 5 or 6 times that of Yue Zhong's amount.

It was precisely because of this preparation that Brendan was filled with confidence.

At the same time, he was prudent in his deployment of troops. He did not commit all 100,000 directly, instead, putting only 10,000. It allowed him to rotate his forces to wear down the strength of the 8-million strong horde.

The rest of the 90,000 were just reinforcements, prepared to fight anytime.

As the number of zombies was too large, the English forces had to utilize all the weapons, ammo and arsenal they had to deal with many at one time. The lesser soldiers would not impact the long-term objective.

As long as the 10,000 England forces were not surrounded, it would be their victory.

All of a sudden, an intelligence officer shouted out in a pale face, "Not good!! General Brendan, there's a new enemy!! They're attacking us! Oh, no! They're trying to surround us from behind!"

"What?!"

Brendan's face fell, as he rushed to the displays, focusing intently.

He discovered a new horde swiftly making its way behind the English army.

On top of that, the 8 million zombies began to split up and surround the forces.

Once they got surrounded, the 100,000 English forces would die ultimately.

Brendan looked at the few displays and frowned, "Seems like I've underestimated them. Have they learned tactics? We're in trouble this time."

In these 2 years, the humans could continually gain an upper hand because the zombies were stupid. Once they gained intelligence, with their numbers, it was possible to wipe out the human race.

Facing such a threat, Brendan did not lose his cool, as he issued orders, "Convey my orders, begin Plan B."

Under his orders, the 100,000 elites began to move. Under the cover of the fighter jets in the skies, they quickly pulled the distance away from the frontlines, retreating backward.

With his directions, the elite armored troops managed to distance themselves from the horde.

As he heaved a sigh of relief, the intelligence officer suddenly came up with an ashen expression, his voice cracking, "General Brendan, Birmingham had just suffered an attack from some unknown enemy, and has fallen!!"

Brendan's face fell upon hearing this news, and shouted out, "How is that possible? Birmingham has 10,000 soldiers, how could they fall so easily?! Impossible!!"

Birmingham was one of the industrial cities that the English forces had recovered, and was their source of retreat. If they were routed there, then, the 100,000-strong army would be trapped with nowhere to go.

As he panicked, another officer came up, with the same expression, "General Brendan, Liverpool has fallen..."

"General Brendan!! Nottingham had just fallen to some unknown force!!"

"..."

The officers began to come up to him and reported their hair-raising discovery. From their mouths, Brendan discovered a number of important key locations had succumbed to an enemy attack. They had no more room for retreat nor reinforcement. The entire country had become their enemy.

His face pale, Brendan thought in despair, "How did it become like this? Haven't I already sent troops to wipe out the surrounding zombies?! How come it became like this?!"

Chapter 987: Blood Sacrifice!

Currently, Birmingham, the heavy industry of England after the apocalypse had turned into hell on Earth. There were Flesh-Eaters and Vampires everywhere, slaughtering the humans in a gruesome and cruel manner while laughing maniacally.

Weylan, one of the 4 Saint Kings, was walking the streets of Birmingham coldly, not a speck of blood to be seen on his body.

"Save me!! Save me!!"

All of a sudden, a beautiful and sexy young woman ran out in front of him, her face full of fear as she screamed out.

2 Flesh-Eaters suddenly appeared, pouncing onto her in delight, as they dragged her back towards a dark alley.

Soon, screams rang out from there, as a trail of blood could be seen flowing out.

From the start to the end, Weylan eyed everything coolly, only when he saw the fresh blood did his eyes brightened slightly.

A gust of wind blew, and a Type 4 Saint Clan member appeared in front of him, speaking respectfully, "Esteemed Saint King Weylan, with your ingenious plan, Birmingham has fallen into our hands. The rest of the English cities have also fallen."

Weylan replied indifferently, "Ingenious? No, it doesn't count for much. I just used our similarities and resemblance to the humans to our advantage. The English forces had underestimated us. They think we're too stupid. Their arrogance had been the cause of their downfall."

The 4 Saint Kings had arrived in different parts of the Earth with different Gates of Hell.

When Weylan came to England, he did not immediately launch an attack, instead, sending a huge number of experts to act as

humans as they infiltrated the various English cities.

As the English forces were lacking manpower, they had not expected the Saint Clan to be mixed among them.

These members of the Saint Clan were all terrifying existences at the level of Type 3 or Type 4.

When Brendan's main force had been sent to London, Weylan set his plan into motion, killing most of the defending forces in the cities, and quickly conquered the cities.

Weylan then ordered coldly, "Since we've succeeded, then begin the Blood Sacrifice quickly. If we want the Saint Emperor to descend upon this Earth, we need a large amount of blood to open the right Gate of Hell."

The Saint Clan member replied respectfully, "Yes!" and disappeared into the night.

Soon after, in the various English cities, there were altars covered with strange runes erected in the center of each location. The altars were blood red, their center part as large as a lake, and they seemed to be made out of bones.

"No! No!! Don't kill me!!"

One English survivor was being dragged to the altar. He cried out continuously in fear and panic, trying to squirm and escape from this nightmare.

The cruel Flesh-Eater laughed cruelly, directly grabbing the survivor's head and yanked. He tore his entire together with the spine out of his body. The hot blood splattered all over the altar.

All around the altar, there were numerous English survivors. When they saw this, their hearts turned cold and their expressions turned to fear. A few faint-hearted ones even turned pale and wet their pants. A strong sense of panic and despair overwhelmed them.

The Flesh-Eaters continued to reap the lives of the English survivors without mercy, causing blood to flow into the altar.

After absorbing a huge amount of blood, the runes began to light up in a red radiance, as the blood within curled and combined amidst horrifying wails and screams. The blood then poured right into the largest human-shaped skull within the pool.

Once the blood was absorbed cleanly, the eyes of the skull shot out a bright blood beam into the skies.

The entire altar lit up as a strong, bloody atmosphere descended upon them.

Not long after, Brazil, Japan, and Africa also reacted similarly, as their own blood beams penetrated the skies.

England had been one of the powers that the Kingdom of God had been paying attention to. The moment it fell, the report had been transmitted over towards the upper echelon of the Kingdom of God.

The Elder Council fell into chaos, as discussion broke out among them.

"Just one day!! England managed to hold out for only one day! What the hell?!"

"Damn it! The freaks from the 2nd World are too terrifying!! They actually took down England in a single day?!"

"No! Not just England! Brazil, Japan, and Africa had all revealed the same blood phenomenon! All those places have already fallen! This means that the freaks from the 2nd World have already made their move! The most terrifying fact is that they are already working together with the zombies from our Earth!"

"Shit! Is God truly abandoning us?"

"..."

There was a tense atmosphere among the Elders.

The ever-evolving zombies were already a source of a headache. Adding on to the Saint Clan members descending upon Earth through the Gates of Hell, even a strong organization like the Kingdom of God would find it tough to deal with.

It was especially so since the Saint Clan members look extremely similar to humans. It was hard to tell them apart. If one was not careful, they might accidentally allow the wolf into the pen.

Bernard, one of the elders, spoke to Jonas, "Great Elder Jonas, I think that it is a critical time for us humans, and we should all work together to fight against the zombies and freaks of the 2nd World. With just our strength, even with Apostle Edward, it would be hard to fend off their joint attack."

Hearing his words, the rest of the Elders also sunk into contemplation. Even the most obstinate of them knew that things were not looking good.

England was recognized to be one of the 4 big powers, and yet, they had fallen at the combined effort of the zombies and the 2nd World's Saint Clan. It was apparent how powerful the enemies were.

All the elders knew that the Kingdom of God could not stand up to the zombies and the Saint Clan together.

Although Edward had gained some miraculous technology from other worlds, there was still some time needed for it to be widely used and established as part of their combat strength. Other than that, even if they have gained the Beast Transformation technology, there was no guarantee that it could defeat the Saint Clan and zombies.

Jonas was silent for a long moment, before finally speaking, "In that case, let's contact China and America, to gather the Earth's Alliance Army, and fight against the zombies and the Saint Clan!"

"Good! As long as the human race work together, we can

definitely defeat the zombies and Saint Clan!"

"That's right, our human race will be victorious!"

"No, I object."

"..."

Amidst the majority consent and minor disagreements, the case was swiftly passed and a number of invitations were sent out to the leaders of the various powers.

Within a luxurious villa in China, Yue Zhong read a piece of document.

Yue Zhong frowned, as a sense of unease and urgency weighed on him, "England, Japan, Brazil, and Africa have already fallen?!"

The speed of the fall of these 4 major regions had exceeded his expectations. Although it had taken a month for the Saint Clan and zombies to work together, it was still a mighty force to reckon with.

After all, England was one of the 4 major powers, just like China. They had their fair share of experts, with at least 200,000 elite soldiers. Their survivors had numbered at least 2 million. Such a power had actually fallen within a day, annihilated completely, with their survivors largely massacred. It was a terrifying fact, that forced Yue Zhong to be nervous again. If he was careless, China would also follow in that footprint.

He looked at the invitation once more, while his fingers drummed the table, "All 3 major factions to meet in Minsk? Forget it, let's just go. If there's an alliance, it'd be a good thing."

The Saint Clan had joined forces with the zombies, becoming the strongest enemy the humans of Earth had to face. If they still could not work together, then the intelligent freaks would make use of that fact.

The technology that Yue Zhong brought back had already started

manufacturing. Within the ranks, his return had helped stabilized his generals, and the entire country was developing rapidly and steadily. Even a short departure for Minsk would not affect anything.

He continued to look at the invitation while thinking quietly, "However, this summit is not going to be simple. I'd better prepare myself."

Minsk was Belarus's capital, before the apocalypse, they had a population of about 1.5 million people. However, it was now a dead place full of zombies.

Outside Minsk, in a small town, there were numerous Thunder Fighters stationed. Inside the town, over 400 fully armed Kingdom of God elite soldiers were clearing the town of the evolved zombies they had slaughtered.

Chapter 988: Earth's Strongest!

A number of heavy aircraft flew over from the horizon, descending once they reached.

From within, a number of elite soldiers walked out dressed in military uniform, emitting a terrifying aura.

Under the escort of those soldiers, 5 men stepped out.

The leader was a man in a suit, he had blond hair and blue eyes, his skin fair and his features sharp. On his forehead, was a white band tied around, which contained the American flag. He was emitting a cold and powerful aura, and this was the top expert of the Superhuman Alliance in America, Leo.

One youth in a wide-brimmed blue shirt, piercings in his ears, his skin tanned, followed behind. He was 16 or 17, and he wore sunglasses, chewing some gum. Looking around at the elites of the Kingdom of God, he sneered, "These are the elite troops of the Kingdom of God? Doesn't seem like much? I can take them all on."

One middle-aged man beside him, dressed smartly and had a serious aura about him, frowned as he spoke, "Evan, this time, we're here to discuss an alliance. Don't create a mess."

Evan continued to blow bubbles as his face sunk, and he barked back, "Lake, who the hell are you? How dare you order me around? In my opinion, all these shitheads from the Kingdom of God should be killed. What's there to discuss?"

The Kingdom of God had invaded America and caused slaughter and deep hatred. In America, there were many who had hated for the Kingdom of God, not willing to even see them entering an alliance.

Leo's expression turned stern, "Evan, shut it. Don't be rude to Mr. Lake."

"Yes!"

Although Evan was unwilling, after being reprimanded by Leo, he fell silent.

Leo was the person that brought about the Superhuman Alliance and was respected as the foremost superhero, and the strongest expert in America. After the apocalypse, he had defeated many experts, even some Apostles from the Kingdom of God. He was widely revered and idolized. Evan was full of idolization towards this expert as well.

At this time, 5 representatives that emitted a pressure also stepped out from the Kingdom of God's camp.

Within their side, the leader was an extremely good-looking man with long hair. His physique was perfect, and he gave off the feeling as though he was the son, a favored son of heavens. The 4 other young men and women beside him emitted a similar aura, but beside him, they were reduced to the stars and the moon, dimmer than him.

The moment they appeared, Leo's eyes fell upon the leader of the Kingdom of God's party, his gaze complicated as he muttered, "Edward!"

The attractive man from the Kingdom of God was precisely the 1st Apostle, Edward, who had crushed countless regions, defeating numerous experts, and slaughtered dozens of high-level evolved intelligent zombies.

Evan looked at Edward, and his body went taut as his expression turned serious. His senses and every fiber of his body was telling him about this dangerous man, "He is strong, likely similar to Bro Leo in terms of strength."

Other than Evan, the rest of those on Leo's side had changes in their expression as well. They could sense the threat and potential danger from this Edward; in a direct frontal clash, they could likely be killed in a single move.

Edward's face brought out into a refreshing smile, "Leo, it's a pleasure to finally meet you. Now, Yue Zhong's left."

Leo looked into the sky, "Although I've never seen him, I know that he's someone who values punctuality. He should be here any moment... Oh, look, he's already here."

Edward's eyes flashed with a sharp gaze as he looked up as well, laughing lightly, "That's right, seems like he's right on time. We're early."

The Apostles behind Edward turned to look at the skies but did not see anything.

After 20 seconds, the expert with the sharpest eyes finally saw a number of heavy aircraft breaking through the clouds.

Edward then extended an invitation to Leo, "Let's go over!"

Leo agreed, "Sure!"

Be it Edward or Leo, they were filled with curiosity towards Yue Zhong. They were recognized as the strongest experts on Earth, and yet, they had never seen each other before. They had only the reports to form an understanding about each other.

When the heavy aircrafts landed, a hundred soldiers swiftly exited.

Every single one of them was over the Level of 75, and they were all equipped with multi-purpose scanning helmets, Type 3 Sun Battle Armors, with Sun Spears on their back, as they wielded laser guns. There were even other weapons equipped at the various parts of their combat armor. Every single one of them was a small-scale armory, at the same time, each and every one of them was emitting a powerful killing intent.

"Strong!!"

When Edward and Leo caught sight of these 100 soldiers, their faces changed.

As for Evan and the rest, they were also taken aback, "What strong soldiers!! Did he bring all his top experts?"

These 100 elites were the top subordinates that Yue Zhong had poured a huge amount of resources to groom. Each of them had a Type 3 Divine Warrior strength, adding on their Type 3 Armor, they were all capable of releasing a Type 4 Divine Warrior's might.

A force of a hundred Type 4 soldiers was extremely potent on this Earth, they could easily crush many countries.

Although the warriors that Yue Zhong had brought this time numbered a few, in terms of quality, it already surpassed both the Kingdom of God and America. Even if they were to join forces, they might not be able to contend with the soldiers of China's Central Army.

Under the escort of these 100 soldiers, Yue Zhong walked out with Bai Xiao Sheng, Ji Qing Wu, and Yao Yao.

Edward smiled lightly, and reached out with his right hand first, "I'm Edward, pleased to meet you, Yue Zhong."

"This Edward's strength is not below mine... he should be a Type 6 expert as well. The world is truly vast, with geniuses everywhere. It was not just me with fortuitous encounters. The fame of the 1st Apostles is truly not just a myth." Yue Zhong assessed Edward carefully, feeling the sense of danger that he posed. He could sense that this man was not far off from him in strength.

Yue Zhong smiled as well, grasping Edward's hands lightly, "How do you do, I'm Yue Zhong, pleased to meet you."

Leo also reached out his hand, "I'm Leo, pleased to meet you."
"Another Type 6 expert."

Yue Zhong's sense swept through Leo and could feel the abundant life force within. This was also a Type 6 expert that could threaten his life.

Yue Zhong grabbed his Leo's hand lightly back, "Hey, I'm Yue Zhong, pleased to meet you."

After the pleasantries were exchanged, all 3 factions entered the small town.

Inside a villa.

All 3 factions sat on their respective sides around a huge round table.

Edward got to the point directly, "We're pleased that you guys made the effort to come. Everyone should know by now, the Saint Clan from the 2nd World had already joined forces with the zombies. In just a month's time, they had defeated England, Japan, Brazil, and Africa, ruling over those regions. At the same time, based on our intel, they had constructed some evil and demonic altars. Based on our conjectures, they should be trying to pry open the magnitude of the connection, allowing the Type 6 Sacred Emperor of the 2nd World to descend directly."

"Based on the current situation, it is impossible for any of our individual factions to stand against them. Therefore, the Kingdom of God hopes that all 3 of our factions can ally and rebuild society, help each other, and fight back the zombies and Saint Clan together.

"The Earth's Federal Government will thus be comprised of our 3 major factions, each of us in charge of our own regions, with our independent law and rules. There will be an Earth's Forces, formed and used against the foreign species and races. The members of the council will be elected by our 3 factions, with each member holding a $\frac{1}{3}$ voting strength."

Hearing Edward's words, Yue Zhong and Leo fell silent.

The proposal of the Earth's Federal Government was similar to the United Nations before the apocalypse, but its power and reach were much wider than before. Especially the Earth's Forces, it

would be a military capable of disrupting the balance of everything.

However as Edward had said, based on the current situation, there was a need for it. Otherwise, if the 3 factions continued to be wary against one another, and backstabbed each other during a critical situation, the human race would be endangered.

Yue Zhong spoke up after a long while, "I agree with the Earth's Federal Government, but as to the details, there has to be some fine-tuning."

Leo also spoke up after a while, "I share the same sentiments."

Chapter 989: Bai Xiao Sheng Defeated!

All 3 sides agreed on the Earth's Federal Government, but very soon, there was a heated discussion on the details.

All 3 had brought along negotiators, engaging in fierce arguments about the various aspects of cabinet members, number of soldiers, the percentage of strength, etc.

At Edward's side, there was a burly black man, with rippling muscles and a tiger tattoo on his right hand. He stepped out and stared at Yue Zhong fiercely, "Leader Yue Zhong, I'm the 5th Apostle of the Kingdom of God, Ereben. I've always been in awe of China and heard that your country has many experts. I hope to exchange a few blows with them. As to yourself, I admit that I'm no match for you, so I will not challenge you."

Hearing his challenge, the negotiations immediately stopped, as everyone turned their eyes over.

Yue Zhong frowned slightly as he swept his gaze towards Edward. He noticed that Edward was chuckling lightly as he looked over, without the slightest intention to stop the challenge. He knew that it was a show of might from his side, intending to belittle Yue Zhong.

Although all 3 factions agreed on the Federal Government, amongst themselves, there was still competition. If an opportunity to gain an advantage over each other presented itself, they would not give up on it.

Ereben shot a condescending gaze towards the people behind Yue Zhong, "No one dares? I'm just the 5th Apostle of the Kingdom of God. Yet, you Chinese don't dare to rise to the challenge. Other than Yue Zhong, is there no one else who is capable enough? If it's like this, then your region of rule should just follow my side's proposition, as well as Mongolia, Thailand, Vietnam, Myanmar and the 2 Koreas."

Currently, within the town, the most heated discussion was over territory. The Earth was now being carved apart by the 3 factions.

In this feast that was dividing the world, only the Kingdom of God, America, and China had the qualifications to participate. Initially, England also had the right, but they were destroyed, thus losing their qualifications. As to the other small factions, they were overlooked.

Hearing that challenge, Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes flashed with a cold look, as he asked Yue Zhong, "Leader, let me. I'll teach this black devil some manners!!"

Yue Zhong swept Ereben a look and reminded Bai Xiao Sheng, "Be careful, he's not a simple enemy. Go all out, don't let him have a chance to get one over you."

Bai Xiao Sheng laughed confidently, "Rest assured! I have not been idling these days."

He pulled out a curved blade as he shot out, staring at Ereben. He then laughed and challenged back, "I'm Bai Xiao Sheng from the China Central Army. Within China, my strength is numbered way past the 100th position, but I should be enough to defeat you. If you were to lose, then everything east of Poland shall be ours, how about that?"

Ereben snorted coldly, "Win first before you spout nonsense. Let's take this outside."

The 2 of them quickly came to a field outside. Everyone else followed after, watching quietly.

This was a battle that was related to the bargaining power. If Ereben won, then the negotiator on the Kingdom of God's side would have a higher threshold. If Bai Xiao Sheng were to win, then the negotiator from China would be bolstered.

Ereben laughed coldly, "It's not too late for you to admit defeat. Otherwise, when I act, you might not die, but at the very least,

you'll be out of action for a few months."

Bai Xiao Sheng's eyes turned cold, "Enough of your bullshit. Let me teach you a lesson, arrogant bastard, that China has its experts."

"Haha! Of the whole of China, I only heard of Yue Zhong. Everyone else is just trash to us Apostles. You're no different. You're going down!"

Ereben laughed savagely, before disappearing from his location. He appeared noiselessly behind Bai Xiao Sheng, instantly splitting into 3 shadow clones, each of them wielding sharp blades, intending to strike him.

Teleportation!

This was the ability of the 5th Apostle. With this ability, Ereben was able to appear anywhere within a 100m radius, taking down his enemies or escaping with ease.

With this strange and terrifying ability, with his Type 4 strength, a Type 5 expert had fallen at his hands before. At the same time, if he focused only on fleeing, even a Type 5 Divine Warrior might not be able to catch him.

Evan saw how Ereben appeared suddenly behind Bai Xiao Sheng and sucked in a breath of cold air, "Strong, truly an Apostle of the Kingdom of God. If it was me, I would not be able to dodge that."

As one of the top experts of the Superhuman Alliance, and a natural-born genius, Evan was already at the Type 5 realm. However, that single strike from Ereben gave him cause for fear. He knew that it would be tough for him to dodge that strike.

Ever since Yue Zhong had left, Bai Xiao Sheng had trained incessantly, utilizing the Evolving Liquid from Ou Ming, as he slaughtered zombies constantly. At the same time, when Yue Zhong had returned with the Blood Honey, he had consumed a little, reaching the peak of the Type 4 realm.

Against the strike from Ereben, his experience from his countless battles kicked in, and he immediately ducked to the ground, the curved blade in his hands rising to meet Ereben's sword.

Evan was shocked, "That fellow's reaction is fast!"

At the time when their weapons clashed, Ereben disappeared once more, appearing behind Bai Xiao Sheng, kicking his back viciously.

A terrifying strength burst out, sending Bai Xiao Sheng a few meters out.

Bai Xiao Sheng spat out a mouth of blood.

Ereben stared coldly at Bai Xiao Sheng and snarled sarcastically, "Hmph! With just this ability, you dare challenge I, Ereben! What a joke! I had thought that you could last longer. Not even 20 seconds. What an eyesore."

From the time that Ereben acted to his defeat of Bai Xiao Sheng, 11 seconds passed. Although he ridiculed him, he did not continue to attack. He knew that if he did so, Yue Zhong would immediately slaughter him.

Yue Zhong swept Ereben a cold gaze, who felt his body tremble from the cold killing intent. Fear sprouted in his heart. However, as he thought about Edward's support, he continued to stand there without being servile nor overbearingness, "Leader Yue Zhong, I apologize, your subordinate was too weak. I did not hold back, and thus, injured him."

Yue Zhong retracted his gaze as he walked to Bai Xiao Sheng, supporting him up.

Bai Xiao Sheng was pale, apologizing to Yue Zhong with a sullen expression, "I'm sorry, Leader. Although I'm unwilling, that fellow was too strong. I'm not his match."

Bai Xiao Sheng's talent was outstanding, but compared to the freakish geniuses from the Kingdom of God, it was still far off. He

might have gained plenty of resources from Yue Zhong, but Ereben had also benefited from Edward. While both parties were at the peak of Type 4, the combat ability was still different.

Yue Zhong administered a healing liquid produced from the blood of Type 5 Mutant Beasts, as he consoled, "It's ok. As long as you're fine. Go and recover properly, you might not be his match now, but it's not necessarily so in the future."

As Yue Zhong's trusted aide, even when Yue Zhong was extremely weak, both sides had fought side by side. Yue Zhong valued and held this subordinate and comrade in high regard.

"I'll become stronger!! I'll definitely become stronger!!" Bai Xiao Sheng took the liquid and clenched his fists tightly as he walked out. A number of disdainful gazes fell upon him, but only served to fuel his determination. This defeat had caused him humiliation and unwillingness.

After defeating Bai Xiao Sheng, Ereben continued to challenge, "Is there anyone else? Who dares take me on? Are there no other heroes in China other than Yue Zhong?"

"I'll take you on."

At this time, a bright voice resounded out, as Ji Qing Wu stepped out in all her beauty and poise, dressed in a black military uniform, her long hair tied up in a ponytail.

Yue Zhong frowned in worry and was about to call out to her, when she turned to look at him, her eyes filled with a determination. His words got caught in his throat, as they turned to a simple, "Be careful!"

Ji Qing Wu smiled warmly, "Don't worry, I'll be victorious!"

Edward looked at Ji Qing Wu, his eyes brightening, "What a beauty."

Ji Qing Wu emitted a valiant aura with every step she took, looking like a cold, sword goddess. Edward had seen his fair share

of beauties, but it was his first time seeing someone like Ji Qing Wu.

Ereben stared at Ji Qing Wu, his eyes flashing with excitement, as though as he had found his prey. Snarling, he spoke, "I will not hold back, it's not too late if you give up!"

"One move."

Ereben was taken aback, "What?"

Ji Qing Wu's voice sounded once more, "I'll defeat you in one move."

"Haha, I've changed my mind. I will torture you, and not let you lose so easily!"

Ereben laughed in fury as he disappeared once more, reappearing behind Ji Qing Wu.

Chapter 990: Slashing down the Apostles!

Ereben's sharp blade slashed through the air, surpassing the sound barrier as he thrust towards Ji Qing Wu.

Evan stared at that move, frowning, "Strong! This woman is finished! The Apostles are truly something else."

Almost all the experts showed a look of pity, as though they had already seen Ji Qing Wu being shredded.

Yue Zhong's face sunk as his eyes flashed with a killing intent, and it poured outwards from him.

All around him, the Apostles, and superhuman soldiers all felt their chests constrict, as though there was a vice grip on their necks.

Edward and Leo also frowned, releasing their own pressure to balance Yue Zhong's killing intent, stabilizing their own subordinates.

On the field, Ji QIng Wu remained cool, as though she had not felt Ereben's move.

At the moment he was about to strike Ji Qing Wu, she twisted her body, and the long blade in her hand disappeared. It turned into a profound flash that struck towards Ereben's chest.

Her style of combat was different from Yue Zhong. She had always been on the path of the Sword. After the apocalypse, she had been training in it consistently. This single strike was a result of her constant training, far surpassing any grandmaster of the past. It was unstoppable, and it slammed into Ereben's chest like a cannon.

Kacha!!

After that loud crack, the ribcage of Ereben cracked, as he spat out a mouth of blood and soared through the air, before crumpling

on the ground.

"Ereben!!"

The Apostles beside Edwards immediately dashed forward with ugly expressions.

Ji Qing Wu then shot him a disdainful glance, turning his earlier words back on him, "Hmph! With just this ability, you dare to step out and issue a challenge! What a joke! I had thought that you could last longer. Who knew that you couldn't even take a single hit. What an eyesore."

Ereben heard those words he had used to ridicule Bai Xiao Sheng and felt a strong sense of humiliation. Spitting out another mouthful of blood, he fainted directly.

Seeing his plight, delight flashed in Yue Zhong and Yao Yao's eyes, while the killing intent he emitted was retracted.

If Ji Qing Wu had really been injured, then the enraged Yue Zhong might have fallen out with everybody and gone all out to eradicate Ereben, even if it was at the expense of falling out with the Kingdom of God once more.

"This fellow is dangerous."

Edward and Leo retracted their aura, looking at Yue Zhong while frowning.

Another young man stepped forward, dressed in military uniform. He was 2m-tall, and his golden hair short. He spoke coldly, "China's Ji Qing Wu? I'll remember you, I'm Erik, the 3rd Apostle from the Kingdom of God. I challenge you right now."

Yue Zhong heard Erik and frowned, before flipping his hand and tossing a Type 4 Enhanced Armor towards Ji Qing Wu, "Qing Wu, use this!"

After reaching the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong's senses were extremely accurate, picking up information from any other entity

lower than the Type 6 realm, as long as they were not utilizing any skill or treasure to mask themselves.

This 3rd Apostle Erik was a terrifying expert at the initial Type 5 Realm. Without any equipment, Ji Qing Wu was not his match.

After all, the experts of the Kingdom of God were all experienced, and not some riff-raff that relied on treasures to reach their level.

Ji Qing Wu donned the Type 4 Enhanced Armor, as the Type 4 Nucleus behind glowed, and sent a strong surge of energy into her, pushing her strength into the Type 5 Realm.

Erik eyed her and snorted coldly, "Type 5! Hmph, borrowing an external force to become a Type 5 expert, you're not my match! I will defeat you in a minute's time!"

Ji Qing Wu's eyes narrowed, "Bring it on!"

"You'll lose!!"

Erik's expression turned into a ferocious one, as he reached out to grab her, activating his ability: Air Vacuum. At that instant, all the surrounding air around Ji Qing Wu had been sucked out, forming a vacuum barrier that trapped her.

Erik had the ability to manipulate the air around him, forming powerful blades to slaughter his enemies, or remove the air, suffocating them to death.

In response, Ji Qing Wu did not panic, instead, pulling out her long sword to slash out, as a bright green sword radiance flashed. The vacuum was immediately sliced in half, breaking under her attack.

She was, after all, a genius in the path of the Sword. After reaching the Type 5 realm, her attack was incredibly sharp, as though there was nothing she could not cut. Even Yue Zhong, whose might was far above hers, might not necessarily beat her in terms of sword skills.

Ji Qing Wu then disappeared from the area, dashing in front of Erik. With her long hair fluttering in the wind, the shadow of her blade had already flickered in front of his chest. As she drew back her sword, a burst of blood shot from his chest, splattering onto the ground.

"Erik!!"

The remaining Apostles immediately rushed to carry him, while staring at Ji Qing Wu in anger and shock.

Ji Qing Wu glanced at Erik who was lying on the ground, as she sheathed back her sword, clean from any speck of blood, and spoke, "Not even a minute has passed, and you've lost. Too weak."

After being ridiculed by Ji Qing Wu, Erik's face turned pale, as he also followed in Ereben's example, spitting out a mouth of blood and fainting.

Ji Qing Wu then turned her cold gaze towards everyone else, her voice ringing out icily, "Who else dares to challenge me?"

Swept by her gaze, the Apostles all gritted their teeth, staring hatefully at her, not daring to step out.

Even the 3rd Apostle had been defeated by her, they had no confidence of taking her on.

Seeing the morale dropped, Edward frowned deeply. As a Type 6 expert, he could see the crux of the battle between the two of them.

In terms of strength, it was definitely Erik who was stronger. If they pulled apart the distance, and Erik was given the chance to execute his ability, preventing Ji Qing Wu from getting close, then it would be possible to defeat her. However, in such a close distance, he was not a match for her sharp sword.

"3rd Apostle Erik was defeated!"

"Unbelievable! He was defeated by that woman!"

"..."

Sounds of discussion broke out. Erik was an expert that could take on 10,000 zombies at one time, and yet, he had lost to this Ji Qing Wu. They were all filled with disbelief. The morale of the Kingdom of God's side fell even further.

Leo laughed lightly and stepped forward to break things up, "Let's end things here. Our enemies are the zombies and Saint Clan, not ourselves. I suggest that we all go to clear the zombies in Minsk, and determine the portioning through the results, how about that?"

Ji Qing Wu's swordsmanship was incredible, on this small stage, unless it was against Edward, or a peak Type 5 expert, no one was her match. Leo did not want to see Yue Zhong's side gain too much momentum.

Edward also agreed after a short consideration, "Fine! I agree! Minsk has a total of 1.5m zombies. We can use the results of the zombie purge tomorrow to determine our territories."

Yue Zhong also replied readily, "Sure!"

In the end, no matter how sweet the words sounded, it boiled down to strength. The 1.5m-strong zombie horde would be the perfect test for each faction to display their might, as well as the right to own more territories.

At this, everyone separated to rest.

Early the next morning, all 3 troops came outside of Minsk.

A hundred elite Kingdom of God elites sat on their vehicles and charged right into Minsk. Following the loud gunfire, they quickly routed back out, in their hands, were bags of Mutant Beast blood and human blood, that splashed across the ground.

Soon, the zombies within Minsk caught the scent of the blood and swarmed out.

The 100 elite Kingdom of God soldiers wielded their weapons and continued to lure the zombie horde out.

The moment they were about a hundred meters out of the city, the heavy weaponry from the Kingdom of God revealed itself, raining down explosives and bullets upon the zombie horde.

Hearing the roaring explosions, the rest of the zombies within Minsk finally gathered together and pushed out in a frenzy.

In the skies, the flesh-winged zombies also soared and charged out.

Eyeing the surging waves of enemies, Edward laughed lightly, "Let us begin then."

Leo quickly ordered, "Ok! Do it!!"

Chapter 991: Display of Super-Abilities!

With that shout, the 300 soldiers behind Leo immediately placed down the huge chests that they were carrying on their backs.

The moment the huge chests came down, they opened up and a huge mechanical ball latched onto each of the soldiers, extending out. Within moments, every single soldier had an additional layer of armor on them, and at the center of the combat suit, there was a Type 3 Mutant Beast nucleus.

Upon equipping this suits, those 300 soldiers looked as though they were super soldiers from the future, almost like Iron-Man. Every one of them carried a 6-barrel Vulcan Cannon with ease, as well as a whole carton of ammunition, as they charged towards the zombies.

As they got close to the zombie horde, the 300 futuristic American soldiers quickly raised their cannons and fired off wildly at the zombie horde.

Following the sounds of bullets ripping through the air, the rain of metal fell upon the zombie horde, directly shredding a large number of them.

Those 300 American elites just held their position and fired without stopping.

Under the slaughter of the American elites, they managed to carve out a bloody path in the sea of zombies.

Edward looked at the American side and sighed, "Is this the technology from other worlds? Truly formidable!" He then turned to his subordinates, "Do it!"

Among the Kingdom of God soldiers, 200 of them suddenly walked out, emitting a strange roar and began to transform into powerful Beast-Warriors with the might of Type 3 Divine Warriors.

The moment they transformed, they roared out once more in fury and tore into the zombie horde, using their bare hands to slaughter.

These Beast-Warriors seemed to have boundless energy, their speed almost reaching the sound barrier. As they charged into the horde, the zombies were helpless and torn apart like ragdolls. Even L2s and L3s which were supposed to be impervious to daggers and bullets were decapitated easily.

As the elites of the Kingdom of God, each of them had strength similar to Yue Zhong prior to his entry into the 2nd World. They were truly powerful.

At the same time, they sent out another 100 gun-wielding soldiers that were Level 40 and had undergone Job Changes. These soldiers supported the Beast Warriors, their marksmanship accurate and devastating.

The horde was being whittled down by the 300 elite soldiers of the Kingdom of God, as their limbs flew and blood splattered everywhere.

Leo saw the Beast-Warriors and could not help but sigh as well, "Is this the Beast-Transformation technology? Truly extraordinary!!"

Edward replied, "Likewise, your armored suits are amazing."

The American soldiers were carrying tons of ammo, moving like mobile fortresses as they tore through the zombies with their supreme firepower.

The S5s that were like specters bypassing the speed of sound dashed through the crowds, but before they could even get close, they were ripped apart by the fearsome firepower, not able to touch the American soldiers.

Edward turned around to Yue Zhong and chuckled, "Yue Zhong, let us witness the strength of your China Central Army."

Yue Zhong returned a smile, and turned to Yao Yao, the leader of his 100 elites, and ordered, "Do it."

When Yao Yao, who was wearing the Type 4 Enhanced Armor, received the order, she waved her hand towards the 100 soldiers equipped with their own Type 3 Enhanced Armors and charged headlong into the horde.

The loli Yao Yao had been the first natural Evolver that Yue Zhong had come across. Her innate talent was much higher than Yue Zhong. Through the countless battles and training, she had already reached the peak of Type 4, with a mere step into the Type 5 realm.

The Type 3 nuclei on the backs of those 100 soldiers glowed brightly, pushing their strength to the Type 4 stage. They each held an Electromagnetic Cannon, and as they fired out at the zombies, a huge number of the zombies fell.

As they continued their massacre, all of a sudden, 10 L4s stepped out, their hides thick and impenetrable even towards cannons, and charged at the China Central Army.

The moment those L4s appeared, the Electromagnetic beams shot through their heads, turning them into sieves, reaping these undead and turning them into true corpses.

After reaching the Type 4 realm, those 100 China Central Army soldiers continued to fire out. Every one of them could fight individually, and yet, with their communications systems and Bai Yi's help, they got into a formation that exhibited maximum efficiency in the massacre of the zombies.

In a few breaths, the killing speed of the 100 China Central Army soldiers had reached an unbelievable rate, killing countless evolved zombies, surpassing the records of the Kingdom of God and American forces.

"Strong!! This Chinese Central Army is strong!"

The 2 Type 6 experts stared in shock as Yue Zhong's forces reaped and crushed the lives of the zombies like nothing. They had already surmised that these Chinese soldiers would not be simple, but they had never expected their true capability to be at this level.

"The competition doesn't prohibit us from acting. I shall not stand on ceremony. See you guys!"

With a flash of his body, he flew over the zombie horde, and immediately activated his Summon Tamed Beast technique.

In mid-air, a huge hole appeared out of the void, and Type 5 Mount Tai, measuring over 2km in length lumbered out, immediately crushing a huge patch of zombies.

As it moved through the horde, its huge body smashed into the zombies, crushing many of the evolved zombies beneath its feet. With every swing of its tail, it could flatten over thousands of zombies into meat paste.

"That's a Type 5 Mutant Beast!!"

"What the shit, he actually tamed a Type 5 Mutant Beast?!"

"That's a Type 5 Mutant Beast? Isn't that too huge?!"

"..."

Seeing the sudden appearance of Mount Tai, be it the soldiers from the Kingdom of God, or the American forces, they all stared wide-eyed with shock.

At the center of the battle, many elites of both sides were also stunned, attracted by the appearance of Mount Tai.

"We can't win that!! No matter how much we kill, how can we compare to that monster?!"

"It's impossible."

"That Yue Zhong could actually summon such a terrifying beast, seems like we're going to lose."

"..."

Once Mount Tai appeared, the morale of the American and Kingdom of God troops fell. They were strong, but compared to a single charge of Mount Tai, where thousands of zombies would perish, no matter how hard they fought, it was impossible to match that speed.

Edward watched and a resolute glint appeared in his eyes, "Amazing, to be actually capable of summoning Type 5 Mutant Beasts. Seems like I need to show my trump card."

Edward pulled out a white-silver sword, and with a flash of his body, he flew above the zombies. He held the sword with both hands in front of him, as he started to mutter a solemn vow, "I swear, to wipe out all zombies on this world, and only this sword will be effective towards them. In this temporary time, I'm willing to sacrifice my emotions, please take my emotions and transform them into my strength."

After he finished his vow, the white-silver sword released a blinding light that enveloped him.

A powerful, holy energy started to pour out of him, as he raised his sword and slashed down.

At that instant, the silver-white glow covered the entire ground, as though God had descended upon Earth, and countless zombies were wiped out.

With just a single slash, he had reaped the lives of over 10,000 zombies, causing a huge crater in the horde.

"Long live Edward!!"

"The 1st Apostle is amazing!!"

"..."

Seeing how Edward killed the so many zombies with a single slash, carrying out judgment, the Kingdom of God went wild,

cheering loudly.

The silver-white sword in his hands was the Treasure of Hope he gained, Sword of Solemn Promise. By vowing to this Treasure, the price one had to pay was huge. The more extreme the conditions, the stronger the power bestowed.

Edward had pledged his own emotions to this sword, giving himself the might to vanquish zombies. It allowed him to slash out with terrible devastation towards zombies, but not to anything else.

After killing 10,000 zombies in one go, he continued to stroll in a holy manner, swinging his sword and killing another 10,000 zombies in a shocking manner.

Leo saw how Edward killed 20,000 zombies in the blink of an eye and his face fell, "What monstrous strength! Seems like even if Yue Zhong has a Type 5 Mutant Beast, his speed cannot match up to Edward. I think the Kingdom of God is going to get an edge."

Chapter 992: Distribution of Territories!

The Treasures of Hope were just White-Silver grade. Each of them might have limitations, but were still powerful weapons in their own right.

Leo also had a Treasure of Hope, however, his Treasure did not have the ability to help him slaughter over 10,000 zombies at one go.

Yue Zhong gazed at Edward reaping the lives of the zombies and sighed, "Powerful! His Treasure of Hope is strong. Looks like I need to show off one of my trump cards as well."

With a thought, Yue Zhong waved his hands, and the Scarlet Reaper combined with the Heart of Hope appeared in front of him.

He stepped in, and in a flash, was covered entirely by the Scarlet Reaper.

The eyes of the Scarlet Reaper gleamed as though it was alive. Its body radiated with light, and its speed was suddenly pushed to the maximum, reaching Mach-6 as it shot towards the skies.

As the Scarlet Reaper reached the sky above the horde, the wings on its back extended out in a flash. In an instant, countless light beams shot out, striking the zombies below with unbelievable accuracy, blasting their heads apart.

Enveloped by that rain of light beams, many zombies were shredded, returning to dust as they should be.

The countless zombies were disappearing at a rate visible to the naked eye. In just an instant, over hundreds of thousands of zombies had been killed. The dense horde seemed to have been cleaved in half.

Witnessing that, even Leo was shocked till his eyes almost popped out, "Holy shit!! That was too overpowered!!! How is that possible?! How can there be such an armor in this world?! Not

even a Type 7 expert can kill over hundreds of thousands of zombies in a breath!"

Leo could become a Type 6 Evolver because he had experienced countless trials and tribulations just like Yue Zhong. After he overcame them, he had become one of the peak experts on Earth. He had experienced the terror of a Type 7 expert for himself, but even a few of them would not be able to do what Yue Zhong did.

Edward stared in shock, "That's strong!! That suit of armor is too sick!! How come there's such a heaven-defying armor? I thought that my Sword of Solemn Promise was enough to rule the heavens. Who knew Yue Zhong had such a scary trump card?! He could wipe out any country by himself!!"

Edward's Sword of Solemn Promise could kill over 10,000 zombies in an instant, because of this, he had suggested the tripartite meet to be at Minsk. It would allow him to demonstrate his prowess, however, he did not expect Yue Zhong to one-up him.

"Amazing!!"

"What is that armor?! That's too terrifying!!"

"Is that a God-made armor?"

"Can such a strength be wielded by humans? Too sick!! That strength can match up to a nuclear weapon!! A mobile nuclear weapon!"

"China's leader Yue Zhong actually has such an armor, it's too terrifying!!"

"..."

Gazing at the sky, the Scarlet Reaper continued to release its judgment on the zombies below, causing everyone else to be agape with shock and breaking out in a discussion.

The Kingdom of God and American forces all looked in shock and knew that this time, China definitely had the edge in negotiations.

As for the officials of China, they were all filled with smug looks and high morale.

After killing 800,000 zombies, Yue Zhong stopped his massacre, intending to preserve energy. After all, he needed to leave some leeway for the American and Kingdom of God forces.

Even if Yue Zhong killed all the zombies in Minsk, it was impossible for China to control the whole Earth.

When the Scarlet Reaper stopped its attacks, Edward also swung his Sword of Solemn Promise a few times, killing 300,000 zombies before stopping his own hunt.

The remaining 300,000 zombies were then left to the troops to be killed.

As all the elites of all 3 forces were thrown into battle, their strength and equipment easily overpowering the evolved zombies, while the ordinary zombies were slaughtered mercilessly.

After a short while of resistance, the remaining zombies began to scatter and flee, while being hunted down by the elites.

Once the zombie hunt was over, all 3 forces entered Minsk directly.

Although there were still some evolved zombies hiding within Minsk, with the 3 top experts of Earth present, as well as the powerful soldiers of their respective factions, those zombies posed no threat at all. Before they could even get close, they were annihilated.

Within a meeting hall inside Minsk, Yue Zhong pulled out a map of the Earth and drew, "Everything south of Minsk shall belong to China."

With this line drawn, Belarus was split into 2, with a huge part of the Middle East and all of Asia becoming under China.

The 2 strong countries of the past, India, and Russia were

likewise included.

Currently, both countries had already been overrun by zombies and had no qualifications to take part in this meeting. Therefore, no one stood out to object.

Yue Zhong continued directly, "Please take your people out of these regions as soon as possible, or accept our restructuring and organizing."

Seeing this, Edward, Leo and the rest of the negotiators had ugly expressions. However, they had all agreed beforehand that the one who killed the most zombies would get to draw up the lines. They could not go back on their word. Having seen Yue Zhong's display of strength and technology, they did not dare to antagonize him.

Most importantly, while he had staked claims on huge territories, it was not yet infringing on their bottom lines.

Edward did not stand on ceremony as he announced, "North of Minsk, Africa, and South America shall be our Kingdom of God's."

Leo's expression was extremely ugly right now. He turned to look at Yue Zhong, who had no reaction, and he could only grit his teeth, "Then North America is ours."

Without Yue Zhong's support, America was not a match for the Kingdom of God. Furthermore, in the battle to clear Minsk, although their iron-soldiers had been a spectacular sight, Leo could not take out any trump card to wipe out more than thousands of zombies in one go. He could only swallow this bitter fruit.

Although they did not gain territory, he was not too affected by it. Humanity had fallen to an extremely low number, just supporting the survivors in America was extremely taxing. What they needed was to recover the cities within America, not expanding to more regions.

Once they ascertain their area of control, all sides quickly got to drafting the agreement.

Upon signing the documents, the Earth's Federal Government was finally formed, managed by the Kingdom of God, China, and America.

Once they agreed upon the alliance, the Beast Transformation Technology from the Kingdom of God, the Nanomechanical Armor Technology from America and the Enhanced Battle Armor from China were all brought out to be exchanged with one another.

Each of these 3 technologies was far beyond Earth's current capabilities, and they had their pros and cons. By exchanging, no one would lose out, instead, all of them gained more in return.

The Kingdom of God also quickly kept its word, pulling out the troops from the areas and regions under the control of China and America, concentrating them back at Europe.

At the initial parts of the apocalypse, they had been trying to expand their reach aggressively, and almost every country had their presence. Because of that, their troops had been scattered and dispersed, while they expanded fast, they had not been able to hold their forts when Yue Zhong came along. Thus, they had suffered.

Now that they pulled their forces back to Europe, their numbers instantly swelled to 500,000, while their survivors numbered 12 million, with plenty of experts within their ranks.

At the same time, under Edward's leadership, they began to quickly clear the zombies in Europe, obliterating many hordes that they had not yet paid attention to in the past.

Without their presence in the other countries, America also quickly began to clear their own hordes.

After Yue Zhong brought back the 2 new technologies, he also sent out his troops to clean the country and slowly regain habitable land.

Although they had established the Earth's Federal Government, the main takeaway was the distribution of territories, building up

trust, exchanging technologies, and allowing trade without anymore enmity. No one else brought up the possibility of having the Earth's Army.

Yue Zhong had revealed a devastating might in Minsk, and was the best candidate to helm the Earth's Army should there be one. However, both the Kingdom of God and America were not willing to see Yue Zhong's faction expanding yet again, thus, they did not bring it up.

Chapter 993: The Arrival of the Saint Emperor!

The Saint Clan had focused their forces on England, Africa, Brazil and Japan when they landed, and these 4 regions have fallen completely.

However, it was also because of this that they could not do anything to the Kingdom of God, America, and China.

Everyone knew that the clash would happen eventually, thus, both sides focused on bolstering their forces and expanding their reach.

After one month, a number of Saint Clan members gathered around a Gate of Hell in Tokyo, Japan. Among them, there were 30 Type 5 Saint Clan experts, Amaterasu, as well as over 60 Type 4 and Type 5 intelligent Evolved zombies.

Earth was abundant in the mysterious life force and evolution potential. Therefore, those Saint Clan members that had been stuck at the peak of Type 4 had quickly broken through after they descended upon Earth, reaching the Type 5 realm.

Due to this, just in Japan alone, there were over 30 Type 5 Saint Clan members, exceeding the numbers of Type 5 Ancestors in the 2nd World.

Amaterasu had been the strongest enemy Yue Zhong met in Japan, and he was the first intelligent zombie that had evolved with high potential. Right now, he was at the peak of Type 5, commanding a dozen Type 4 and Type 5 intelligent Evolved zombies, reaching the status of a local hegemon.

Amaterasu shot a cool glance at the Saint King Blake and said, "Is your Saint Emperor really coming today?"

Blake laughed lightly, "Your Majesty Amaterasu, relax. Our Saint Emperor will definitely descend upon Earth today. The limitations

of the Gates of Hell had been weakened under our efforts. Type 6 experts can now come to Earth. Our Saint Emperor had already been at the peak of the Type 6 realm since a few hundred years ago. Once he descends, he will be invincible. At that time, we will launch an assault on China and wipe them out."

Amaterasu snorted coldly, his eyes flashing with a vengeance as he gritted his teeth, "Remember your promise, after wiping out the Japanese, you will open the way and allow our zombies to invade China and eradicate them and that darn leader of theirs, Yue Zhong."

At that time, Amaterasu had clashed with Yue Zhong and suffered a crushing defeat. He had been heavily injured, severely inhibiting his evolving speed.

With the help of the Saint Clan, this source of trouble for Yue Zhong had already killed all the humans in Japan, gaining control over it.

After that, he had become even more ambitious, intending to take over the entire world, becoming the King of all zombies, and eradicating his hated enemy Yue Zhong. He was just working together with the Saint Clan for the sake of their common goal.

Since the Saint Clan had arrived, other than a few Type 5 Ancestors, the rest of the recently Evolved Type 5 experts did not have any ability to control zombies. Even so, those Ancestors could not match with the local intelligent Evolved zombies, thus, both sides were willing to work together.

Blake chuckled, "Rest assured, Yue Zhong might be strong, but he's just a Type 5 expert. Once our Saint Emperor makes a move, he will definitely lose. No one can save him."

Amaterasu snorted once again, as he turned to stare at the Gate of Hell, "I hope that's the case!"

Not long after, the Gate of Hell started to contort, as a handsome

man with pale skin and short, blond hair stepped out. He looked about 17 or 18, but his eyes were fully red.

"We greet Saint Emperor Xue Shi!"

Upon seeing this evil-looking youth, Blake and the rest of the Saint Clan members immediately got on their knees, expressing their fealty.

Only Amaterasu, as well as the intelligent Evolved zombies he commanded, did not bow down, their gazes cautious as they tried to assess this entity in front of them.

One of the intelligent zombies snorted coldly, as he ridiculed, "Someone like you can be a Type 6 Saint Emperor? What a joke! I've been meaning to taste the heart of some handsome teen recently. Your heart should fit the bill, hand it over."

The handsome Type 5 intelligent zombie stomped his feet, and disappeared, reappearing behind the youth, reaching out to grab at his heart.

"I'm not interested in hearts. However, I've wanted to taste the brains of a Type 5 expert. I shall try yours then."

The handsome youth smiled strangely, before his jade-like hands clawed out, grabbing the head of the Type 5 intelligent Evolved zombie. With a twist, the zombie's head was crushed like a chicken egg. The youth then opened his mouth to suck, and absorbed the brain juices of the dead intelligent zombie.

This Type 5 zombie had been an outstanding expert among the intelligent evolved zombie, and even Amaterasu would not have been able to kill him in such a fashion.

Witnessing the viciousness of this evil youth, the rest of the intelligent zombies turned pale, their hearts filled with fear.

"Japan's Zombie King Amaterasu greets Your Majesty Saint Emperor!!"

Amaterasu was an intelligent fellow, the moment he saw how Saint Emperor Xue Shi had killed his subordinate, he could feel an intense fear and evil from him. If this youth meant it, he could crush his head easily. He thus chose to express his subservience, at the same time, reporting his identity and status, revealing his value.

"We greet Your Majesty Saint Emperor!!"

The rest of the intelligent zombies behind Amaterasu also quickly expressed their subservience.

"The brains of a Type 5 expert is truly different and tasty. What a nice gift."

The smile of Saint Emperor Xue Shi was faint but devilish. He walked among the intelligent zombies and smacked out casually, reaping the heads of 2 other intelligent zombies. He then opened his mouth to suck their juices.

Seeing the Saint Emperor slaughtering their comrades, the rest of the intelligent zombies shuddered in fear, but they did not dare move.

Currently, Saint Emperor Xue Shi had already released his Type 6 pressure, spreading it out, intimidating all those around him.

The intelligent zombies could sense the might and they began to tremble in fear. They knew that the moment there was the slightest resistance, they would be slapped to death immediately.

There was a vast difference between a Type 5 and Type 6 expert. Even Amaterasu would die if he tried to challenge Saint Emperor Xue Shi alone, let alone the rest of them.

After Xue Shi killed 4 intelligent zombies and sucked their brains dry, he walked over to Amaterasu and sent a kick out.

Amaterasu's face fell, and got up quickly, intending to retreat as much as he could.

However, even with all his effort, the moment he got up, he was already struck in the chest. He felt many bones break, and he spat out a mouthful of blood, crumpling to the floor.

In a single strike, Amaterasu's bones had been fractured and he suffered a serious injury. If he had been human, he would have already died. Even if he was a peak-Type 5 expert, he would still require a few days to recover.

Seeing their King being injured so heavily, the rest of the intelligent zombies were shocked and realized the extent of this devil in front of them.

Xue Shi then walked up to Amaterasu and stepped on him, his face turning frosty as he drawled with a strong killing intent, "This time since it was your first offense, I'll overlook it. If there's a second time where you all try to undermine this Seat, don't blame me for wiping you all out. Is that understood?"

"Understood!"

The dozen intelligent zombies broke out in cold sweat and responded in unison.

Amaterasu lowered his head and gritted his teeth as he thought viciously, "Today, you're strong, I can't offend you. Once I reach the Type 6 realm, I will definitely repay this humiliation and kill you!"

Xue Shi swept Amaterasu a cold glance, "Is that understood?"

Amaterasu put on a humble expression, "Understood, from today on, I'm a dog under Your Majesty! Whatever you want me to do, I'll carry it out!"

Xue Shi snorted coldly, and swept everybody a glance as he ordered coldly, "Hmph! Get up!"

Having gained his permission, everyone heaved a sigh of relief and got up, looking towards him respectfully.

Xue Shi then declared, "This time, I've come to Earth to deal with Yue Zhong. Go get the information on him as well as other human experts and pass them to me."

Blake handed over a piece of document to him in reverence, "Your Majesty, this is the intel that we have gotten on the humans."

When Blake and the other Saint Kings had descended, they had brought along a whole load of technology, enabling long-distance communication. They had already amassed reports on Yue Zhong.

Due to the Saint Clan's resemblance to humans, it was easy for them to infiltrate human bases. In this few months, they had gathered quite a lot of intelligence.

Chapter 994: Plot!

Outside the capital of China, the handsome and devilish Xue Shi was eyeing the region coldly.

After obtaining information on Yue Zhong, Xue Shi had immediately flown across the seas, arriving in China.

"Yue Zhong is staying here? I should just go kill him directly. He's just a peak-Type 5 expert, as long as I kill him now and prevent his growth, it doesn't matter if he has the God and Devil Imprint."

With that thought, the Saint Emperor's blond hair turned black, and he retracted his fearsome-red eyes, turning into an ordinary-looking person. After altering his appearance, he put on ordinary clothes, looking no different from any survivor.

At the peak of the Type 6 realm, Xue Shi had many mysterious abilities, during the war against the humans of his world, many experts had fallen to his assassinations. He had contributed greatly to the Saint Clan's history.

Once he looked like any ordinary Chinese survivor, he began to walk towards the Capital.

When he reached the entrance of the capital, 8 soldiers guarding the gate immediately barked out, "Halt!"

"To think that even these guards would possess a Type 3 strength. Yue Zhong has some abilities."

He glanced at them, a glint in his eye. The guards at this gate were all at the Type 3 realm. While he might not hold them in regard, he was shocked at the capabilities of Yue Zhong.

After all, there were too little Type 3 human experts in the 2nd World. There might only be 1 out of 100,000. Yet, this China had 8 such experts as guards. It could be seen how mighty China had become.

One soldier barked out once more in annoyance, "Who are you?"

Xue Shi put on an honest expression, "I'm a survivor from the nearby Changgang Village. I heard the broadcast, thus I made my way over. Sir, I haven't eaten in 10 days. Please give me a way out, I'm begging you."

After that, he immediately got to his knees and kowtowed sincerely with a pitiful look. He really looked like a survivor out of options.

This Saint Emperor had lived for countless years, numb to killing, and willing to employ any means to gain victory. Although he was usually nonchalant about killing, slaughtering the Type 5 subordinates just for disobeying him, he was not unwilling to lower himself according to the situation. Even if he had to eat shit, as long as he could kill his target, he would not hesitate to do it.

It was because of this that he had been able to kill many experts in the past, leading the Saint Clan to victory.

One of the soldiers handed a form to him, "Go fill up this form, and go inside for a test."

The Saint Emperor then began to fill up the form with the intricate made-up story about his past.

When he was done, he was led into a room filled with cameras, as he underwent many checks.

When he saw the X-ray machines, he laughed inwardly, "What fools! Our Saint Clan looks no different from humans, what can such checks do?"

The Saint Clan had evolved from the zombies, and the zombies had originated as humans. Thus, in terms of their genetic makeup, there was not much of a difference. The X-Ray machines would not be able to reveal his true appearance.

After passing the X-Ray checks, suddenly, the machine shot out a sharp needle, intending to pierce Xue Shi.

Facing this sudden change, he continued to gloat inwardly, but he put on a scared appearance as he trembled, allowing the needle to enter him.

His body would not allow even guided missiles to injure him usually. However, with a thought, he caused his muscles to turn soft, allowing the needle to enter and concentrated for a little bit of human blood to land on the needle.

In order to infiltrate the human bases easily, Xue Shi had learned countless methods and knew that blood tests could reveal their identity. He had thus picked up an ingenious tactic, keeping some human blood within his body. When necessary, he could summon it to deal with such checks. This was how even the most advanced blood test technology would not be able to reveal his identity.

The sharp needle was retracted quickly, entering the wall and began to analyze the blood.

"Come with me!"

Soon, an armed guard came up and ordered Xue Shi.

Xue Shi followed the soldier obediently.

Inside the room, there were 5 other survivors awaiting their tests.

One beautiful, blue-haired girl in a military uniform sat over at one corner quietly.

The moment Xue Shi walked in, the girl swept him a glance, before moving her impassive gaze towards the 5 survivors and asked, "Zhang Yan, how old are you this year?"

The survivor that looked about 40 or 50 replied honestly, "32."

The blue-haired girl continued to ask a few questions, before moving on to another.

Xue Shi continued to put on a docile appearance as he waited.

After the girl finished asking 2 survivors some questions, she

stood up, "I'm going for a drink, the 3 of you wait here first. Zhang Yan, Liu Mei, you may go."

The 32-year-old man and another woman of 50 or 60 heaved a sigh of relief and followed after the girl as they left the room.

Xue Shi observed all these quietly, not moving. He knew through the countless assassinations he did that before he entered any human society, he had to behave, otherwise, he might reveal something about himself.

Inside the capital, within a lavish villa.

Yue Zhong hugged the little girl, who was precisely Floxenia, as he stared at the Saint Emperor Xue Shi on the display. He felt a tinge of fear as he kissed Floxenia's forehead, "Many thanks to you Floxenia. Fortunately, you discovered this Saint Emperor from the Saint Clan, otherwise, I might have run into trouble."

Yue Zhong had originally assumed that the blood tests would be enough to determine the difference between humans and the Saint Clan. However, he never thought that the Saint Emperor would possess means to pass that test.

If he had allowed him into the capital, if he was unlikely, he and his cabinet might be slaughtered by this devil.

A peak-Type 6 expert assassinating an initial-Type 6 expert, even if Yue Zhong had the God-Devil Body, and all sorts of trump cards, it was likely that he would perish.

This time, if Floxenia had not been interrogating, and reading the thoughts of the participants, the consequences would have been dire.

Floxenia flushed red, and smiled sweetly at Yue Zhong, "Kiss me more!! Brother Yue Zhong!!"

"Fine! Once I'm done with that monster, I will reward you well. I'm going to set off first. Otherwise, he's going to become suspicious."

Yue Zhong kissed Floxenia's forehead once more, before leaving.

"What's going on? Why is she taking so long?" Floxenia had left for 30 minutes, and the calm Xue Shi finally felt a sense of doubt.

All of a sudden, the display inside the room lit up, and a person's figure appeared.

The moment Saint Emperor Xue Shi saw the figure, he celebrated inwardly, as he stared fixedly at him, "That's Yue Zhong!!"

At the moment he was distracted by Yue Zhong's appearance, he suddenly felt an intense sense of crisis. Bellowing in rage, he could not bother hiding anymore, as a dense blood energy poured out crazily out of his body, enveloping him.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

In an instant, following an earth-shaking explosion, countless white lights filled the interrogation room.

With the lab at the center, the entire ground quaked for a few miles, as a mushroom of death rose in the air.

In order to deal with any powerful characters, Yue Zhong had planted numerous powerful energy bombs beneath the lab. Although it could not compare to the Xue Luo Forts or the Capital of the 3rd World, it was still dangerous.

Before the cloud and dust could settle, a bloody figure flew out from the debris, trying to flee.

Within that commotion, only a Type 6 expert could catch the sorry figure of Saint Emperor Xue Shi with an arm missing.

The explosion might not have been able to kill the Saint Emperor, but it had caused him to be heavily injured.

"Saint Emperor Xue Shi, Amaterasu and the rest had already informed me of your tracks earlier. Now, you may die over here." In the skies, Yue Zhong was piloting the Scarlet Reaper, holding a terrifying cannon, aiming at the bloody figure.

Chapter 995: Injuring the Saint Emperor!

A white flash of a beam shot out, blasting onto the bloody light.

When the bloody light was slammed by the beam, it caused the Saint Emperor to be sent soaring a few thousand meters.

The beam had been largely dispersed by the protection covering Saint Emperor Xue Shi, thus, Yue Zhong had failed to obliterate him in one shot.

Even so, Xue Shi had been heavily injured by this sudden strike, and with his internal organs shaken, he spat out a mouthful of blood.

At almost the same time, from the capital, a number of Laser Prism Cannons extended out and fired out at him under the control of Bai Yi.

Having just suffered that full-powered strike from Yue Zhong, Xue Shi was unable to extract himself from the net of lasers. However, the bloody protection covering his body was formed from the countless humans and Mutant Beasts he had killed, thus, it was incredibly resilient. When the beams struck it, they managed to shave off only a minor part of the shield, not destroying it fully.

"Amaterasu!! I will make sure you pay, you fucking traitor!!"

After forcefully blocking the first wave of attacks, Xue Shi's eyes flashed with a savage light. He disappeared in an instant, as the lasers blast thin air.

"So you are Yue Zhong? I had intended to assassinate you, who would have thought you to strike first. However, since you dare to send yourself to this Seat, I shall devour you and suck you dry of your lifeforce!!"

In the air, there was the cackling laughter of Xue Shi, as 8 body clones of his appeared around Yue Zhong, pouncing towards him.

This secret technique was called the Blood Clone, with each clone possessing a third of Xue Shi's original strength. At the same time, they could utilize his skills and abilities. It was not like any ordinary clone technique, where they would fall after one strike.

Furthermore, all clones were linked to Xue Shi in terms of their thoughts. If they acted together, they could handle a peak Type 6 expert with no problems.

When they got close, Yue Zhong's mind whirred and controlled the huge mechanical arm of the Scarlet Reaper, condensing a God-Devil Flame out of thin air, spreading it outward.

The 8 blood clones were truly mysterious as well, even when slashed with blades, or shot with cannons, or blasted apart, they could still congeal back together, as though immortal. They might be constantly hit and assaulted, but in the end, it would just wear down their opponents' strength, before they went to suck them dry.

Saint Emperor Xue Shi was an old Ancestor of the Saint Clan, the peak devilish existence within their clan. All those years back, when he had led the Saint Clan to defeat the human race and gained dominion over the 2nd World, his fleshy body might not be comparable to the Dino-Race, but he had many profound and mysterious skills. If he were to fight against a similar-realm expert, through his skills and abilities, it was possible to toy with a peak Type-6 Dino-Warrior.

Unfortunately, the God-Devil Flame Yue Zhong had was precisely the bane of these Blood Clones. The moment they came in contact with the ever-burning fire, there was sizzling sounds as they started to be burnt.

The 8 Blood Clones screamed out and retreated backward, before combining back into the Saint Emperor Xue Shi.

By this time, Xue Shi's entire body was charred black, with blood dripping out the corner of his mouth, "Good! Good! Good! Yue

Zhong, you're truly capable, using this enhanced armor to exhibit such a strength!! However, in the end, you won't be my match! You can surrender to me now!! If you do, I will allow you to be the human-equivalent of myself, enjoying riches and power!!"

Yue Zhong revealed a moved expression, "Oh! Really?"

At this time, another bout of laser beams shot out from below, blasting the Saint Emperor, causing the shield of protection around him to lose another layer.

Xue Shi blocked the attack while roaring, "Yue Zhong if you do intend to submit, stop your assault. We can discuss this, I can give you better conditions."

Yue Zhong dragged out his reply, "Wait a minute, let me consider."

The blood protection of Xue Shi was too tough to deal with. Unless Yue Zhong was able to trap him and use his God-Devil Flames to incinerate, he could only rely on such tactics to wear it down.

Xue Shi shouted, "You're not stopping at all!! There's no intention to submit, you're pretending to think while wearing down my strength, you think I'm stupid?"

"What? I just want to consider our relationship."

Yue Zhong glanced at him, before suddenly releasing the chest flap of the Scarlet Reaper. Countless laser beams that could penetrate the skulls of the L5s fired out at Xue Shi.

The multiple laser beams seemed to congeal into a large, terrifying pillar, slamming into the blood protection of Xue Shi.

With Yue Zhong's Type 6 realm piloting the Scarlet Reaper, the might of the beam was not too be underestimated. Even if a huge aircraft carrier were here, it would be blasted apart. And yet, the blood protection of the Saint Emperor took it all on.

However, the shield was losing its luster and finally disintegrated under the fierce assault.

"Haha! Yue Zhong, you've been tricked." All of a sudden, Xue Shi revealed a strange smile.

An incredible sense of crisis welled up in Yue Zhong's mind. He trusted his senses as he controlled the Scarlet Reaper to exert its maximum speed as he evaded to the side.

Suddenly, without any warning, a sharp blade slashed down out of the void, slicing the Scarlet Reaper into two.

Although Yue Zhong had dodged just barely, he was still struck by that blade, losing his right arm and right leg, as light-gold blood flowed from him. He grimaced in intense pain, as the blood continued to flow.

"Stealth!! His Stealth is so perfect that my perception could not even reveal it?! He was even moving!!" Yue Zhong was shaken by that strike from Xue Shi, and the shock surpassed his pain.

After reaching the Type 6 realm, his senses had reached another level. He could even tell the movement of an ant within a 1,000 sqm. If a same-realm opponent was to use Stealth within his perception range, with the slightest motion, he would be able to sense. He had never imagined missing the Saint Emperor.

Having sliced off the right arm and right leg of Yue Zhong, Xue Shi kept up the intensity of the attack, slashing towards his head.

A strong sense of death filled up Yue Zhong's mind. With countless tactics flashing by his mind, he quickly caused the precious Blood Honey in his possession to explode out in all directions.

Although Xue Shi could retract all signs and aura, hiding from Yue Zhong's perception, he could not erase himself entirely from the plane of existence. He moved slightly but was struck by the blood, revealing his location.

"What a disgusting stealth armor!!"

Only now, Yue Zhong discovered that Xue Shi was wearing a strange armor. It constantly shifted in an illusionary state, other than the areas which had been stained by the blood, the rest was practically non-existent. Even though he knew that there was something there, his perception could not pick it up.

"Smart. What a pity Yue Zhong, no matter how cunning you are, today will be your death date!!" Even though his position was revealed, Xue Shi did not seem to mind it, as he cackled evilly, his expression maniacal.

Currently, Yue Zhong's trump card, the Scarlet Reaper, had already been sliced in two, and he was heavily injured. Having lost an arm and a leg, it was tough to even flee. That was the reason for the glee of Xue Shi.

Once he killed Yue Zhong, newly-formed China would split apart, and the survivors would then become the food for the zombies and Saint Clan.

"Can you spare me then?" Yue Zhong looked at the nearing Saint Emperor, his face pale, as he trembled uncontrollably, a look of despair on his face.

Xue Shi laughed out excitedly, without any intention to stop. He swung his blade down towards Yue Zhong, "Haha!! It's too late to plead now!!"

"Yin Shuang, now!!"

At that critical moment, Yue Zhong suddenly bellowed and disappeared from his location, flashing to about 20m away.

A white figure suddenly appeared as a pale fist smashed into the body of Xue Shi.

Struck by that fist, Xue Shi's bones broke as he spat out a mouthful of blood while tumbling through the sky.

That figure was precisely Yin Shuang, who had evolved in a rapid manner after consuming the treasure from the lake. She had already reached the high-Type 6 realm.

Under that sudden sneak attack, the present injuries of the Saint Emperor were further aggravated, causing his abilities to plunge by 60%.

Chapter 996: Annihilating the Saint Emperor Xue Shi!

The moment Yin Shuang succeeded in her sneak attack, her body was enveloped in pale moonlight as she stepped on thin air and shot towards Xue Shi once more.

Xue Shi was an extraordinary figure after all. Even after that heavy injury, he managed to reach, calling forth the already-diminished blood protection in front of him once again.

Yin Shuang's moonlight-covered fists slammed into the blood protection, each time they slammed, the shield distorted strongly, threatening to disintegrate at any moment.

As a Type 6 expert, coupled with the profound moonlight, Yin Shuang continued to punch out relentlessly, forcing the weak blood protection to a breaking point.

"Damn bitch, injuring me to this extent! If I don't leave now, I'm going to die here."

By this time, Xue Shi's eyes had turned back to their red color, as he stared at Yin Shuang hatefully. He opened his mouth and spat out a foul, evil, ancient blood essence that shot towards her.

The moment he spat that blood essence, Yin Shuang felt danger, as her instincts told her that that blood essence would be able to corrode her body.

The blood essence was incredibly fast, as it enveloped Yin Shuang in an instant, and began to coil around her, resembling some blood cocoon.

"Yin Shuang!"

Yue Zhong stared in horror, as the Scarlet Reaper that had been sliced in two quickly rejoined, the alloy combining like flesh threads. In an instant, it had returned to its original appearance.

The Heart of Hope was a Treasure of Hope, after all, a White-Silver grade treasure, with countless miraculous properties. Once it was inserted in a mechanical body, it was able to help the armor come to life. Even if it was heavily damaged, as long as the Heart was not damaged, it could recover quickly.

"Yue Zhong, this time, I will kill your subordinate. Next time, it will be your loved ones, and I will catch you to raise as a pig! Only then will it ease my anger!!"

Xue Shi cackled evilly, his face pale as he turned into a beam of light and darted away.

Originally, he had been heavily injured by the large numerous energy bombs planted by Yue Zhong, followed by his sneak attack, the assault from the Laser Prism Cannons, and finally, Yin Shuang's punch. With the multiple injuries, he had long since lost his confidence in defeating Yue Zhong. He chose to flee for the moment.

Hong!

All of a sudden, there was a silver glow as the blood cocoon broke apart. Yin Shuang charged out, her face slightly pale. Evidently, destroying the blood cocoon took a toll on her.

"Father, sorry, Yin Shuang did not kill him!" She shot over to Yue Zhong's side, as she lowered her head with some sorrow.

After suffering so many attacks, Yin Shuang's sneak attack had failed to kill Xue Shi in one go. That made her upset.

"There's no need to apologize! Let's go kill him now!!"

Yue Zhong piloted the Scarlet Reaper to reach out and keep Yin Shuang within its chassis, as the light wings behind it glowed and spat out jets of air. With its scary speed of Mach-6, it shot after the Saint Emperor Xue Shi.

The ferocity and terror of Xue Shi left a deep impression on Yue Zhong. Unless he mimicked the blowing up of the Xue Luo Forts,

there seemed no other possibility of killing the Saint Emperor should he leave and come back again.

Otherwise, even if he used the powerful Storm Battleship, there was no guarantee of killing the Saint Emperor in one go.

At the same time, what was most terrifying was that the Saint Emperor had too many devious means. He could utilize clones, stealth and assassination techniques that set him apart from other experts Yue Zhong had met so far. Adding on to his human-like appearance, it was hard to defend against.

If he fought in an open-manner, then at least Yue Zhong could gather some experts to take him on.

However, if he chose to rely on the shadows, then as long as he reached within a 100m of Yue Zhong, he could easily take him out.

After all, Xue Shi was the Emperor of the Saint Clan, an existence hugely responsible for the victory over the human race. He even had 2 Treasures of Hope with him. The blood protection, as well as the complete armor of stealth. They were incredibly mysterious and powerful. Even with all of Yue Zhong's trump cards, he had only managed to injure Xue Shi. If he did not take the opportunity to deal with him now, then, China would fall.

Once the Scarlet Reaper charged forth with its maximum speed, it pulled the distance close like a shooting star.

The chase was on, as it went for a few kilometers, arriving in the airspace above a forest.

"Go to hell!!"

When Yue Zhong was about a 100m away from Xue Shi, hundreds of light shot out from the body of the Scarlet Reaper.

The beams slammed into the protective treasure, causing the already-dim blood protection to finally flicker and shatter, as a red color pearl dropped out of the sky.

Xue Shi quickly reached to grab it and swallowed it into his stomach. If he lost it, then he would no longer be able to create that blood-colored protection.

No longer having the blood protection, the light beams from the Scarlet Reaper slammed into Xue Shi, blocked by the final layer of armor.

The might of the beams caused the mysterious armor to be damaged heavily as well, sending Xue Shi hurtling towards the ground.

On the ground, a dozen Mutant Beasts lifted their heads to observe the fight. When they saw the falling Saint Emperor, their eyes gleamed with a savage light, as they pounced over.

"Haha! Right on time, I can replenish some energy."

Xue Shi slammed into the ground, however, he grinned savagely. He then reached out with his claws and a number of blood arrows pierced into the bodies of the approaching Mutant Beasts.

When the blood arrows entered their bodies, the Mutant Beasts were sucked dry of their blood, turning into mummified corpses. The arrows flew back towards Xue Shi, rejuvenating him slightly.

"This monster is too frightening. If he could use such a method to recover himself, then it would take him a day at most to return to his optimal condition."

In the sky, Yue Zhong watched as Xue Shi relied on the blood of the Mutant Beasts to recover, and his face fell. A strong killing intent began to emit from him.

Xue Shi was seemingly invincible and immortal. If no one controlled him, once he was free to roam among humans, no matter how he killed, he would not get exhausted, instead, only getting stronger.

In the past, the Saint Emperor had killed the most outstanding human leader, then utilized this blood-absorbing technique to kill

countless humans as he replenished himself.

"I need to go all out to kill this monster!!" Yue Zhong's eyes gleamed with killing intent, finally pushing out the final trump card of the Scarlet Reaper, the Raytheon Cannon.

At that moment, the form of the Scarlet Reaper transformed, its main body turning into a huge cannon, as the light wings continued to take in energy, and the Type 6 nucleus glowed brightly.

A terrifying energy began to gather at the mouth of the energy.

"Shit!! Run!!"

The moment the Raytheon Cannon took form, Xue Shi felt an intense sense of crisis. He quickly transformed into 6 clones, as they turned to flee in different directions.

At that moment, a huge light beam of over 1sq km shot down from the skies, blasting into all 6 clones like a judgment from heaven.

Under that intense light pillar, all 6 clones of Xue Shi instantly turned to ash.

Xue Shi reappeared, screaming under the assault of the light pillar. In the end, his true body was also incinerated away by the light beam of the Raytheon Cannon.

After this Raytheon Cannon strike, there was a loud crack, as the Type 6 nucleus shattered slightly, revealing a huge hole. It had no way of absorbing the atmosphere energy. The nucleus was half-obliterated, with no way of supporting a second Raytheon Cannon strike.

With Xue Shi's death, a huge life force entered Yue Zhong, absorbed by the God-Devil Nucleus, turning into gold mist within his body.

Yue Zhong sighed out of relief.

"Congratulations Yue Zhong on killing Saint Emperor Xue Shi, the 3rd Stage shall begin immediately!"

At the moment when Yue Zhong fully absorbed Xue Shi's life force, a notification rang out in the minds of all those on Earth with the God and Devil Imprint.

All the experts on Earth turned pale.

Over in Europe, within a city, Edward held the Sword of Solemn Promise as he swung down, turning the countless zombies below into ashes. Suddenly, his face fell, "What?! Yue Zhong killed the Saint Emperor Xue Shi?! How is that possible?! That freak is a peak-Type 6 expert!"

Chapter 997: Swallowing Treasure, Reaching the Peak of Type 6!

Edward and Leo had also entered the 2nd World, coming across their own experiences. They had some information about the strongest experts of the 2nd World. Saint Emperor Xue Shi was the recognized Emperor of the Saint Clan, and they knew his terror and might.

When Leo heard the notification in his mind, his gaze was complicated, "The Saint Emperor Xue Shi... was actually killed by him?!"

Hearing the news of Xue Shi's demise, Leo was overjoyed, but at the same time, envious.

Right after that, a huge, opened Gate of Hell immediately appeared beside the corpse of Xue Shi.

A pair of green eyes shone from beyond the gate, as a huge vortex appeared and sucked the treasures left behind by Xue Shi over.

"Damn bastard!!"

Yue Zhong saw the fruits of his labor being snatched by that monster and his expression fell. He controlled the Scarlet Reaper to engage its defenses, before charging right through the Gates of Hell.

Among the treasures left behind by Xue Shi, there were 4 broken God and Devil Imprints as well as 3 half-digested gold God-Devil Nuclei. These were important resources for Yue Zhong's evolution, he had to get his hands on them.

When one reached such a stage, evolution became increasingly harder. Even if he killed a million or dozen millions of zombies, it was impossible for him to increase another tier. However, those gold God-Devil Nuclei and God and Devil Imprints would help push his realm to the next tier. That was why he went mad.

Furthermore, if those treasures were to be digested by some other monster, it was likely there would be another Xue Shi-like monster in another one or 2 years.

At that instant, Yue Zhong had already charged right through the Gate of Hell.

In a bright flash of light, he appeared on the other side.

A powerful killing intent came rushing at him, as a sharp claw slashed at the head of the Scarlet Reaper.

Hong!

Following a loud collision, the defensive shield of the head area was shaken.

Yue Zhong fixed his gaze on the monster that was in front of him. It was 2m-tall, its body gold in color and its limbs thick and coarse. It had sharp claws and a pair of green, compound bug eyes. It was attacking the energy shield of the Scarlet Reaper incessantly while emitting killing intent.

Under the assault of the green bug-eyed monster, the energy shield rippled, as energy was being depleted.

Yue Zhong swept it a gaze and thought darkly, "This monster is only at the peak of Type 5, and extremely crafty. It actually knew how to lay an ambush. If I hadn't activated my energy shield, I would have suffered. In any case, this level of monster is no match for me."

With a thought, the Scarlet Reaper reached out its arm as though it was alive, and grabbed the green bug-eyed monster. Exerting strength, he then crushed the beast.

At the moment it exploded, a copious amount of green blood splattered onto the mechanical arm of the Scarlet Reaper, causing it to corrode and melt off.

Yue Zhong was shocked at the toxicity of the blood, "What a

powerful corroding ability. It could even melt through the armor of the Scarlet Reaper. Seems like it is dangerous to kill such a beast in close combat."

The armor of the Scarlet Reaper was made out of superalloys, its defense exceeding any that could be found on Earth. Even a Type 5 expert would find it tough to leave a mark on the Scarlet Reaper.

However, the blood of this green-eyed monster was able to corrode through the armor, a testimony to the lethality of its blood.

"Shit, will the Imprints be dissolved as well?"

Seeing how terrifying the blood was, Yue Zhong's heartbeat quickened as he turned to look at the corpse. He then heaved a sigh of relief.

The 4 God and Devil Imprints, 3 half-digested God-Devil Nuclei, the red pearl, and the black armor laid amidst the green puddle with not a speck of damage on them.

Yue Zhong then controlled the Scarlet Reaper to exert a suction force on the items, pulling them into the cockpit and he quickly kept them into his Storage Ring.

Only after he was done did he relax and begin to assess this slightly foreign world.

The greenery was lush, and the air was fresh. Gravity was 10 times stronger than on Earth, and thus, it was likely that the life forms on this planet were 10 times stronger than those on Earth, or even more.

"Although this place looks ordinary, it should be the world of the 3rd Stage. It doesn't look like the Third World of the Dino-Race. I should investigate it properly."

As he swept his gaze around, with a thought, he sent out thousands of mechanical flies from his Storage Ring, that swiftly soared in all directions.

The mechanical armors that Leo had obtained for America were based on nanotechnology. These drones of Yue Zhong were also based on the same technology when controlled by Bai Yi, they flew around as though they were alive, taking in everything and sending the feed and data to Bai Yi's drive.

Yue Zhong sent out his own perception from within the Scarlet Reaper and did not discover any strong life forms near him. "It would take some time to search this world. I'd better absorb those treasures and raise my own strength first."

Without any hesitation, Yue Zhong took out one God and Devil Imprint, using water to wash off the corrosive blood, before placing it against his own.

With a bright flash, the broken God and Devil Imprint was absorbed directly into Yue Zhong's, channeling the life force within Yue Zhong into the God-Devil Nucleus in him.

The golden mist continued to pump out, spreading through Yue Zhong's body, strengthening his bones and marrows, releasing some crackling sounds.

When he finished absorbing all 4 God and Devil Imprints, the gold mist that flowed within him was intense, continually strengthening him, helping him to break through the barriers of his evolution. Amidst the crackling noise, he was evolving towards the high-Type 6 realm.

After that, he took out one of the God-Devil Nucleus and placed it on his Imprint. In a flash, the Nucleus was absorbed into his sea of knowledge, smashing into his own.

Upon collision, the broken God-Devil Nucleus shattered and transformed into runes that entered Yue Zhong's own.

His God-Devil Nucleus immediately became bigger, as it glowed resplendently, and more runes appeared on it, pushing all his skills up another tier.

When his skills were upgraded, all the runes that represented them glowed in a silver light, looking sacred. His combat potential had risen again.

Taken aback by the strengthening, he quickly absorbed the 2 remaining God-Devil Nuclei. Once they were converted into runes, they quickly congealed into a separate rune, silver in color and looking extremely ancient.

"Congratulations, you have gained the Sixth Order Blood Manipulation ability."

When the rune was formed, the sound of notification rang in his mind.

"So absorbing the God-Devil Nucleus has such a use, it actually helped me gain a Sixth Order skill immediately."

He opened his eyes, and a bright gleam flashed past his eyes. He began to emit a powerful aura, as his strength rose once more, reaching the peak of the Type 6 realm.

"The God and Devil Imprint and the God-Devil Nucleus are such precious resources. If I had continued killing, who knows how many Type 6 experts I have to kill to reach this stage? And yet, just absorbing 4 Imprints and 3 Nuclei, I'm already at the peak of Type 6. My God-Devil Body has also reached the Second Order. If there's another Saint Emperor, I'm able to crush him."

Channeling his strength, he sent out a casual punch, and with a terrifying force, a huge hole appeared in the ground about 20m away. He had not used any ability, just utilizing the sheer pressure from his fist. It was truly amazing.

A sudden thought came in his mind, "If I were to go kill Edward and Leo now, absorbing their Nuclei and Imprints, I might be able to break through and enter the Type 7 realm."

However, Yue Zhong quickly squashed that thought.

Right now, all 3 factions were allies and working together to fight

back the foreign races. If Yue Zhong really did such a thing, it would fracture the entire human race. They would kill each other, and even if he reached the Type 7 realm, what good would it do? He would have to kill the humans of his allies or turn them all into puppets.

Although Yue Zhong could be vicious at times, he was not willing to see such a thing happen, nor attack his allies just for his own gains.

Chapter 998: Monster!

After his evolution, Yue Zhong opened up his tablet, asking Bai Yi, "Any discoveries?"

Being a Super A.I., Bai Yi possessed a calculation and analytical ability far surpassing any human. She immediately replied with a few images, "There're ordinary wild beasts around these parts, their strength estimated to be at the Type 2 or Type 3 realm. 40km to the west of here, there's a human city."

As Yue Zhong heard her explanation, he observed the images.

Within the forest, there were many wild beasts roaming about, every one of them covered in scales and horns, their expressions ferocious and savage. However, there was no sign of any similar beings to the bug-eyed monster that attacked Yue Zhong.

In the end, within the last display, Yue Zhong saw a human city clearly, and the city seemed to be bustling with activity.

He thought to himself, "This world has humans too? I should go take a look. Maybe I can discover some clues. Even if not, at least if I can control them, they can bolster my faction back on Earth."

Currently, Yue Zhong's territory was $\frac{1}{3}$ of the entire China, but his people were still too little. Their reproduction levels were also still low. If he could absorb more humans into his faction, he would become stronger.

With a plan in mind, he left Yin Shuang to guard the Gate of Hell, while activating his own Flight ability to shoot towards the human city.

Although that bug-eyed monster was crushed by Yue Zhong and looked weak, it was still a peak-Type 5 ferocious beast. It was also crafty and knew how to utilize some combat tactics. If it entered Earth, humans would suffer.

The Gate of Hell was directly in China, after all, Yue Zhong

would not allow those monsters to enter China easily.

When he reached about 300m away from the entrance of the city, he descended and walked towards it.

There was no security checks nor barricades at the entrance, and he infiltrated easily. He looked around curiously, observing the style of this world.

The technology of this world was not that different from Earth's prior to the apocalypse, with numerous modern structures and construction. The roads and pavements were also flat and seemed to be made out of concrete, while bicycles were rampant.

As he walked along the streets and checked out his surroundings. For a fleeting moment, it felt like he had returned to the time before life on Earth was turned upside down due to the apocalypse.

After a few hundred meters, Yue Zhong saw a group of people huddled together, and many others were gathering around as well. Curious, he walked over to take a look.

It was a small fighting arena of sorts, and on it, 2 young women were facing off. One of them wore a white warrior uniform, her skin fair, and she looked valiant and beautiful. The other was a lady with 2 golden ponytails, her body voluptuous as she wore a black military uniform.

All around the fighting arena, the observers were discussing the 2 young women.

After reaching the Type 6 realm, and evolving to possess the God-Devil Body, Yue Zhong's perception and thought process had been heightened.

Although there were differences in the language of this world compared to Earth, as he walked over, he had already started to pick up and understand the language. This was one of the many amazing abilities of the God-Devil Body, it was no longer mortal, instead, full of potential.

Yue Zhong grabbed a random person and asked, "Friend, who are those 2? What are they doing?"

The person was actually chatting with his friend. When grabbed suddenly by Yue Zhong, he felt a surge of anger, but as he turned to look into Yue Zhong's eyes, he felt a sense of fear. He quickly responded obediently, "Those 2 are Han Ying'er from the Clear Wind Martial School and Jin Xuan'er from the Radiant Sun Martial School. The one with black hair, is Han Ying'er, while the golden-hair is Jin Xuan'er. They're 2 of the 10 most outstanding fighters of our South Origin City, and today, they had bet the prestige of their respective schools, to determine who's above who."

"Oh! Got it!"

After Yue Zhong got what he needed, he released his hand.

The man immediately distanced himself.

In the arena.

Han Ying'er barked, "Jin Xuan'er, I have practiced the Clear Wind Thunderbolt Kick to the Great Completion realm, it's not too late for you to surrender! In battle, fists have no eyes, if I kill you accidentally, you'd better not blame me."

The young woman with the golden ponytails laughed out coyly while responding with confidence, "Han Ying'er, your Clear Wind Thunderbolt Kick cannot compare to our Radiant Sun Palm! If you don't want to get hurt, surrender now, I can still let you off. Otherwise, if you're hit by my palms, it won't be so fun anymore."

"Since you're not willing, then bring it on!"

Han Ying'er roared in fury and with a tap of her foot, she disappeared from her position, reappearing in front of Jin Xuan'er in a flash. Her legs kicked out in a profound manner, bringing about an illusion of a thunderbolt as she aimed for Jin Xuan'er.

Yue Zhong looked and could not help himself as he sighed, "Peak

of Type 4, this girl's martial arts is truly domineering! If she showed her skill on Earth before the apocalypse, I'm afraid all masters would be put to shame, and hide their heads like ostriches."

Han Ying'er looked to be only about 16 or 17 but was able to train to the peak-Type 4 stage. It was truly formidable.

Although Yue Zhong himself was a peak-Type 6 expert now, his abilities were not through cultivation, instead, he had killed, snatched, making use of the God and Devil Imprint to absorb countless life force to reach where he was today. If he relied on cultivating, even if he trained for 30 years, he would not even be able to reach the Type 4 stage.

Against those heavy kicks, Jin Xuan'er squinted and sent out her own palms. Her palms were covered in blazing flames, looking like burning suns, as the surrounding air distorted from the sheer heat.

Yue Zhong was shocked once again, "Another peak-Type 4 expert. If both of them were on Earth and made use of the God and Devil System to absorb the life force on Earth, they will definitely become Type 5 experts quickly."

Yue Zhong had already begun to understand the source of enhancement and evolution from the System since he reached the Type 6 realm.

The various weapons, equipment, and skills were just simplified manifestations of the God and Devil Imprint, possessing the ability to absorb life force. Once they absorbed enough, they will come to possess the mysterious will of the System and unlock the potential of life forms.

As long as this Han Ying'er and Jin Xuan'er er were given some System equipment to kill some monsters, they will quickly breakthrough to the Type 5 stage.

He continued to observe while thinking to himself, "I need to

think of something to get them to come to Earth with me! Wait!! They're just 2 of the top 10! That means to say, there are 8 others just like them!! If they can all be brought to Earth, my faction will become stronger!"

Just when the spectators were revelling in the fight, a fat and pale man struggled into the crowd.

When he reached their midst, his body started to twist and convulse, before it suddenly exploded, causing a number of liquid organisms the size of palms to fly out and latch onto the people nearby.

The speed of those organisms was extremely fast. They quickly slithered into the bodies of their victims through their mouths, nostrils, ears, and eyes.

"Ah!!"

"What the hell was that?!"

"Help!!!"

"..."

All of a sudden, things started to become chaotic as the people around panicked and screamed out.

When the fatty exploded and fired out those liquid organisms, a 1.23m-tall monster appeared from his body. It had green compound eyes, its body covered in a metallic black luster. Its limbs were thick and coarse, its claws sharp, and its tail was spiky. Its entire being exuded a killing intent as it stepped out.

The moment it appeared, it tapped its foot and quickly disappeared, appearing behind another person and slashed out, tearing through the victim's head and devouring the brains.

At the same time, its tail struck out like a spear through another person's heart.

"Shit! Kill that monster!"

"Kill it!!"

"..."

The difference of the humans on this world and Earth was that everyone here knew some form of martial arts, most of them at the Type 2 or Type 3 realm.

Under the efforts of everyone present and their abilities, even a tank would be crushed within seconds.

Facing the joint attacks of the humans, the monster swung its tail, tossing its victim towards them.

At that instant, the corpse exploded into pieces.

As for the monster, it took the opportunity to route behind the assaulters and slashed out heavily, digging out their hearts in a manner of seconds, chomping down on them.

In just a few breaths, 20 of the spectators had died.

Chapter 999: Alien!

Yue Zhong glanced at that ferocious monster and was stunned, "What a savage killing machine! It actually possesses a high-Type 4 combat ability the moment it was born!"

When the monster burst out from the corpse and started its rampage, the 2 powerful young women exchanged glances and separated, before dashing towards the monster.

"Beast! Go to hell!!"

Han Ying'er kicked out with her Clear Wind Thunderbolt Kick while she barked out, as many shadows appeared and bombarded the beast.

The Clear Wind Thunderbolt Kick was a consummate skill of the Clear Wind Martial School, swift as the wind while terrifying like thunder. At the hands of Han Ying'er, a peak-Type 4 expert, she was able to turn a tank into scrap metal.

The monster trembled, before allowing the torrential kicks to land on its body.

Bang bang bang!!

When Han Ying'er's legs landed on the monster, it resulted in the clear sound of hitting metal, and parts of the monster sunk in.

Seeing that Han Ying'er was at an advantage, Jin Xuan'er, who originally wanted to assist, stood aside.

The top 10 fighters of the South Origin City were all talented and proud geniuses. They felt it beneath them to join hands against a single monster.

Yue Zhong stood with his arms folded, shaking his head while looking at the girls, "Too arrogant! If it were me, I would have unleashed all I have to kill this monster."

Although the top 10 fighters were gifted, their life-and-death

experiences were somewhat lacking.

"Explode!"

Han Ying'er continued to land blow after blow, her beautiful legs smashing into the defenses of the monster. Finally, her kicks focused in and prepared to land a killing blow towards the head of the monster.

Yue Zhong's face suddenly fell as he remembered the self-exploding ability of the monster and shouted out, "Watch out!"

At this time, the monster, which looked to be beaten up, had a sudden glint in its eyes. It shed all pretenses of looking pathetic and having lost the upper hand as it opened its jaws and fired out a tongue that was swifter than a thunderbolt, which pierced through Han Ying'er's chest and retracted, pulling her towards its mouth.

"It hurts!! Am I going to die?"

Han Ying'er felt her strength disappear when the tongue pierced her chest and watched in despair as she neared its mouth.

When Jin Xuan'er saw this, she screamed out despite herself and leaped over, "Han Ying'er!!"

Though they might be rivals, she was definitely willing to see her long-time rival fall at the hands of a monster.

However, there was still some distance between them, by the time she reached, Han Ying'er would be crushed.

At that critical moment, a huge hand appeared on top of the monster, and with a bright flash of fire, the entire head of the compound-eye monster erupted in flames, turning into ash.

Han Ying'er felt her body go light, as she fell into a warm embrace. She looked up, discovering Yue Zhong.

She looked at him with tears in her eyes, as she gasped, "Thank you, friend, for saving me. I'm afraid I will not live much longer. Please help me one more time. Tell my esteemed Master, Liu Mei

Mei of the Clear Wind Martial School, that her disciple is unfilial and has to go first, that I cannot take care of her anymore."

Since her chest was pierced, and she was just an ordinary human expert, without any abilities to heal or regenerate herself, she naturally would not live much longer. She could still endure and speak due to her stronger life force from her Type 4 realm.

Jin Xuan'er stared at the gaping hole in Han Ying'er's chest, her heart also filled with an incredible sorrow. Had she been the one to engage the monster, she would be the one dying.

Yue Zhong looked at the wound and pulled out a bottle of serum concocted by Ou Ming. Pouring it on her chest, he said, "With me around, you won't die from something like this."

When the serum, which contained the blood of a Type 5 Mutant Beast, entered Han Ying'er's chest, it immediately sealed the wound, stopping the flow of blood. At the same time, her flesh and muscles began to repair.

Jin Xuan'er stared in astonishment, "What a miraculous medicine, who is this person? How come he has such an amazing serum?!"

The medical standards of this world were not particularly advanced. A chest wound was considered fatal. Only a rare few cultivators with incomparable physique would be able to live on.

Han Ying'er was also shocked and elated, as she looked at Yue Zhong, her eyes flashing with a gleam, "Thank you for saving my life! I, Han Ying'er, will definitely repay you in the future!"

Yue Zhong chuckled, "I'm Yue Zhong, where's the Clear Wind Martial School?"

Jin Xuan'er cut in abruptly, "I'll take you there."

She was also curious about this man who could kill the monster in one move as well as producing a heaven-defying serum. Even her own Master would not be able to do anything like that.

Han Ying'er slumped in Yue Zhong's arms as she muttered out of exhaustion, "I'll have to trouble you then."

Jin Xuan'er came forward, "Let us be on our way then!"

Yue Zhong swept a glance through the spectators. His expression turned dark as he spoke coldly, "No! Wait a moment, none of you can leave."

One man immediately pointed a finger and cursed, "Who the hell are you to tell us not to leave?!"

"Yea! Why can't we leave?"

"..."

The crowd was in an uproar by now.

In the arena, there were plenty of human corpses, looking extremely gruesome and horrific. No one was willing to stay a moment longer than necessary. A few of the faint-hearted ones had already retched.

On top of these reasons, many of them were angry simply because they idolized the 2 beautiful ladies, and one of them was in Yue Zhong's embrace, while another stood beside him. They just wanted to vent their frustration and jealousy. If he wanted them to go east, they would purposely head west.

One other guy shot Yue Zhong a challenging look as he walked away, "I'm going to walk, what are you going to do about it?"

"If you dare take one more step, I'll kill you!"

Yue Zhong shot a cold glare at the man, as a powerful killing intent enveloped the man.

Under the pressure of his Type 6 realm, the man's face fell and his legs buckled under him. He kneeled down, shaking uncontrollably, not daring to say anything more.

The expressions of everyone around changed as well, their faces full of fear, not daring to move.

Jin Xuan'er frowned and asked, "Yue Zhong, why won't you let them leave?"

Yue Zhong turned solemn, "I suspect that some of them are already infected with that monster. Once they leave, they will become a new source of infection, spreading the eggs everywhere else."

The reproduction ability of the monster reminded Yue Zhong of the 'Aliens' franchise he saw. It was terrifying and strange. If those infected humans left, they would quickly spread the infection.

Jin Xuan'er turned to look at the crowd, her face of disbelief, "Impossible!"

Yue Zhong did not engage in any further discussion, instead, barking at a blind man, "You, come over."

There was a look of fear on the blind man's face, as he let out an inhumane shriek, before turning around to flee.

At that instant, all those who had been infected with the liquid organism had contorted expressions, as their bodies started to twist and they quickly fled.

"Even their intellect has been invaded? Seems like these monsters are even more frightening than 'Aliens'. They have already taken over their hosts in such a short time! If they manage to get to Earth, I won't be able to sleep at all."

Yue Zhong eyed the fleeing humans, and his face fell. His hands quickly shot out, as a number of God-Devil Flames appeared and landed on those running, instantly incinerating those fleeing, except for the blind man.

Yue Zhong shot forward, appearing in front of the blind man.

At that instant, the blind man's head suddenly burst open, as a crystalline creature with 2 sharp pincers and a hooked tail burst out. It looked like a scorpion, and when it appeared, it shot towards Yue Zhong's face.

The transformation had been fast, and things happened quickly. If not careful, even a Type 5 expert would have been infected by that scorpion-like creature.

However, he was already wary of their means, and the moment it appeared, Yue Zhong had grabbed it in his hands.

The moment Yue Zhong caught it, the monster began to shriek out continuously, while clicking its pincers. At the same time, it revealed an incredibly sharp tongue.

Seeing that monster, everyone felt their scalp go numb.

Chapter 1000: Blood Manipulation!

Yue Zhong's hands blazed with flames, incinerating the monster.

After killing the monster, Yue Zhong turned to look at the crowd, hoping to assess if there were any more parasites hiding.

Under his gaze, those who were focused on started to tremble, afraid that Yue Zhong would instantly kill them.

"Help!!"

"Save me!!"

"No!!"

"..."

Right at this time, there was a commotion, as a crowd of people came running over.

"How come there're so many monsters suddenly?"

Yue Zhong turned to look, his heart sinking.

In the distance, there was a dozen of those bug-eyed alien killing machines, chasing after a crowd of people.

Among the fleeing people, there were many who had decent martial skills and combat strength, but under the assault of those aliens, they were being slaughtered like ants.

"Beast, don't think you can be so unbridled, I will annihilate you!"

One peak-Type 3 cultivator roared out in rage, charging towards one of the aliens at the speed of sound.

When he got close to the alien, it just leaped into the air, and appeared in front of him, slashing out with its claws that dug through his chest and dug out his heart. It then proceeded to chomp on it.

There were many Type 3 experts among the human combatants, and they all launched into an assault against the aliens. However,

they were all taken out in a manner of seconds.

They continued to pounce and tear through the humans.

The more they killed, certain parts of their bodies would become bigger and stronger, as their aura rose, and their metallic exoskeleton became even more resplendent. Some of them even had bigger bellies. From time to time, those bellies would split open, releasing even more pus and scorpion-like creatures that shot out and burrowed into other live humans.

Those who had been infected all had looks of horror as they fled further, but the aliens were already disinterested in them.

Inside the city, it was a state of panic and chaos. The people stepped over one another in their stampede, resulting in even more injuries and death. At the same time, in order to flee, some vehicles crashed into one another, causing blockades. Cries, screams, moans filled the air, as though hell had descended upon them.

"Everyone, do not panic!!"

At this time, with a loud bark, 2 radiant balls of light that shone as bright as the sun flashed through the air, blasting one of the aliens.

The balls of sun carried with them the might of a high-Type 5 expert, causing the alien to be pummeled out of shape and it died.

A warrior with short, scarlet hair in black uniform and sharp features appeared, standing over the body, giving off a valiant feel.

"That's the Headmaster of the Radiant Sun Martial School, Ouyang Lie Ri!"

"That's great! He's one of the 5 Type 5 experts of South Origin City, with him, these aliens are sure to die!!"

"Headmaster Ouyang has made his move!!"

"..."

Seeing Ouyang Lie Ri destroying an alien with a single hit, as though he was some battle god, everyone felt excited and hopeful.

He was a Type 5 expert, with powerful strength. Within the city, only 4 others dared claim they were equal to him. Everyone hoped that he could save them.

Jin Xuan'er looked towards Ouyang Lie Ri with idolization and reverence, while introducing to Yue Zhong with pride, "That's my Master! Ouyang Lie Ri!"

Yue Zhong glanced at him when suddenly his face turned, and he shouted, "Watch out!!"

At that instant, Ouyang Lie Ri had already charged within their midst, his fists radiant as the sun, punching out at 2 aliens, causing their heads to burst apart.

At that moment, the corrosive blood that could even melt through the Scarlet Reaper splashed onto Ouyang Lie Ri.

Being caught unprepared, although he tried to dodge, he was still struck by quite some amount.

The corrosion was extremely powerful, instantly burning holes in whatever part of Ouyang Lie Ri's body they came in contact with. He screamed out in pain and struggled madly.

At that instant, one huge alien opened its jaws and shot out its tongue through the forehead of Ouyang Lie Ri, instantly killing this Type 5 human expert.

When it retracted its tongue, Ouyang Lie Ri's corpse slumped to the floor.

One big-bellied alien beside the huge one burst apart, releasing 20 infant aliens that buried into Ouyang Lie Ri's body.

It all happened so fast, and within a few breaths, Ouyang Lie Ri had been killed by those aliens.

Even as a Type 6 expert, Yue Zhong was currently carrying

someone, and had no way of charging through the distance to join the battle. After all, he was not entirely omnipotent.

Jin Xuan'er saw how her Master had been killed by those terrifying aliens within seconds, and her heart felt like it was torn, as she shrieked out in a heart-wrenching scream, "MASTER!!!"

Both she and Han Ying'er were the direct disciples of their respective schools and were doted on by their Masters. Their Masters were equivalent to their parents, if not more important, and thus, Ouyang Lie Ri's death was hard for Jin Xuan'er to accept.

"Headmaster Ouyang had been killed!!"

"No!!!"

"These monsters are too strong!! Run!!!"

"..."

Screams rang out once more, upon seeing a Type 5 expert of their city killed in an instant, all the people lost any last shred of resistance and began to flee.

The aliens began to get even more vicious, pouncing forward and hunting the humans.

"Go to hell, bastards!!"

Yue Zhong watched as the aliens ran rampant amidst the human crowd. He frowned, and while carrying Han Ying'er, he came up to one alien, sending a palm covered in God-Devil Flames towards it.

The moment the God-Devil Flame came in contact with the alien's body, it burned brightly, consuming the alien and reducing it to ashes.

At the Type 6 realm, the might of the God-Devil Flame was incredibly powerful, just the smallest of flames could burn a peak-Type 5 expert to death. Although these aliens were strong, there was no way of resisting it.

Seeing Yue Zhong killing their comrade in one hit, a dozen others

which were chasing after humans turned around and lunged towards him.

In a flash, they had appeared in different positions, reaching out with their claws to grab at Yue Zhong.

Han Ying'er's face fell in fright, grabbing Yue Zhong's clothes tightly. With their attacks from all angles, even her Master would not be able to get past this.

If he had not reached the Type 6 realm, Yue Zhong would definitely have a hard time against them. However, he was already at the peak-Type 6 realm. With a wave of his hand, 10 balls of God-Devil Flames appeared in mid air, entering the aliens and incinerating them in a split second.

At the same moment they died, 20 different attacks fell upon him in the form of tongues, claws, hooked tails, all shooting for him.

The majority of them came from the peak-Type 4 aliens, while 2 of them were Type 5. Facing such an attack, even an ordinary Type 6 expert might fall if not careful.

"Since I've gained the Sixth Order skill, let's test it out on these monsters."

Yue Zhong had wanted to burn them all using the God-Devil Flames. But with a thought, he pulled out his Type 5 Snake-Tooth Blade, and chopped off all the tongues and tails and claws, before sending a blood beam into the body of an alien.

After the bright bloody light entered the alien's body, in an instant, the alien was sapped dry of all its blood essence. The blood beam shot back out, leaving behind an emaciated corpse.

When the beam exited, other than the filthy, bloody feel, there was a corrosive element to it. At the same time, it seemed to have grown larger.

With a thought, Yue Zhong sent the blood beam into the body of another alien. As it penetrated, the alien was also turned into a

dried corpse.

This Blood Manipulation ability was insidious and dangerous, without the proper measures to counter it, it was a terrifying technique to all life forms.

Yue Zhong had managed to overcome Saint Emperor Xue Shi, because he had the God-Devil Flame, completely suppressing this ability.

Although these aliens were strong and were made for killing, they could not do anything to the blood beam. They stared at it as the beam continued to pierce through them one by one, sucking them dry.

As the evil-looking blood beam had absorbed the blood essence of over 20 aliens, it split apart, one of them bright red, the other green.

With a thought, he sent both beams into the blood pearl in his hands. Channeling his thoughts once more, a powerful shield that was a mix of green and red appeared, circling around him.

Table of Contents

[God and Devil World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901: The Gate of Hell Reappears!](#)

[Chapter 902: Battle at the Xue Luo Forts!](#)

[Chapter 903: Mountain of Corpses and Sea of Blood!](#)

[Chapter 904: Seeking Reinforcements!](#)

[Chapter 905: Surrender!](#)

[Chapter 906: Flowers Blooming Everywhere!](#)

[Chapter 907: The Terrifying Might of the Mechanized Battalion!](#)

[Chapter 908: 15th Day of Bloodshed!](#)

[Chapter 909: Iron-Blood Warriors!](#)

[Chapter 910: The Fall of the 1st Fort!](#)

[Chapter 911: Yue Zhong arrives!](#)

[Chapter 912: The objective of the Type 7 Dino-Emperor!](#)

[Chapter 913: Coercion!](#)

[Chapter 914: The Terror of a High-Grade Dino-General!](#)

[Chapter 915: Battling Agu Ya!](#)

[Chapter 916: Killing Agu Ya!](#)

[Chapter 917: Bad Situation!](#)

[Chapter 918: Type 7 Emperor Ba Long!](#)

[Chapter 919: Halfway Down, the Last Fort!](#)

[Chapter 920: Raytheon Cannon!](#)

[Chapter 921: The Fall of Xue Luo Fort!](#)

[Chapter 922: Emperor Ba Long's Tactics!](#)

[Chapter 923: Counter-Attack!](#)

[Chapter 924: Annihilating 80,000 Velociraptor Warriors!](#)

[Chapter 925: The Battle at Imperial Capital!](#)

[Chapter 926: The Seeds of Division!](#)

[Chapter 927: Ghost City!](#)

[Chapter 928: Killing a Type 5 Ancestor!](#)

[Chapter 929: 8 Armies!](#)

[Chapter 930: Defeating the 8 Armies!](#)

[Chapter 931: Heart of Hope!](#)

[Chapter 932: Korea!](#)

[Chapter 933: Gathering Point!](#)

- [Chapter 934: Seok Wi Guk!](#)
- [Chapter 935: Killing Seok Wi Guk!](#)
- [Chapter 936: Beautiful Jung Ri Soo!](#)
- [Chapter 937: Mechanical Enhancement!](#)
- [Chapter 938: Entering Seoul!](#)
- [Chapter 939: Massacre!](#)
- [Chapter 940: Invincible Suppression!](#)
- [Chapter 941: Conflict during the Banquet!](#)
- [Chapter 942: Negotiations!](#)
- [Chapter 943: The First Divine Envoy!](#)
- [Chapter 944: The Flesh-Eaters Appear!](#)
- [Chapter 945: Breakthrough!](#)
- [Chapter 946: Seoul Falls!](#)
- [Chapter 947: Departure and Death!](#)
- [Chapter 948: Pyongyang, Sea Beasts Come on Shore!](#)
- [Chapter 949: Battle of Type 5 Mutant Beasts!](#)
- [Chapter 950: Killing the Type 5 Sea Snake!](#)
- [Chapter 951: Fall of Pyongyang!](#)
- [Chapter 952: Lee Won Myung!](#)
- [Chapter 953: Killing Lee Won Myung!](#)
- [Chapter 954: The Russian Empire's Torrent of Steel!](#)
- [Chapter 955: Position of Commander!](#)
- [Chapter 956: The Battle at Hu Hot City!](#)
- [Chapter 957: The Russian Army Surrenders!](#)
- [Chapter 958: Defeating the Heaven Sect!](#)
- [Chapter 959: Catastrophe!](#)
- [Chapter 960: Obliteration!](#)
- [Chapter 961: Obliteration \(2\)!](#)
- [Chapter 962: The 15th Battalion!](#)
- [Chapter 963: Arriving at Vietnam!](#)
- [Chapter 964: Massacre!](#)
- [Chapter 965: Destruction of the VPDC!](#)
- [Chapter 966: Remorseful Tsar!](#)
- [Chapter 967: Beast Transformation Technology!](#)
- [Chapter 968: 10-Million Zombie Horde!](#)
- [Chapter 969: Scarlet Reaper, one against a million!](#)
- [Chapter 970: Ambush!](#)
- [Chapter 971: Falling into the Zombie Horde!](#)
- [Chapter 972: Exhaustion!](#)

[Chapter 973: Metamorphosis, the Type 6 Realm!](#)

[Chapter 974: Controlling the Zombie Horde!](#)

[Chapter 975: Shangguan Qing Cheng!](#)

[Chapter 976: Strange Treasure!](#)

[Chapter 977: Traces of the U.S. Army!](#)

[Chapter 978: Selena from India!](#)

[Chapter 979: The Tyrannical God-Devil Body!](#)

[Chapter 980: Superhuman Alliance!](#)

[Chapter 981: Suppressing the Type 5 Mutant Beast!](#)

[Chapter 982: Alliance!](#)

[Chapter 983: The Arrival of the Saint Clan!](#)

[Chapter 984: Enter the Rebel Forces!](#)

[Chapter 985: Yue Zhong's conditions!](#)

[Chapter 986: England in Peril!](#)

[Chapter 987: Blood Sacrifice!](#)

[Chapter 988: Earth's Strongest!](#)

[Chapter 989: Bai Xiao Sheng Defeated!](#)

[Chapter 990: Slashing down the Apostles!](#)

[Chapter 991: Display of Super-Abilities!](#)

[Chapter 992: Distribution of Territories!](#)

[Chapter 993: The Arrival of the Saint Emperor!](#)

[Chapter 994: Plot!](#)

[Chapter 995: Injuring the Saint Emperor!](#)

[Chapter 996: Annihilating the Saint Emperor Xue Shi!](#)

[Chapter 997: Swallowing Treasure, Reaching the Peak of Type 6!](#)

[Chapter 998: Monster!](#)

[Chapter 999: Alien!](#)

[Chapter 1000: Blood Manipulation!](#)